

*Extract of Paradise Lost (1763)*¹

[Baker List, #253]

Editorial Introduction:²

John Milton (1608–1674) remains one of the best known and respected poets in the English language. He was a civil servant for the Commonwealth of England under Oliver Cromwell, and his poetry reflects both his Puritan theology and his republican politics. While John Wesley differed from Milton on some theological and political points, he held Milton’s poetry in high regard, particularly Milton’s epic blank-verse poem *Paradise Lost* (1667).

Wesley’s study of *Paradise Lost* can be traced to immediately after he received his B.A. from Christ Church, Oxford. The diary Wesley kept during these years records him “collecting” (i.e., copying out in manuscript extended excerpts) from the epic poem in early 1725, and his purchase of a copy in September 1725. When Wesley began to serve as tutor at Lincoln College, Oxford in early 1730 he required his students to work carefully through *Paradise Lost*, and he later assigned it to the students at Kingswood School. He also placed copies of the poem in libraries that he maintained for his lay-preachers and exhorted them to study it. Wesley’s personal immersion in *Paradise Lost* is evidenced by frequent allusions and brief quotations in his sermons and letters.

Given his high regard for *Paradise Lost*, it was natural that Wesley would attempt to encourage its reading among all of his lay followers. His first effort in this direction was to include two excerpts from the poem in his 1744 *Collection of Moral and Sacred Poems*.³ In the early 1760s Wesley decided to go further, preparing an abridged version of the entire poem. This abridgement likely went to press in January 1763,⁴ though no advertisements of its publication in newspapers of the time have been located,⁵ and the first time it appears in one of Wesley’s book catalogues is 1768. We can be sure that the abridgement was being distributed by Wesley’s lay preachers in mid 1764, because he wrote to Matthew Errington on May 30, 1764 exhorting him to send more copies to Edinburgh.⁶ This may reflect that Wesley considered his abridgement of *Paradise Lost* to be primarily for his own followers, and relied on his network of preachers to encourage distribution. It might also explain why sales were slow and a new edition was not needed until shortly after Wesley’s death in 1791.

In producing his abridgement, Wesley’s stated concern was to make it more accessible to “persons of a common education.” Milton brought all of his learning to bear on *Paradise Lost*, filling it with classical and biblical allusions, as well as numerous geographical, astronomical, and historical connections. Even university-educated persons found it a difficult read, which spawned a stream of elucidating commentaries, beginning with Joseph Addison devoting eighteen issues of his *Spectator*

¹This document was produced under the editorial direction of Randy L. Maddox, with the diligent assistance of Aileen F. Maddox. Last updated: February 10, 2017.

²This introduction draws in part on Frank Baker, “Introduction,” *Milton for the Methodists* (Westminster: Epworth, 1988), vii–xvi.

³An excerpt from Book 5, lines 153–208, titled “Morning Hymn” appears in *MSP*, 1:1–3; followed by an abridged excerpt from Book 7, lines 210–550, titled “Creation” (pp. 3–14).

⁴Wesley’s Preface to the abridgement is dated January 1, 1763. His common practice was to write the preface last, just as the work was going to press.

⁵Wesley advertised in this setting his publications aimed at an audience beyond his followers.

⁶See JW, *Works*, 27:371.

journal to this task in 1712.⁷ Within a year of Wesley's publication, Thomas Newton issued a crowning expression of this stream—a two-volume edition of *Paradise Lost* which added throughout explanatory notes selected from various scholarly commentaries.⁸ This competition may have contributed to the slow sales of Wesley's abridgement. But a comparison of the two works highlights the distinctiveness of Wesley's publication. Newton retains the whole of Milton's poem, and his explanatory notes often assume knowledge of classical literature. By contrast, Wesley sought to make *Paradise Lost* accessible to persons of a common education:

First, by omitting those lines, which I despaired of explaining to the unlearned, without using abundance of words; and secondly, by adding short and easy notes, such as I trust will make the main of this excellent poem clear and intelligible to any uneducated person of a tolerable good understanding.

While students of Wesley are well aware of his penchant for abridgement, this particular instance of abridging a literary classic has sparked scholarly debate. The most extended study by a literary scholar in the mid-twentieth century concluded that Wesley's abridgement was "a parody of great literature and of great books, a watering down of a great poem for those who have to be told in the first sentence of the preface that it is a great poem."⁹ By contrast, an essay-length study a few years earlier praised Wesley for "the excellence of his method and the splendid reliability of his edition," which "made a great classic available to the masses."¹⁰ Building on this more positive evaluation, in part by focus on reader response, Jennifer Snead has argued most recently that Wesley's abridgement of *Paradise Lost*, with his explanatory notes, "functioned to empower and create an active, engaged readership."¹¹

Close comparison shows that Wesley reduced the 10565 lines of Milton's original to 8696 lines (or by about 17.7%).¹² Such comparison also makes clear that many of Wesley's elisions were motivated by more than a concern to remove obscure references and detail—he also deletes comments where Milton's (somewhat mild) Calvinism shines through.¹³ While this might be praised for providing a consistent theological portrait to Wesley's readers, it must also be admitted that he thereby obscures (for those who read only his abridged text) some of the complexity in Milton's theological stance.¹⁴ As an aid for readers

⁷Addison's comments were first published in *Spectator* between Dec. 31, 1711 and May 3, 1712; then later collected in book form.

⁸Thomas Newton (ed.), *Paradise Lost. ... With notes of Various Authors*, 2 vols. (London: Printed for J. & R. Tonson, et al., 1763). While the publication date is "1763," this collection was advertised as just being released in Feb. 6, 1764 in the *London Chronicle* and the *Public Advertiser*.

⁹Sven Eric Molin, "John Wesley's Techniques in Revising Literary Masterpieces for his Methodist Audience, with special reference to *Paradise Lost*" (University of Pennsylvania Ph.D. thesis, 1956), 296. See also the tepid evaluation in Thomas Walter Herbert, *John Wesley as Editor and Author* (Princeton University Press, 1940), 75–79.

¹⁰Oscar Sherwin, "Milton for the Masses: John Wesley's Edition of *Paradise Lost*," *Modern Language Quarterly* 12 (1951): 267–85; see p. 272 fn 18, and p. 285.

¹¹Jennifer Snead, "The Work of Abridgments: Readers, Editors, and Expectations," in Bonnie Gunzenhauser (ed.), *Reading in History: New Methodologies from the Anglo-American Tradition* (London: Pickering and Chatto, 2010), 77–89; here, p. 79.

¹²The misnumbering in some sections of Wesley's abridgement make it appear that he preserved 8708 lines. See the careful collation in Molin. "John Wesley's Techniques," 87.

¹³For examples see Sherwin, "Milton," 280–81; and Snead, "Work of Abridgments," 84–85.

¹⁴See Molin, "Wesley's Techniques," 262–77.

who want to explore Wesley's deletions, we have included an Appendix immediately following the transcription of Wesley's version, which provides the full text of Milton with Wesley's major deletions placed in **red font**.

In terms of process, Wesley's editorial approach to *Paradise Lost* was fairly conservative. He worked with the text standardized by Milton.¹⁵ While he deleted significant portions, he rarely altered the words that he retained.¹⁶ There is every reason to believe that he followed his common process for abridgements, which was to take an existing edition of a book and draw lines through everything he wanted omitted. This marked book was then sent to the printer, and usually discarded after use. The notes that Wesley added would have been provided separately.

There was one more important dimension of Wesley's edition of *Paradise Lost*. Having rendered it accessible (and theologically pure) through his abridging and notes, Wesley assumed the role of a critic. He notes in the Preface that he had highlighted throughout passages that he judged to be "peculiarly excellent, either with regard to sentiment or expression" and encouraged his followers to read these passages repeatedly, or even commit them to memory. After introducing this practice in *Paradise Lost*, Wesley carried it over to later publications, including his collected *Works* (1771–74).¹⁷

Finally, it should be noted that Wesley's edition of *Paradise Lost* contains several printer errors and evidence of insufficient copy correction. We have corrected these errors in the text, with annotation of the original. When a second edition was issued after Wesley's death, they also corrected most of these problems.

Editions:

John Wesley. *An Extract from Milton's Paradise Lost, with notes*. London: Fenwick, 1763.¹⁸
London, 1791.

¹⁵We do not know the exact edition Wesley used, but he follows the text of John Milton, *Paradise Lost* (London: S. Simons, 1668)—the first printing to add summaries of argument to each chapter.

¹⁶As compared, for example, to how Richard Bentley rewrote sections that he considered problematic in his edition of *Milton's Paradise Lost* (London: Jacob Tonson, 1732).

¹⁷See Frank Baker, "John Wesley, Literary Arbiter: An Introduction to his use of the Asterisk," *WHS* 40 (1975): 25–33.

¹⁸Only 10–12 copies of this original edition are known to survive.

Table of Contents

Wesley's Preface	3
Book I	5
Notes	24
Book II	28
Notes	57
Book III	62
Notes	81
Book IV	83
Notes	112
Book V	116
Notes	138
Book VI	141
Notes	167
Book VII	170
Notes	188
Book VIII	191
Notes	209
Book IX	211
Notes	242
Book X	244
Notes	273
Book XI	275
Notes	300
Book XII	303
Notes	321

[Editor's Appendix of Milton's text with Wesley deletions noted

after p. 322]

TO THE READER.

Of all the poems which have hitherto appeared in the world, in whatever age or nation, the preference has generally been given by impartial judges, to Milton's *Paradise Lost*. But this inimitable work amidst all its beauties, is unintelligible to abundance of readers: the immense learning which he has every where crowded together, making it quite obscure to persons of a common education.

This difficulty, almost insuperable as it appears, I have endeavoured to remove in the following extract: first, by omitting those lines, which I despaired of explaining to the unlearned, without using abundance of words: and, secondly, by adding short and easy notes, such as I trust will make the main of this excellent poem, clear and intelligible to any uneducated person, of a tolerable good understanding.

To those passages which I apprehend to be peculiarly excellent, either with regard to sentiment or expression, I have prefixed a star:¹ and these, I believe, it would be worth while to read over and over, or even to commit to memory.

London, January
1, 1763.

¹Wesley's intent was to place an asterisk (*) both at the beginning and end of each selection he wanted to highlight. If the selection included paragraph breaks, he typically put an asterisk at the opening of each paragraph, until you reached the end of the selection. In a few places the terminating asterisk appears to be accidentally omitted. We have tried to add these when possible (with notation).

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK I.

The Argument.

This first book proposes first in brief, the whole subject, man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed: then touches the prime cause of his fall, the serpent, or rather Satan in the serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the poem hastes into the midst of things, presenting Satan, with his angels, now fallen into hell, described here, not in the center (for heaven and earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest called Chaos. Here Satan, with his angels, lying on the burning lake, thunder-struck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who, next in order

and dignity, lay by him; they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded: they rise; their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan, and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining heaven, but tells them, lastly, of a new world, and new kind of creature to be created, according to an antient prophecy or report in heaven; for that angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many ancient fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep: the infernal peers there sit in council.

Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,
With loss of Eden, till one greater man
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat, 5
*Sing heav'nly muse. O Spi'rit, that dost prefer
Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,
Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss, 10
And mad'st it pregnant: what in me is dark
Illumin, what is low raise and support;
That to the height of this great argument
I may assert eternal providence,
And justify the ways of God to men. 15
 *Say first, for heav'n hides nothing from thy view,
Nor the deep tract of hell, say first what cause

Mov'd our grand parents, in that happy state,
 Favour'd of heav'n so highly, to fall off
 From their Creator, and transgress his will, 20
 For one restraint, lords of the world besides?
 Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?
 Th' infernal serpent; he it was, whose guile,
 Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride 25
 Had cast him out from heav'n, with all his host
 Of rebel angels, by whose aid aspiring
 To set himself in glory 'bove his peers,
 He trusted to have equal'd the Most High,
 If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim 30
 Against the throne and monarchy of God
 Rais'd impious war in heav'n and battle proud
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,
 With hideous ruin and combustion, down 35
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
 In adamantin chains and penal fire,
 Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.
 *Nine times the space that measures day and night
 To mortal men, he with his horrid crew 40
 Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulph
 Confounded though immortal: but his doom
 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain
 Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes, 45
 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay
 Mix'd with obdurate pride and stedfast hate.
 At once, as far as angels ken, he views
 The dismal situation waste and wild;
 A dungeon horrible on all sides round 50

As one great furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
 No light, but rather darkness visible
 Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes 55
 That comes to all; but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
 With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd:
 Such place eternal justice had prepar'd
 For those rebellious, here their pris'on ordain'd 60
 In utter darkness, and their portion set
 As far remov'd from God and light of heaven,
 As from the center thrice to th' utmost pole.
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell!*
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd 65
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
 He soon discerns, and welt'ring by his side
 One next himself in pow'r, and next in crime,
 Beelzebub. To whom the arch-enemy,
 And thence in heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words 70
 Breaking the horrid silence thus began.
 *If thou art he; but O how fall'n! how chang'd
 From him, who in the happy realms of light
 Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst outshine 75²
 Myriads though bright! If he whom mutual league,
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise,
 Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd
 In equal ruin: into what pit thou seest 80
 From what height fall'n; so much the stronger prov'd
 He with his thunder: and till then who knew
 The force of these dire arms? Yet not for those,
 Nor what the potent Victor in his rage

²An error on one line in numbering begins at this point. We have generally not corrected line numbering because of the line references in the notes at the end of each Book. The only times we have corrected (with annotation) is when there is incongruity between the numbering within the chapter and the references in the notes.

Can else inflict, do I repent or change, 85
 Though chang'd in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,
 And high disdain, from sense of injur'd merit,
 That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,
 And to the fierce contention brought along
 Innumerable force of spirits arm'd, 90
 That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,
 His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd
 In dubious battel on the plains of heaven,
 And shook his throne.* What though the field be lost?
 All is not lost; th' unconquerable will, 95
 And courage never to submit or yield,
 That glory never shall his wrath or might
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
 With suppliant knee, and deify his power,
 Who from the terror of this arm so late 100
 Doubted his empire; that were low indeed,
 That were an ignominy' and shame beneath
 This downfall; since by fate the strength of gods
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail,
 Since through experience of this great event 105
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,
 We may with more successful hope resolve
 To wage by force or guile eternal war,
 Irreconcilable to our grand foe,
 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy 110
 Sole reigning holds the tyranny of heaven.
 So spake th' apostate angel, though in pain,
 Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair:
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.
 O prince, O chief of many throned powers, 115
 That ledst th' imbattel'd seraphim to war

Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds
 Fearless, indanger'd heav'n's perpetual King,
 And put to proof his high supremacy,
 Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate; 120
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,
 That with sad overthrow and foul defeat
 Hath lost us heav'n, and all this mighty host
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
 As far as gods and heav'nly essences 125
 Can perish: for the mind and spi'rit remains
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,
 Though all our glory' extinct, and happy state
 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
 *But what if he our Conqu'ror (whom I now 130
 Of force believe almighty, since no less
 Than such could have o'er-pow'r'd such force as ours)
 Have left us this our spi'rit and strength entire
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire, 135
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls
 By right of war, whate'er his business be,
 Here in the heart of hell to work in fire,
 Or do his errands in the gloomy deep;
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel 140
 Strength undiminish'd, or eternal being
 To undergo eternal punishment?*\br/>
 Whereto with speedy words th' arch-fiend reply'd.
 Fall'n cherub, to be weak is miserable
 Doing or suffering: but of this be sure, 145
 To do ought good never will be our task,
 But ever to do ill our sole delight,
 As bei'ng the contrary to his high will
 Whom we resist. If then his providence

Out of our evil seek to bring forth good, 150
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,
 And out of good still to find means of evil.
 *But see the angry Victor hath recall'd
 His ministers of vengeance and pursuit
 Back to the gates of heav'n: the sulphurous hail 155
 Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid
 The fiery surge, that from the precipice
 Of heav'n receiv'd us falling; and the thunder,
 Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage,
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now 160
 To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.
 Let us not slip the occasion, whether scorn,
 Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild,
 The seat of desolation, void of light, 165
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves;
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there,*
 And re-assembling our afflicted powers, 170
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
 Our enemy, our own loss how repair:
 What reinforcement we may gain from hope;
 If not, what resolution from despair.
 *Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate 175
 With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes
 That sparkling blaz'd, his other parts besides
 Prone on the flood, extended long and large
 Lay floating many a rood: nor ever thence
 Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will 180
 And high permission of all-ruling heaven
 Left him at large to his own dark designs,
 *Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool

His mighty stature; on each hand the flames
 Driv'n backward slope their pointing spires, and roll'd 185
 In billows, leave i' th' midst a horrid vale.
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air
 That felt unusual weight, 'till on dry land
 He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd 190
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire.
 Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,
 Said then the lost arch-angel, this the seat
 That we must change for heav'n, this mournful gloom
 For that celestial light? Be it so, since he 195
 Who now is Sovreign can dispose and bid
 What shall be right: farthest from him is best,
 Whom reas'on hath equal'd, force hath made supreme
 Above his equals. Farewel happy fields,
 Where joy for ever dwells: hail horrors, hail 200
 Infernal world, and thou profoundest hell
 Receive thy new possessor; one who brings
 A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.
 The mind is its own place, and in itself
 Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n.* 205
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be, all but less than he
 Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least
 We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence: 210
 Here we may reign secure, and in my choice
 To reign is worth ambition though in hell:
 Better to reign in hell, than serve in heaven.
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 Th' associates and copartners of our loss 215
 Lie thus astonish'd on th' oblivious pool,

And call them not to share with us their part
 In this unhappy mansion, or once more
 With rallied arms to try what may be yet
 Regain'd in heav'n, or what more lost in hell? 220
 So Satan spake, and him Beelzebub
 Thus answer'd. Leader of those armies bright,
 Which, but th' Omnipotent, none could have foil'd,
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft 225
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge
 Of battle when it rag'd, in all assaults
 Their surest signal, they will soon resume
 New courage and revive, though now they lie
 Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 230
 As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,
 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious height.
 *He scarce had ceas'd when the superior fiend
 Was moving tow'ard the shore; his pond'rous shield,
 Ethereal temper, massy, large and round 235
 Behind him cast; the broad circumference
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
 Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views.
 His spear, to equal which the tallest pine
 Hewn on Norwegian hills, were but a wand, 240
 He walk'd with to support uneasy steps
 Over the burning marle, (not like those steps
 On heaven's azure,) and the torrid clime
 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire:
 Nathless he so indur'd, till on the beach 245
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd
 His legions, angel forms, who lay intranc'd
 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks
 In Valombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades

High over-arch'd imbow'r: so thick bestrown 250
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,
 Under amazement of their hideous change.
 *He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep
 Of hell resounded. Princes, potentates,
 Warriors, the flow'r of heav'n, once yours, now lost, 255
 If such astonishment as this can seize
 Eternal spi'rits; or have ye chos'n this place
 After the toil of battle to repose
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find
 To slumber here, as in the vales of heaven? 260
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
 To' adore the Conqueror? Who now beholds
 Cherub and seraph rolling in the flood
 With scatter'd arms and ensigns, till anon
 His swift pursuers from heav'n gates discern 265
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
 Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n.*
 They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung: 270
 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;
 Yet to their general's voice they soon obey'd
 Innumerable. As when the potent rod
 Of Amram's son, up call'd a pitchy cloud 275
 Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,
 That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung
 Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile:
 So numberless were those bad angels seen
 Hovering on wing under the cope of hell 280
 'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires;
 Till, as a signal giv'n, th' up-lifted spear
 Of their great sultan waving to direct

Their course, in even ballance down they light
 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain. 285
 Forthwith from every squadron and each band
 The heads and leaders thither haste where stood
 Their great commander; godlike shapes and forms
 Excelling human, princely dignities,
 And pow'rs that erst in heaven sat on thrones;
 Though of their names in heav'nly records now 291
 Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd
 By their rebellion from the book of life.
 Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve
 Got them new names, till wand'ring o'er the earth, 295
 Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,
 By falsities and lies the greatest part
 Of mankind they corrupted to forsake
 God their Creator, and th' invisible
 Glory of him that made them to transform 300
 Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd
 With gay religions full of pomp and gold,
 And devils to adore for deities:
 Then were they known to men by various names,
 And various idols through the heathen world. 305
 Say, muse, their names then known, who first, who last,
 Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,
 At their great empe'ror's call, as next in worth
 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,
 While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof. 310
 The chief were those who from the pit of hell
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix
 Their seats long after next the seat of God,
 Their altars by his altar, gods ador'd
 Among the nations round, and durst abide 315
 Jehovah thund'ring out of Zion, thron'd

Between the cherubim; yea, often plac'd
 Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,
 Abominations; and with cursed things
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd.
 First Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood
 Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears, 320
 Though for the noise of drums and timbrels loud
 Their children's, cries unheard, that pass'd through fire
 To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite
 Worshipt in Rabba and her watry plain.
 Next Chemos, th' obscene dread of Moab's sons, 325
 Peor his other name, when he entic'd
 Israel in Sittim on their march from Nile
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 With these came they, who from the bord'ring flood
 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts 330
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
 Of Baalim and Ashtaroth, those male,
 *These feminine. For spirits when they please
 Can either sex assume, or both; so soft
 And uncompounded is their essence pure, 335
 Not ty'd or manacled with joint or limb,
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they choose
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,
 Can execute their airy purposes 340
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.*
 For those the race of Israel oft forsook
 Their living strength, and unfrequented left
 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
 To bestial gods; for which their heads as low 345
 Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear

Of despicable foes. With these in troop
 Came Astoreth, whom the Phoenicians call'd
 Astarte, queen of heav'n, Thammuz came next.
 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allur'd 350
 The Syrian damsels to lament his fate
 In amorous ditties all a summer's day,
 While smooth Adonis from his native rock
 Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded. Next came one 355
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark
 Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off.
 Dagon his name, sea monster, upward man
 And downward fish: yet had his temple high
 Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast 360
 Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon,
 And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.
 Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks
 Of Abbana and Pharphar. Next appear'd 365
 A crew who under names of old renown,
 Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd
 Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek
 Their wand'ring gods disguis'd in brutish forms. 370
 Belial came last, than whom a spi'rit more lewd
 Fell not from heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for itself: to him no temple stood
 Or altar smoak'd; yet who more oft than he
 In temples and at altars, when the priest 375
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd
 With lust and violence the house of God?
 In courts and palaces he also reigns

And in luxurious cities, where the noise
 Of ri'ot ascends above their loftiest towers, 380
 And injury and outrage: and when night
 Darkens the streets then wander forth the sons
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.
 All these and more came flocking; but with looks
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd 385
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to' have found their chief
 Not in despair, to' have found themselves not lost
 In loss itself; which on his countenance cast
 Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride 390
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth not substance, gently rais'd
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears.
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound
 Of trumpets loud and clarions be uprear'd
 His mighty standard: that proud honor claim'd 395
 Azazel as his right, a cherub tall;
 Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd
 Th' imperial ensign, which full high advanc'd
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,
 Seraphic arms and trophies; all the while 400
 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds:
 At which the universal host up sent
 A shout, that tore hell's concave, and beyond
 Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen 405
 Ten thousand banners rising, to the air
 With orient colours waving: with them rose
 A forest huge of spears; and thronging helms
 Appear'd and serried shields in thick array
 Of depth immeasurable: anon they move 410
 *To flutes and soft recorders; such as rais'd

To height of noblest temper heroes old
 Arming to battel, and instead of rage
 Deliberate valor breath'd, firm and unmov'd
 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat; 415
 Nor wanting pow'r to mitigate and swage
 With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase
 Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow', and pain,
 From mortal or immortal minds.* Thus they
 Breathing united force with fixed thought 420
 Mov'd on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil; and now
 Advanc'd in view they stand, a horrid front
 Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise
 Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield, 425
 Awaiting what command their mighty chief
 Had to impose: he through the armed files
 Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse
 The whole battalion, views their order due,
 Their visages and stature as of gods, 430
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart
 Distends with pride, and hard'ning in his strength
 Glories: for never since created man,
 Met such imbodyed force. These far beyond,
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd 435
 *Their dread commander: he above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent
 Stood like a tow'r; his form had yet not lost
 All her original brightness, nor appear'd
 Less than arch-angel ruin'd, and th' excess 440
 Of glory' obscur'd. As when the sun new risen
 Looks through the horizontal misty air
 Shorn of his beams, or from behind the moon

In dim eclipse disastrous twilight sheds
 On half the nations, and with fear of change 445
 Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone
 Above them all th' archangel: but his face
 Deep scars of thunder had entrench'd, and care
 Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows
 Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride 450
 Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast
 Signs of remorse and passion to behold
 The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
 (Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd
 For ever now to have their lot in pain, 455
 Millions of spirits for his fault amerc'd
 Of heav'n, and from eternal splendors flung
 For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood,
 Their glory wither'd: as when heaven's fire
 Hath scath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines, 460
 With singed top their stately growth though bare
 Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd
 To speak; whereat their doubled ranks they bend
 From wing to wing, and half inclose him round
 With all his peers: attention held them mute. 465
 Thrice he assay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,
 Tears, such as angels weep, burst forth: at last
 Words interwove with sighs found out their way.*
 O myriads of immortal spi'rits, O powers
 Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife 470
 Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
 As this place testifies, and this dire change
 Hateful to utter: but what pow'r of mind
 Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth
 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd, 480

How such united force of gods, how such
 As stood like these, could ever know repulse?
 For me be witness all the host of heaven,
 If counsels different, or danger shunn'd
 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns 485
 Monarch in heav'n, till then as one secure,
 Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,
 Consent or custom, and his regal state
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own, 490
 So as not either to provoke, or dread
 New war, provok'd; our better part remains
 To work by guile, what force effected not:
 That he at length may find, who overcomes
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.
 Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rife
 There went a fame in heav'n that he ere long 495
 Intended to create, and therein plant
 A generation, whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the sons of heaven:
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps
 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere: 500
 For this infernal pit shall never hold
 Celestial spi'rits in bondage, nor th' abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts
 Full counsel must mature: peace is despair'd,
 For who can think submission? War then, war 505
 Open or understood must be resolv'd.
 *He spake: and to confirm his words, out-flew
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
 Of mighty cherubim; the sudden blaze

Far round illumin'd hell: highly they rag'd 510
 Against the High'est, and fierce with grasped arms
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,
 Hurling defiance to'ward the vault of heaven.*
 There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top
 Belch'd fire and rolling smoke; the rest entire 515
 Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign
 That in his womb was hid metallic ore,
 The work of sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed
 A numerous brigad hasten'd: Mammon led,
 Mammon, the least erected spi'rit that fell 520
 From heav'n, for e'en in heav'n his looks and thoughts
 Were always downward bent, admiring more
 The riches of heav'n's pavement, trodden gold,
 Than ought divine or holy else enjoy'd
 In vision beatific: by him first 525³
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,
 Ransack'd the center, and with impious hands
 Rifled the bowels of their mother earth
 For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
 Open'd into the hill a spacious wound, 530
 And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire
 That riches grow in hell; that soil may best
 Deserve the precious bane. In many cells
 That underneath had veins of liquid fire
 Sluc'd from the lake, a second multitude 535
 With wondrous art founded the massy ore,
 Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross:
 A third as soon had form'd within the ground
 A various mold, and from the boiling cells
 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook. 540
 Anon out of the earth a fabric huge

³Orig., "225"; a misprint.

Rose like an exhalation, with the sound
 Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,
 Built like a temple. The ascending pile
 Stood fix'd her stately height, and strait the doors 545
 Opening their brazen folds discover wide
 Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth
 And level pavement: from the arched roof
 Pendent by subtle magic many a row
 Of starry lamps and cressets yielded light 550
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude
 Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise
 And some the architect: his hand was known
 In heav'n by many a towred structure high,
 Mean while the winged heralds by command 555
 Of sov'reign pow'r, throughout the host proclaim
 A solemn council forthwith to be held
 At Pandemonium, the high capital
 Of Satan and his peers: their summons call'd
 From every band and squared regiment 560
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon
 With hundreds and with thousands trooping came
 Attended: all access was throng'd, the gates
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air: 565
 Behold a wonder! They but now who seem'd
 In bigness to surpass earth's giant⁴ sons,
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room:
 Throng numberless. Thus spi'rits to smallest forms
 Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large 570
 Though without number still amidst the hall
 Of that infernal court. But far within,
 And in their⁵ own dimensions like themselves,

⁴Orig., "giants"; a misprint.

⁵Orig., "ther"; a misprint.

The great seraphic lords and cherubim
 In close recess and secret conclave sat 575
 A thousand demi-gods on golden seats,
 Frequent and full. After short silence then
 And summons read, the great consult began. 578⁶

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK I.

- Verse 4. “With loss of Eden”—That is, of Paradise, which was in Eden.
- Ver. 10. “Dove-like satst brooding”—This is the proper meaning of the word, which is translated *moved*, Gen. i. 2.
- Ver. 12.⁷ “Illumin”—Enlighten.
- Ver. 28. “Above his peers”—His fellow angels, even to be equal with God.
- Ver. 31. “Monarchy,” is government by one.
- Ver. 35.⁸ “Ruin”—Falling with violence.
- “Combustion”—Burning in a dreadful manner.
- Ver. 37. “Adamantine”—Firm like diamond.
- Ver. 45. “Balefull”—Full of woe or mischief.
- Ver. 48. “Ken”—See, discern.
- Ver. 52. “Darkness visible”—A dark gloom.

⁶Orig., “576”; a misprint.

⁷Orig., “11”; a misprint.

⁸Orig., “25”; a misprint.

- Ver. 63. “From the center” of the earth to the outermost point of it.
- Ver. 69. “Beelzebub”—Our Lord terms him, *prince of the devils*: therefore probably next to Satan.
- Ver. 70. “Satan” signifies an enemy.
- Ver. 76. A “myriad” is ten thousand.
- Ver. 99. “Deify his power”—Own it to be divine.
- Ver. 104. “Empyrean”—Fiery. Psalm civ. 4.
- Ver. 114. “Compeer”—Equal and companion.
- Ver. 116. “Seraphim”—The highest order of angels.
- Ver. 118. “Heaven’s perpetual King”—So he terms him, not eternal: endeavouring to detract as much as possible from his everlasting dominion, as if he had only reigned from time immemorial.
- Ver. 125. “Essences”—Natures.
- Ver. 144. “Cherubim” are the second order of angels.
- Ver. 154. “His ministers of vengeance”—To veil his shame, Satan ascribes his fall to the whole host of angels: but Raphael, Book VI. to the Messiah alone.
- Ver. 157. The “surge” is the swelling of the sea.
- Ver. 164. “Dreary”—Dismal.
- Ver. 166. “Livid”—Bluish.
- Ver. 179.⁹ A “rood” is two hundred and twenty yards.
- Ver. 187. “Expanded”—Stretched out.
- Ver. 205. “Can make a heaven of hell”—This is a fit rant for a stoic or a devil.
- Ver. 210. “Here”—That is, this place.
- Ver. 216. “Oblivious”—Where they *forget* all things.
- Ver. 231. “Astounded”—Astonished.
- Ver. 235. “Ethereal”—Heavenly.
- Ver. 238. “The Tuscan artist”—Galileo, a native of Tuscany.
- Ver. 243. “The torrid clime”—The scorching climate.
- Ver. 245. “Nathless”—Nevertheless.

⁹Orig., “181”; a misprint.

- Ver. 249. “Valombrosa”—That is a shady valley, a valley in Tuscany, formerly called Hetruria.
- Ver. 275.¹⁰ “Amram’s son”—Moses.
- Ver. 276. “Warping”—Working themselves forward. A sea-term.
- Ver. 290. “Erst”—Formerly.
- Ver. 297. “By falsities and lies”—By false idols, belying the true God.
- Ver. 302. “Religions”—Religious rites.
- Ver. 318. “Shrines”—Altars.
- Ver. 319.¹¹ “First Moloch”—After Satan and Beelzebub. Moloch signifies king.
- Ver. 325. “Chemos,” Baalpeor and Priapus were the same, the idol of obscenity, worshipped with all manner of lewdness.
- Ver. 330. “Old Euphrates”—Mentioned by the oldest historian, in the earliest account of time. It was the eastern boundary of Canaan.
- Ver. 347. “With these in troop came Astoreth”—The moon, worshipped by the Phoenicians, with the stars.
- Ver. 349. “Thammuz came next”—Thammuz, or Adonis, was the God of the Sidonians, slain by a wild boar in Mount Lebanon, from which the River Adonis descends. At a certain season of the year, about the feast of Adonis, this is of a bloody colour, occasioned by a sort of minium or red earth, which the rains wash into it. The women then made loud lamentations for Adonis, supposing it was discoloured with his blood.
- Ver. 369. “Fanatic”—Mad, void of understanding. Orus was said to be the son of Osiris and Isis. They worshipped them in the form of bulls, dogs and cats.

¹⁰Orig., “274”; a misprint.

¹¹Orig., “322”; a misprint.

- Ver. 383. “Flown”—Overflowed, flushed.
 Ver. 394. “Clarians” are a kind of small, shrill trumpet.
 Ver. 399. “A Meteor”—Is a vapour kindled in the air.
 Ver. 401. “Sonorous”—Sounding. “Martial”—Warlike.
 Ver. 407. “Orient”—Shining, beautiful: like the *rising* sun.
 Ver. 409. “Serried”—Closely joined, locked one within another.
 Ver. 424. “In guise”—In the manner of.
 Ver. 428. “Traverse”—Transversely, crossways.
 Ver. 435. “Prowess”—Courage.
 Ver. 442. “Horizontal”—Near the horizon; the line where the sky and earth seem to meet.
 Ver. 456. “Amerced of heaven”—Punished with the loss of it.
 Ver. 460. “Scathed”—Struck, hurt, scorched.
 Ver. 494. “Rife”—Frequent.
 Ver. 504. “Mature”—Ripen, bring to perfection.
 Ver. 506. “Understood”—Covertly carried on.
 Ver. 517. “Ore”—Unwrought metal.
 Ver. 518. “The work of sulphur”—Quicksilver and sulphur, are supposed to be the principles of all metals.
 Ver. 525. “Vision beatific”—The sight of God which makes the essential happiness of heaven.
 Ver. 536. “Founded”—Melted, and poured out.
 Ver. 537. “The bullion dross”—That which arose from the boiling metal.
 Ver. 543. “Dulcet”—Pleasant.
 Ver. 550.¹² “Cressets”—A crescet is a vessel to contain oil.
 Ver. 558. “Pandemonium”—That is, the palace of all the devils.
 Ver. 576. “Demigods”—Little gods.

¹²Orig., “549”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK II.

The Argument.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven: some advise it, others dissuade: a third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be created; their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honored and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake themselves several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to hell gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between hell and heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

High on a throne, Satan exalted sat,
And high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
Vain war with heav'n, and by success untaught
His proud imaginations thus display'd.

5

Pow'rs and dominions, deities of heaven,
 For since no deep within her gulph can hold
 Immortal vigor, though oppress'd and fall'n,
 I give not heav'n for lost. From this descent
 Celestial virtues rising, will appear 10
 More glorious and more dread than from no fall.
 Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of heaven,
 Did first create your leader, next free choice,
 With what besides, in counsel or in fight,
 Hath been atchiev'd of merit, yet this loss 15
 Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw
 Envy from each inferior; but who here 20
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the Thund'rer's aim
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 Of endless pain? Where there is then no good
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there 25
 From faction; for none sure will clame in hell
 Precedence, none, whose portion is so small
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
 Will covet more. With this advantage then
 To union, and firm faith, and firm accord, 30
 More than can be in heav'n, we now return
 To clame our just inheritance of old,
 Whether by open war or covert guile,
 We now debate; who can advise, may speak.
 He ceas'd; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king, 3[5]
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest spirit
 That fought in heav'n, now fiercer by despair:

His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
 Equal in strength, and rather than be less
 Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost 40
 Went all his fear: of God, or hell, or worse
 He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake.
 My sentence is for open war: of wiles,
 More unexpert, I boast not: them let those
 Contrive who need, or when they need, not now. 45
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
 Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait
 The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here
 Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling place
 Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame, 50
 The prison of his tyranny who reigns
 By our delay? No, let us rather choose,
 Arm'd with hell flames and fury all at once
 O'er heav'n's high tow'rs to force resistless way,
 Turning our tortures into horrid arms 55
 Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise
 Of his almighty engin he shall hear
 Infernal thunder, and for lightning see
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
 Among his angels, and his throne itself 60
 Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur, and strange fire,
 His own invented torments. But perhaps
 Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
 To our destruction; if there be in hell 65
 *Fear to be worse destroy'd: what can be worse
 Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe;
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire

Must exercise us without hope of end, 70
 The vassals of his anger, when the scourge
 Inexorably, and the torturing hour
 Calls us to penance? More destroy'd than thus
 We should be quite abolish'd and expire.
 What fear we then? What doubt we to incense 75
 His utmost ire? Which to the height enrag'd,
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce
 To nothing this essential, happier far
 Than miserable to have eternal being:*
 Or if our substance be indeed divine, 80
 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst
 On this side nothing; and by proof we feel
 Our power sufficient to disturb his heaven,
 And with perpetual inroads to alarm,
 Though inaccessible, his fatal throne: [85]
 Which if not victory is yet revenge.
 *He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
 Desp'rate revenge, and battle dangerous
 To less than gods. On th' other side up rose
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane; 90
 A fairer person lost not heav'n; he seem'd
 For dignity compos'd and high exploit:
 But all was false and hollow; though his tongue
 Dropt manna, and could make the worse appear
 The better reason, to perplex and dash 95
 Maturest counsels: for his thoughts were low;
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds
 Timorous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the ear,
 And with persuasive accent thus begun.*
 I should be much for open war, O peers, 100
 As not behind in hate; if what was urg'd

Main reason to persuade immediate war,
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success:
 When he who most excels in fact¹³ of arms, 105
 In what he counsels and in what excels
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
 And utter dissolution, as the scope
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
 First, what revenge? The tow'rs of heav'n are fill'd 110
 With armed watch, that render all access
 Impregnable; oft on the bord'ring deep
 Incamp their legions, or with obscure wing
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
 Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way 115
 By force, and at our heels all hell should rise
 With blackest insurrection, to confound
 Heav'n's purest light, yet our great Enemy
 All incorruptible would on his throne
 Sit unpolluted, and th' ethereal mould 120
 Incapable of stain¹⁴ would soon expel
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire
 Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope
 Is flat despair: we must exasperate
 Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage 125
 *And that must end us, that must be our cure,
 To be no more; sad cure; for who would lose,
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
 These thoughts that wander through eternity,
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost 130
 In the wide womb of uncreated night,
 Devoid of sense and motion?* And who knows,
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe

¹³Orig., "facts"; a misprint. "Fact of arms" comes from the Italian, *fatto d' arme*.

¹⁴Orig., "slain"; a misprint.

Can give it, or will ever? How he can
 Is doubtful; that he never will is sure. 135
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,
 To give his enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
 To punish endless? Wherefore cease we then? 140
 Say they who counsel war, we are decreed,
 Reserv'd and destin'd to eternal woe;
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
 What can we suffer worse? Is this then worst,
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms? 145
 What when we fled amain, pursued and struck
 With heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought
 The deep to shelter us? This hell then seem'd
 A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay
 Chain'd on the burning lake? That sure was worse. 150
 *What if the breath that kindled those grim fires
 Awak'd should blow them into sev'nfold rage,
 And plunge us in the flames? Or from above
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us? What if all 155
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament
 Of hell should spout her cataracts of fire,
 Impendent horrors, threatning hideous fall
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
 Designing or exhorting glorious war, 160
 Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey
 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains;
 There to converse with everlasting groans, 165

Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd,
 Ages of hopeless end? This would be worse.*
 War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye 17[0]
 Views all things at one view? He from heav'n's height
 All these our motions vain sees and derides;
 Not more almighty to resist our might
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heaven 175
 Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here
 Chains and these torments? Better these than worse
 By my advice; since fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decrees,
 The Victor's will. To suffer, as to do, 180
 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust
 That so ordains: this was at first resolv'd,
 If we were wise, against so great a foe
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 Our supreme foe in time may much remit 185¹⁵
 His anger, and perhaps thus far remov'd
 Not mind us not offending, satisfy'd
 With what is punish'd; whence these raging fires
 Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.
 Our purer essence then will overcome 190
 Their noxious vapour, or inur'd not feel,
 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd
 In temper and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain. 195
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears

¹⁵Orig., "285"; a misprint.

For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
 If we procure not to ourselves more woe.
 Thus Belial with words cloth'd in reason's garb 200
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,
 Not peace: and after him thus Mammon spake.
 Either to disin throne the King of Heaven
 We war, if war be best, or to regain
 Our own right lost: him to un throne we then 205
 May hope, when everlasting fate shall yield
 To fickle chance, and Chaos judge the strife.
 The former vain to hope argues as vain
 The latter:¹⁶ for what place can be for us
 Within heav'n's bound, unless heav'n's Lord supreme 210
 We overpow'r? Suppose he should relent,
 And publish grace to all, on promise made
 Of new subjection; with what eyes could we
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive
 Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne 215
 With warbled hymns, and to his godhead sing
 Forc'd hallelujah's while he lordly sits
 Our envied sov'reign, and his altar breathes
 Ambrosial odors and ambrosial flowers,
 Our servile offerings? This must be our task 220
 In heaven, this our delight; how wearisome
 Eternity so spent in worship paid
 To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd
 Unacceptable, though in heav'n, our state 225
 Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek
 Our own good from ourselves, and from our own
 Live to ourselves, though in this waste recess
 Free and to none accountable, preferring

¹⁶Orig., "fatter"; a misprint.

Hard liberty before the easy yoke [230]
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
 Useful of hurtful, prosp'rous of adverse
 We can create, and in what place so e'er
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain 235
 Through labour and indurance. *This deep world
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
 Thick clouds and dark doth heav'n's all-ruling Sire
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd,
 And with the majesty of darkness round 240
 Covers his throne; from whence deep thunders roar
 Must'ring their rage, and heav'n resembles hell? *
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light
 Imitate when we please? This desert soil
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold; 245
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence; and what can heav'n show more?
 Our torments also may in length of time
 Become our elements, these piercing fires
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd 250
 Into their temper; which must needs remove
 The sensible of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state
 Of order, how in safety best we may
 Compose our present evils, with regard 255
 Of what we are and were,¹⁷ dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war: ye have what I advise.
 *He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain
 The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long 260
 Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
 Sea-faring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance

¹⁷Orig., "where"; a misprint, unless Wesley was changing purposefully.

Or pinnacle anchors in a craggy bay
 After the tempest: such applause was heard
 As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd, 265
 Advising peace: for such another field
 They dreaded worse than hell: so much the fear
 Of thunder and the sword of Michael
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire
 To found this nether empire, which might rise 270
 By policy, and long process of time,
 In emulation opposite to heaven.
 Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, than whom,
 Satan except, none higher sat, with grave
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd 275
 A pillar of state; deep on his front ingraven
 Deliberation sat and public care;
 And princely counsel in his face yet shone,
 Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood
 With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear 280
 The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look
 Drew audience and attention still as night
 Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake.
 Thrones and imperial pow'rs, offspring of heaven,
 Ethereal virtues; or these titles now 285
 Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd
 Princes of hell? For so the popular vote
 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
 A growing empire; doubtless; while we dream,
 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd 290
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
 Beyond his potent arm: for he, be sure,
 In height or deep, still first and last will reign
 Sole King, and of his kingdom lose no part.

What sit we then projecting peace or war? 295
 War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss
 Irreparable; terms of peace yet none
 Vouchsaf'd or sought; for what peace will be given
 To us inslav'd, but custody severe,
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment 300
 Inflicted? And what peace can we return,
 But to our pow'r hostility and hate,
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,
 Yet ever plotting how the Conqu'ror least
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice 305
 In doing what we most in suffering feel?
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dang'rous expedition to invade
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or siege.
 What if we find some easier enterprise? [310]
 There is a place, (if ancient fame in heaven
 Err not) another world, the happy seat
 Of some new race call'd man, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 In pow'r and excellence, but favor'd more
 Of him who rules above; so was his will 315
 Pronounc'd among the gods, and by an oath,
 That shook heav'n's whole circumference, confirm'd.
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit, what their power,
 And where their weakness, how attempted best 320
 By force or subtlety. Though heav'n be shut
 And heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure
 In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd,
 The utmost border of his kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it: here perhaps 325

Some advantageous act may be atchiev'd
 By sudden onset, either with hell fire
 To waste his whole creation, or possess
 All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,
 The puny habitants, or if not drive, 330
 Seduce them to our party, that their God
 May prove their foe, and with repenting hand
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass
 Common revenge, when these his darling sons,
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse 335
 Their frail original, and faded bliss,
 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
 Hatching vain empires. Thus Beelzebub
 Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd 340
 By Satan, and in part propos'd: for whence
 But from the author of all ill, could spring
 So deep a malice, to confound the race
 Of mankind in one root? The bold design
 Pleas'd highly those infernal states, and joy 345
 Sparkled in all their eyes; with full assent
 They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.
 Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
 Synod of gods, and like to what ye are,
 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep 350
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,
 Nearer our ancient seat; perhaps in view
 Of those bright confines, whence with neighb'ring arms
 And opportune excursion we may chance
 Re-enter heaven; or else in some mild zone 355
 Dwell not unvisited of heav'n's fair light
 Secure, and at the brightning orient beam

Purge off this gloom; the soft delicious air,
 To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,
 Shall breath her balm. But first whom shall we send 360
 In search of this new world? Whom shall we find
 Sufficient? Who shall tempt with wand'ring feet
 The dark unbottom'd infinite abyss,
 And through the palpable obscure find out
 His uncouth way, or steer his aery flight 365
 Upborne with indefatigable wings
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
 The happy isle? What strength, what art can then
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe
 Through the strict senteries and stations thick 370
 Of angels watching round? Here he had need
 All circumspection, and we now no less
 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send,
 The weight of all and our last hope relies.
 This said, he sat; and expectation held 375
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd
 To second, or oppose, or undertake
 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute,
 Pond'ring the danger with deep thoughts; and each
 In others count'nance read his own dismay 380
 Astonish'd: none among the choice and prime
 Of those heav'n-warring champions could be found
 So hardy as to profer or accept
 Alone the dreadful voyage; till at last
 Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd 385
 Above his fellows, with monarchal pride
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.
 *O progeny of heav'n, empyreal thrones,
 With reason hath deep silence and demur

Seiz'd us, though undismay'd: long is the way 390
 And hard, that out of hell leads up to light;
 Our prison strong: this huge convex of fire
 Outrageous to devour, immures us round
 Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant
 Barr'd over us prohibit all egress. 395
 These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound
 Of unessential night receives him next
 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being
 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.
 *If thence he scape into whatever world, 400
 Of unknown region, what remains him less
 Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?
 But I should ill become this throne, O peers,
 And this imperial sovereignty, adorn'd
 With splendor, arm'd with power, if ought propos'd 405
 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
 Of difficulty or danger could deter
 Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume
 These royalties, and not refuse to reign,
 Refusing to accept as great a share 410
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest
 High honour'd sits?* Go therefore mighty powers,
 Terror of heav'n, though fallen; intend at home, 415
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
 The present misery, and render hell
 More tolerable; if there be cure or charm
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill mansion: intermit no watch 420
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad

Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliverance for us all: this enterprize
 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
 The monarch, and prevented all reply, 425
 Prudent lest from his resolution rais'd
 Others among the chief might offer now
 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd;
 And so refus'd might in opinion stand
 His rivals, winning cheap the high repute 430
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more th' adventure than his voice
 Forbidding; and at once with him they rose;
 *Their rising all at once was as the sound
 Of thunder heard remote.* Towards him they bend 435
 With awful reverence prone; and as a god
 Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven:
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,
 That for the general safety he despis'd
 His own: for neither do the spirits damn'd 440
 Lose all their virtue; lest bad men should boast
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,
 Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal.
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief:
 *As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds 445
 Ascending, while the north-wind sleeps, o'er-spread
 Heav'n's chearful face, the louring element
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow, or shower;
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet 450
 Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.

O shame to men! Devil with devil damn'd
 Firm concord holds, men only disagree 455
 Of creatures rational, though under hope
 Of heav'nly grace: and God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife
 Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy!* 460
 The Stygian council thus dissolv'd; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal peers:
 Midst came their mighty paramount, and seem'd
 Alone the antagonist of heaven, nor less
 Than hell's dread emperor with pomp supreme, 465
 And god-like imitated state; him round
 A globe of fiery seraphim inclos'd
 With bright imblazonry, and horrent arms.
 Then of their session ended they bid cry
 With trumpets regal sound the great result: 470
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of hell
 With deafning shout return'd them loud acclame.
 Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers
 Disband, and wand'ring, each his several way 475
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
 Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
 The irksom hours, till his great chief return.
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime, 480
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,
 Others with vast Typhoean rage more fell
 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air
 In whirlwind; hell scarce holds the wild uproar.
 *Others more mild, in silent valley, sing 485

With notes angelical to many a harp
 Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall
 By doom of battle; and complain that fate
 Free virtue should enthrall to force or chance.
 Their song was partial, but the harmony 490
 (What could it less when spirits immortal sing?)
 Suspended hell, and took with ravishment
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,)
 Others apart sat on a hill retir'd, 495
 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate,
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute,
 And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.*
 Of good and evil much they argued then, 500
 Of happiness and final misery,
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy:
 *Yet with a pleasing sorcery could charm
 Pain for a while or anguish, and excite
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured breast 505
 With stubborn patience as with triple steel.*
 Another part in squadrons and gross bands,
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend 510
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate;
 Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep; 515
 Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream; fierce Phlegethon,

Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms 520
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, the parching air
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of fire.
 Thither by harpy footed furies hal'd,
 At certain revolutions all the damn'd 525
 Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round, 530
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 Thus roving on forlorn, th' adventurous bands
 With shudd'ring horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest: through many a dark and dreary vale 535
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp,
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
 An universe of death, which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good, 540
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd.*¹⁸
 *Mean while the adversary of God and man, 545
 Satan with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,
 Puts on swift wings, and towards the gates of hell
 Explores his solitary flight; sometimes
 He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left,

¹⁸There is no asterisk to mark where this highlighted quote was to begin.

Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars 550
 Up to the fiery concave tarring high.
 At last appear hell bounds high to the roof,
 And thrice threefold the gates; three folds were brass,
 Three iron, three of adamantin rock,
 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire, 555
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat
 On either side a formidable shape;
 The one seem'd woman to the waste, and fair,
 But ended foul in many a scaly fold
 Voluminous and vast, a serpent arm'd 560
 With mortal sting: about her middle round
 A crew of hell hounds never ceasing rung
 A hideous peal; yet, when they list, would creep,
 If ought disturb'd their noise, into her womb,
 Yet there still bark'd and howl'd. The other shape, 565
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none
 Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb,
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 For each seem'd either; black it stood as night,
 And shook a dreadful dart: what seem'd his head 570
 The likeness of a kingly crown had on.
 Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 The monster moving onward came as fast
 With horrid strides, hell trembled as he strode.*
 Th' undaunted fiend what this might be admir'd, 575
 Admir'd, not fear'd; God and his Son except,
 Created thing nought valued he nor shunn'd;
 And with disdainful look thus first began.
 Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance 580
 Thy miscreated front athwart my way

To yonder gates? Through them I mean to pass,
 That be assur'd, without leave ask'd of thee:
 Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,
 Hell-born, not to contend with spirits of heaven. 585
 To whom the goblin full of wrath reply'd.
 Art thou that traitor angel, art thou he,
 Who first broke peace in heav'n and faith, till then
 Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms
 Drew after him the third part of heav'n's sons 590
 Conjur'd against the Hig'hest, for which both thou
 And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd
 To waste eternal days in woe and pain?
 And reckon'st thou thyself with spirits of heaven,
 Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn, 595
 Where I reign king, and to enrage thee more,
 Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,
 False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,
 Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue
 Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this dart 600
 Strange horror seise thee', and pangs unfelt before.
 *So spake the grisly terror, and in shape,
 So speaking and so threatning, grew tenfold
 More dreadful and deform: on th' other side
 Incens'd with indignation Satan stood 605
 Unterrify'd. Mean time each at the head
 Level'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands
 No second stroke intend, and such a frown
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds,
 With heav'n's artillery fraught, come rattling on; 610
 Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow
 To join their dark encounter in mid air:
 So frown'd the mighty combatants, that hell

Grew darker at their frown, so match'd they stood;
 For never but once more was either like 615
 To meet so great a foe:* and now great deeds
 Had been atchiev'd, whereof all hell had rung,
 Had not the snaky sorceress that sat
 Fast by hell gates, and kept the fatal key,
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between. 620
 O father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,
 Against thy only son? What fury', O son,
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart
 Against thy father's head? And know'st for whom;
 For him who sits above and laughs the while 62[5]
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute
 Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids;
 His wrath, which one day will destroy you both.
 She spake, and at her words the hellish pest
 Forbore; then these to her Satan return'd. 630
 So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand
 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends; till first I know of thee,
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why 635
 In this infernal vale first met thou call'st
 Me father, and that phantasm¹⁹ call'st my son;
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
 Sight more detestable than him and thee.
 T' whom thus the portress of hell gate reply'd. 640
 Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem
 Now in thine eye so foul? Once deem'd so fair
 In heav'n, when at th' assembly, and in sight
 Of all the seraphim with thee combin'd
 In bold conspiracy against heav'n's King, 645

¹⁹Orig., "phatasm"; a misprint.

All on a sudden miserable pain
 Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum
 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast
 Threw forth, till on the left side opening wide,
 Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright, 650
 Then shining heav'nly fair, a goddess arm'd
 Out of thy head I sprung: amazement seis'd
 All th' host of heav'n; back they recoil'd afraid
 At first, and call'd me Sin, and for a sign
 Portentous held me; but familiar grown, 655
 I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won
 The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft
 Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing
 Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st
 With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd 660
 A growing burden. Mean while war arose,
 And fields were fought in heav'n; wherein remain'd
 (For what could else?) to our almighty Foe
 Clear victory, to our part loss and rout
 Through all the empyrean: down they fell 665
 Into this deep, and in the general fall
 I also; at which time this pow'rful key
 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass
 Without my opening. Pensive here I sat 670
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown
 Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way 675
 Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew

Transform'd: but he my inbred enemy
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart
 Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out Death; 680
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd
 From all her caves, and back resounded Death.
 I fled, but he pursued, (though more, it seems,
 Inflam'd with lust than rage) and swifter far,
 Me overtook his mother all dismay'd, 685
 And in embraces forcible and foul
 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry
 Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceiv'd
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite 690
 To me; for when they list, into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw
 My bowels, their repast; then bursting forth
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find. 695
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim Death my son and foe, who sets them on,
 And me his parent would full soon devour
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involv'd; so fate pronounc'd. 700
 But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun
 His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,
 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist. 705
 She finish'd, and the subtle fiend his lore
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.
 Dear daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,
 And my fair son here shew'st me, the dear pledge

Of dalliance had with thee in heaven, know 710
 I come no enemy, but to set free
 From out this dark and dismal house of pain
 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly host
 Of spirits, that in our just pretences arm'd
 Fell with us from on high: from them I go 715
 This uncouth errand sole, and one for all
 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread
 Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 To search with wand'ring quest a place foretold
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now 720
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss
 In the purlieu of heav'n, and therein plac'd
 A race of upstart creatures, to supply
 Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,
 Lest heav'n surcharg'd with potent multitude 725
 Might hap to move new broils: be this or ought
 Than this more secret now design'd, I haste
 To know, and this once known, shall soon return,
 And bring you to the place where thou and Death
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen 730
 Wing silently the buxom air, imbalm'd
 With odors; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.
 He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death
 Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 735
 His famine should be fill'd: no less rejoic'd
 His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire.
 The key of this infernal pit by due,
 And by command of heav'n's all pow'rful King
 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock 740

These adamantine gates; against all force
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,
 Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.
 But what owe I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down 745
 To sit in hateful office here confin'd,
 Inhabitant of heav'n, and heav'nly-born.
 Thou art my father, thou my author, thou
 My being gav'st me; whom should I obey
 But thee, whom follow? Thou wilt bring me soon 750
 To that new world of light and bliss, among
 The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems
 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.
 Thus saying, from her side the fatal key, 755
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;
 And tow'ards the gate rolling bestial train,
 Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,
 Which but herself, not all the Stygian powers
 Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns 760
 Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and bar
 *Of massy ir'on or solid rock with ease
 Unfastens; on a sudden open fly
 With impetuous recoil and jarring sound
 Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate 765
 Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut
 Excell'd her pow'r; the gates wide open'd stood,
 That with extended wings a banner'd host
 Under spread ensigns marching might pass through 770
 With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array;
 So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth

Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.
 Before their eyes in sudden view appear
 The secrets of the hoary deep, a dark 775
 Illimitable ocean, without bound,
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, and height
 And time, and place are lost; where eldest Night
 And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold
 Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise 780
 Of endless wars. Into this wild abyss,
 The womb of Nature and perhaps her grave,
 Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight, 785
 Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain
 His dark material to create more worlds;
 Into this wild abyss the wary fiend
 Stood on the brink of hell and look'd a while,
 Pond'ring his voyage; for no narrow frith 790
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd
 With noises ruinous than if this frame
 Of heav'n were falling, and these elements
 In mutiny had from her axle torn
 The stedfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans 795²⁰
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke
 Uplifted spurns the ground; thence many a league,
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides
 Audacious; but that seat soon failing, meets
 A vast vacuity: all unawares 800
 Fluttering his pennons vain plumb down he drops
 Ten thousand fathom deep,* and to this hour
 Down had been falling, had not the rebuff,
 Of some tumultuous cloud hurried him back

²⁰Orig., "595"; a misprint. This line number was originally on line 796, but has been moved to the correct line in order to correspond to numbers given in the notes at the end of Book II.

As many miles aloft: that fury stay'd, 805
 Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea,
 Nor good dry land; nigh founder'd on he fares,
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 Half fly'ing; behoves him now both oar and sail.
 At length a universal hubbub wild 810
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd,
 Born through the hollow dark, assaults his ear
 With loudest vehemence: thither he plies,
 Undaunted to meet there whatever power
 Or spirit of the nethermost abyss 815
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies
 *Bord'ring on light; when strait behold the throne
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread
 Wide on the wasteful deep; with him entron'd 820
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,
 The consort of his reign; and by them Chance
 And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.*
 T' whom Satan turning boldly, thus. Ye powers
 And spirits of this nethermost abyss, 825
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy
 With purpose to explore or to disturb
 The secrets of your realm, but by constraint
 Wand'ring this darksom desert, as my way
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light. 830
 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek
 What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds
 Confine with heav'n; or if some other place,
 From your dominion won, th' Ethereal King
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive 835

I travel this profound; direct my course;
 Directed no mean recompense it brings
 To your behoof, if I that region lost,
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce
 To her original darkness and your sway 840
 (Which is my present journey) and once more
 Erect the standard there of antient Night;
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.
 Thus Satan: and him thus the anarch old,
 With faltring speech and visage incompos'd, 845
 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,
 That mighty leading angel, who of late
 Made head against heav'n's King, though overthrown.
 I saw and heard, for such a numerous host
 Fled not in silence through the frighted deep 850
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,
 Confusion worse confounded; and heav'n gates
 Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands
 Pursuing. I upon frontiers here
 Keep residence; if all I can will serve 855
 That little which is left so to defend,
 Encroach'd on still through your intestin broils
 Weakning the scepter of old Night: first hell
 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath;
 Now lately heav'n and earth, another world, 860
 Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain
 To that side heav'n from whence your legions fell:
 If that way be your walk, you have not far;
 So much the nearer danger; go and speed;
 Havoc and spoil and ruin are my gain. 865
 He ceas'd; and Satan stay'd not to reply,
 But glad that now his sea should find a shore,
 With fresh alacrity and force renew'd

Springs upward like a pyramid of fire
 Into the wild expanse, and through the shock 870
 Of fighting elements, on all sides round
 Environ'd wins his way; with labor he;
 But he once past, soon after when man fell,
 Strange alteration! Sin and Death amain
 Following his track, such was the will of heaven, 875
 Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way.
 *But now at last the sacred influence
 Of light appears, and from the walls of heaven
 Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night
 A glimmering dawn; here Nature first begins 880
 Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire
 As from her outmost works a broken foe
 With tumult less and with less hostile din,
 That Satan with less toil, and now with ease
 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light, 885
 Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,
 Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold
 Far off th' empyreal heav'n, extended wide,
 With opal tow'rs and battlements adorn'd 890
 Of living saphir, once his native seat;
 And fast by hanging in a golden chain
 This pendent world, in bigness as a star
 Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.*
 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge, 895
 Accurs'd,²¹ and in a cursed hour he hies.

²¹Orig., "Accus'd"; a misprint.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK II.

- Ver. 42. "Recked not"—Cared not.
"Thereafter"—Accordingly.
- Ver. 50. "Opprobrious"—Reproachful.
- Ver. 61. "Tartarean"—Hellish.
- Ver. 105. "In fact of arms"—In battle.
- Ver. 137. "Impotence"—Impotent, ungoverned passion.
- Ver. 187.²² "Satisfied with what is punished"—With the punishment already inflicted.
- Ver. 252. "The sensible"—The sensibility.
- Ver. 280. Mount Atlas is always covered with clouds. Hence the fable of Atlas bearing the skies on his shoulders.
- Ver. 283. In many countries it is generally calm about "noon," especially in "summer."
- Ver. 316. "The gods"—The holy angels.
- Ver. 322. "Arbitrator"—Governor.
- Ver. 349. "Synod"—Assembly.
- Ver. 355. "Zone"—Region, climate.
- Ver. 357. "Orient"—Rising.
- Ver. 359. "Corrosive"—Gnawing, eating into the substance.

²²Orig., "188"; a misprint.

- Ver. 364. “The palpable obscure”—Darkness that may be felt.
- Ver. 368. “The happy isle”—The earth, floating in the ether, as islands do in the sea.
- Ver. 373. “Suffrage”—Vote.
- Ver. 387. “Unmoved”—With the dangers that affrighted others.
- Ver. 388. “Progeny”—Offspring.
- Ver. 392. “Convex”—The vault bending round us.
- Ver. 393. “Immures us”—Walls us in.
- Ver. 395. “Egress”—Going out.
- Ver. 397. “Unessential”—Uncreated, void of being.
- Ver. 399. “Abortive”—An *abortion* is properly a miscarriage. The word therefore is strongly figurative. Nor is it easy to give it a determinate meaning.
- Ver. 415. “Intend”—Consider, think of, mind.
- Ver. 461.²³ “Stygian”—Hellish. “Dissolved”—Broke up.
- Ver. 463.²⁴ “Paramount”—Sovereign.
- Ver. 467. “A globe”—A battalion in circle surrounding him. “Imblazonry”—Shields, imblazoned, or painted with their achievements [Ver. 468]. “Horrent”—Set up like the bristles of an enraged wild boar [Ver. 468].
- Ver. 482. “Typhoean rage”—Like that of Typhoeus, one of the giants whom the heathens supposed to have warred against heaven. Doubtless that tradition rose from the fall of the angels.
- Ver. 499. “And found no end”—There is no end of *reasoning* concerning these things. Happy therefore are they, who simply keep to the bible.
- Ver. 514. “Styx, Acheron,” etc.—These were, according to

²³Orig., “463”; a misprint.

²⁴Orig., “464”; a misprint.

- the heathen poets, the four rivers of hell.
- Ver. 518. “Torrent”—Scorching.
- Ver. 523. “Burns froze”—*Frore* is an old word for frosty.
- Ver. 524. “Harpy-footed”—With sharp claws, like the fabled *harpies*, whom the heathen poets described as having eagles’ talons. “Furies”—Devils assuming the most dreadful shapes.
- Ver. 536. “Dolorous”—Sad.
- Ver. 537. “Alp”—Mountain, high as the Alps.
- Ver. 548. “Explores”—Tries, searches out.
- Ver. 555. “Impaled”—Surrounded.
- Ver. 591. “Conjured”—Banded together.
- Ver. 637. “Phantasm”—Appearance.
- Ver. 651.²⁵ “A goddess arm’d out of thy head I sprung”—As the heathen poets supposed Minerva, the goddess of wisdom, to have done out of the head of Jupiter. Probably from some imperfect tradition, concerning the Son of God.
- Ver. 688. “These yelling monsters”—Was there ever so fine a description of pangs of conscience.
- Ver. 706. “Lore”—Lesson.
- Ver. 716. “Sole”—Alone. “Unfounded”—Wherein there is [no] foundation,²⁶ nothing to tread upon [Ver. 718].
- Ver. 719. “Quest”—Enquiry. “Purlieus”—Confines, borders [Ver. 722].
- Ver. 731. “Buxom”—Properly yielding; from a Saxon word which signifies to *bend*.
- Ver. 767. “Erebus”—Hell.
- Ver. 773. “Redounding”—Spreading every way in curling waves.

²⁵Orig., “652”; a misprint.

²⁶Orig., “is foundation”; a misprint.

- Ver. 775. “Hoary”—That is, old. “Secrets”—Never seen before by any creature.
- Ver. 776. “Illimitable”—Unbounded.
- Ver. 777. “Without dimension”—So empty space must needs be.
- Ver. 779. “Ancestors of Nature”—The antient poets describe *Night* or *Darkness*, and *Chaos* or *Confusion*, as the first of things, and exercising uncontrolled dominion from the beginning. In how masterly a manner does Milton paint this? *Anarchy* is just the reverse of regular government.
- Ver. 784.²⁷ “Pregnant”—Big with future effects.
- Ver. 790. A “frith” is an arm of the sea.
- Ver. 792.²⁸ “Noises, ruinous”—Of things rushing to and fro.
- Ver. 794. “Her axle”—The earth moves round every 24 hours, as a wheel on its axle-tree.
- Ver. 795. “Vans”—Wings. “Surging”—Rising [Ver. 796].
- Ver. 806. A “syrts” is a quick-sand.
- Ver. 808. “The crude consistence”—The undigested mass.
- Ver. 833. “Confine with heaven”—Border upon it.
- Ver. 838. “Behoof”—Advantage.
- Ver. 844. “Anarch”—Author of Disorder and Confusion. Just opposite to monarch.
- Ver. 853. “Pour’d out by millions”—So it might seem to him, while “Confusion” was “worse confounded.” But it was the Messiah alone who did all.
- Ver. 857. “Your intestine broils”—In heaven, which gave occasion to the creation of hell and earth.
- Ver. 890. “Opal tow’rs”—Towers of precious stones. An opal is a precious stone of various colours.

²⁷Orig., “780”; a misprint.

²⁸Orig., “692”; a misprint.

Ver. 893. “This pendant world”—Not the earth, but the whole universe. And even this, at so vast a distance, appeared as one of the smallest stars. He does not see the earth, till some time after.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK III.

The Argument.

God sitting on his throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created man free and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc'd. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards man; but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards man without the satisfaction of divine justice; man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for man: the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in heaven and earth; commands all the angels to adore him; they obey, and hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wand'ring he first finds a place, since called, the limbo of vanity; what person and things

fly up thither; thence comes to the gate of heaven, describ'd ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it: his passage thence to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uriel the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates.

*Hail holy Light, offspring of heav'n first-born,
 Or of th' eternal coeternal beam!
 May I express thee unblam'd? Since God is light,
 And never but in unapproach'd light
 Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee, 5
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
 Or hear'st thou rather pure ethereal stream,
 Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,
 Before the heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice
 Of God, as with a mantle didst invest 10
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,
 Won from the void and formless infinite.
 Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
 And feel thy sovereign vital lamp; but thou
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain 15
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
 So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,
 Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more
 Cease I to wander, where the muses haunt
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill 20
 Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief
 Thee, Sion, and the flowry brooks beneath,
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,

Nightly I visit: as the wakeful bird
 Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid 25
 Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year
 Seasons return, but not to me returns
 Day, or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
 Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine; 30
 But clouds instead, and ever-during dark
 Surrounds me, from the chearful ways of men
 Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
 Presented with a universal blank
 Of nature's work to me expung'd and ras'd, 35
 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.
 So much the rather thou, celestial light,
 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
 Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell 40
 Of things invisible to mortal sight.*
 Now had th' Almighty Father from above,
 From the pure empyrean where he sits
 High thron'd above all height, bent down his eye,
 His own works and their works at once to view: 45
 About him all the sanctities of heaven
 Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd
 Beatitude past utterance; on his right
 The radiant image of his glory sat,
 His only Son; on earth he first beheld 50
 Our two first parents, yet the only two
 Of mankind, in that happy garden plac'd,
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
 Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love
 In blissful solitude; he then survey'd 55
 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there

Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night
 In the dun air sublime, and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd 60
 Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake. 65

Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage
 Transports our adversary? Whom no bounds
 Prescrib'd, no bars of hell, nor all the chains
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss 70
 Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now
 Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way
 Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,
 Directly tow'ards the new created world, 75
 And man there plac'd, with purpose to assay
 If him by force he can destroy, or worse,
 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert,
 For man will hearken to his glozing lies,
 And easily transgress the sole command, 80
 Sole pledge of his obedience: so will fall,
 He and his faithless progeny: whose fault?
 *Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
 All he could have: I made him just and right,
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall. 85
 Such I created all th' ethereal powers
 And spi'rits, both them who stood and them who fail'd:

Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.
 Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere
 Of true allegiance, constant faith or love, 90
 Where only what they needs must do appear'd,
 Not what they would? What praise could they receive?
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
 When will and reason (reason also is choice)
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd, 95
 Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,
 Not me? They therefore as to right belong'd,
 So were created, nor can justly' accuse
 Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,
 As if predestination over-rul'd 100
 Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree
 Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed
 Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknow,
 Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown. 105
 So without least impulse or shadow' of fate,
 Or ought by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, authors to themselves in all
 Both what they judge and what they choose; for so
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain, 110
 Till they inthrall themselves; I else must change
 Their nature, and revoke the high decree
 Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom, they themselves ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell, 115
 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: man falls, deceiv'd
 By th' other first: man therefore shall find grace,
 The other none: in mercy' and justice both,
 Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel,

But mercy first and last shall brightest shine.* 120
 Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
 All heav'n, and in the blessed spirits elect
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd:
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious; in him all his Father shone 125
 Substantially express'd; and in his face
 Divine compassion visibly²⁹ appear'd
 Love without end, and without measure grace,
 Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.
 O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd 130
 Thy sovereign sentence, that man should find grace;
 For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound
 Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
 Incompass'd shall resound thee ever blest. 135
 For should man finally be lost, should man,
 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
 With his own folly? That be from thee far,
 That far be from thee, Father, who art judge 140
 Of all things made, and judgest only right.
 Or shall the adversary thus obtain
 His end, and frustrate thine? Shall he fulfil
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,
 Or proud return, though to his heavier doom, 145
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to hell
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,
 By him corrupted? Or wilt thou thyself
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made? 150
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both

²⁹Orig., "visible"; a misprint.

Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.
 To whom the great Creator thus reply'd.
 O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone 155
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,
 All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all
 As my eternal purpose hath decreed:
 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,
 *Yet not of will in him, but grace in me 160
 Freely vouchsaf'd; once more I will renew
 His lapsed pow'rs, forfeit and inthrall'd
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires;
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
 On even ground against his mortal foe, 165
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail
 His fall'n condition is, and to me owe
 All his deliverance, and to none but me,
 For all shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes 170
 Th' incensed Deity, while offer'd grace
 Invites; for I will soften stony hearts
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.
 To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,
 Though but endeavor'd with sincere intent, 175
 Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
 And I will place within them as a guide
 My umpire conscience, whom if they will hear,
 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive. 180
 This my long sufferance and my day of grace
 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;
 But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more,

And none but such from mercy I exclude* 185
 But yet all is not done; man disobeying,
 Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins
 Against the high supremacy of heaven,
 Affecting god-head; and so losing all,
 To expiate his treason hath nought left, 190
 But to destruction sacred and devote,
 He with his whole posterity must die,
 Die he or justice must; unless for him
 Some other able, and as willing, pay
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death. 195
 Say, heav'nly pow'rs where shall we find such love?
 Which of you will be mortal to redeem
 Man's mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save?
 Dwells in all heaven charity so dear?
 He ask'd, but all the heav'nly quire stood mute, 200
 And silence was in heav'n: on man's behalf
 Patron or intercessor none appear'd,
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
 And now without redemption all mankind 205
 Must have been lost, had not the Son of God,
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,
 His dearest mediation thus renew'd.
 *Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace;
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way 210
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all
 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought?
 Happy for man, so coming; he her aid
 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost; 215

Atonement for himself or offering meet,
 Indebted and undone, hath none to bring:
 Behold me then; me for him, life for life
 I offer; on me let thine anger fall;
 Account me man; I for his sake will leave 220
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die
 Well pleas'd; on me let Death wreck all his rage;
 Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long
 Lie vanquish'd: thou hast giv'n me to possess 225
 Life in myself for ev'r; by thee I live,
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due
 All that of me can die; yet that debt paid,
 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsom grave
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul 230
 For ever with corruption there to dwell;
 But I shall rise victorious, and subdue
 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil;*
 I through the ample air in triumph high
 Shall lead hell captive mauger hell, and show 235³⁰
 The pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
 Pleas'd, out of heaven shalt look down and smile,
 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my foes,
 Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave:
 Then with the multitude of my redeem'd 240
 Shall enter heav'n long absent, and return,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd
 And reconcilement; wrath shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire. 245
 His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love

³⁰This line number was originally on line 236, but has been moved to the correct line in order to correspond to numbers given in the notes at the end of Book III.

To mortal men, above which only shone
 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 250
 Of his great Father. Admiration seis'd
 All heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend
 Wond'ring; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd.
 O thou in heav'n and earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou 255
 My sole complacence! Well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works, nor man the least,
 Though last created; that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost. 260
 *Thou therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,
 Their nature also to thy nature join;
 And be thyself man among men on earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth: be thou in Adam's room 265
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his sons; thy merit 270
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for man, be judg'd and die, 275
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.*
 Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own. 280
 Because thou hast, though thron'd in highest bliss

Equal to God, and equally enjoying
 God like fruition, quitted all to save
 A world from utter loss, because in thee
 Love hath abounded more than glory abounds, 285
 Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt
 With thee thy manhood also to this throne;
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign
 Both God and man, Son both of God and man.
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide 290
 In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell.
 When thou attended gloriously from heaven
 Shalt in the sky appear. Then thou shalt judge
 Bad men and angels; they arraign'd shall sink
 Beneath thy sentence; hell, her numbers full, 295
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring
 New heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell,
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.
 Then thou thy regal scepter shalt lay by, 300
 For regal scepter then no more shall need,
 God shall be all in all. But all ye gods,
 Adore him, who to compass all this dies;
 Adore the Son, and honor him as me.
 No sooner had th' Almighty ceas'd, but all 305
 The multitude of angels, gave a shout
 Loud as from numbers, without number, sweet
 As from blest voices, uttering joy, heav'n rung
 With jubilee, and loud hosanna's fill'd
 Th' eternal regions: lowly reverent 310
 Tow'ards either throne they bow, and to the ground
 With solemn adoration down they cast
 Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold;

Immortal amarant, a flow'r which once
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life, 315
 Began to bloom; but soon for man's offence
 To heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grows,
 And flow'rs aloft shading the fount of life.
 With this that never fades the spi'rits elect
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams, 320
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,
 Impurpled with celestial roses smil'd.
 Then crown'd again, their golden harps they took,
 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side [325]
 Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet
 Of charming symphony introduce
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high;
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join
 Melodious part, such concord is in heaven. 330

*Thee Father, first they sung omnipotent,
 Immutable, immortal, infinite,
 Eternal King; thee Author of all being,
 Fountain of Light, thyself invisible
 (Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sitst [335]
 Thron'd inaccessible) but when thou shad'st
 The full blaze of thy beams; then through a cloud
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,
 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,
 Yet dazle heav'n, that brightest seraphim 340
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
 Thee next they sang of all creation first,
 Begotten Son, divine similitude,
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud
 Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines, 345

Whom else, no creature can behold; on thee
 Impress'd th' effulgence of his glory' abides,
 Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.
 He heav'n of heav'ns and all the pow'rs therein
 By thee created, and by thee threw down 350
 Th' aspiring dominations: thou that day
 Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,
 Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook
 Heav'n's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks
 Thou drov'st of warring angels disarray'd. 355
 Back from pursuit thy pow'rs with loud acclaim
 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
 Not so on man; him through their malice fallen,
 Father of mercy' and grace, thou didst not doom 360
 So strictly; but much more to pity inclin'd:
 No sooner did thy dear and only Son
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail man
 So strictly, but much more to pity' incline,
 He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife 365
 Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,
 Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat
 Second to thee, offer'd himself to die
 For man's offence. O unexampled love
 Love no where to be found less than divine! 370
 Hail, Son of God, Saviour of men, thy name
 Shall be the copious matter of my song
 Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.*
 Thus they in heav'n, above the starry sphere, 375
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.
 Mean while upon the firm opacous globe

Of this round world, whose first convex divides
 The luminous inferior orbs inclos'd
 From Chaos and th' inroad of Darkness old, 380
 Satan alighted walks: a globe far off
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
 Starless expos'd, and ever-threatning storms
 Of Chaos blust'ring round, inclement sky; 385
 Save on that side which from the wall of heaven,
 Though distant far, some small reflection gains
 Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud:
 Here walk'd the fiend at large in spacious field.
 And long he wander'd till at last a gleam 390
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste
 His travel'd steps: far distant he descries
 Ascending by degrees magnificent
 Up to the wall of heav'n a structure high;
 At top whereof, but far more rich appear'd 395
 The work as of a kingly palace gate,
 With frontispiece of diamond and gold
 Embellish'd; thick with sparkling orient gems
 The portal shone, inimitable on earth
 By model, or by shading pencil drawn. 400
 The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw
 Angels ascending and descending, bands
 Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled.
 Satan from hence, now on the lower stair
 That scal'd by steps of gold to heaven gate, 405
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
 Of all this world but much more envy seis'd,
 At sight of all this world, he held so fair.
 Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood

So high above the circling canopy 410
 Of night's extended shade) from pole to pole:
 And without longer pause into the world's
 First region throws his flight and winds with ease
 Through the pure marble air his oblique way
 Amongst innumerable stars, that shone, 415
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds;
 Or other worlds they seem'd or happy isles,
 Fortunate fields, and groves. Above them all
 The golden sun in splendor likest heaven
 Allur'd his eye; thither his course he bends 420
 Through the calm sky, where the great luminary
 Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,
 Dispenses light from far; they as they move
 Their starry dance in numbers that compute 425
 Days, months and years, tow'ards his all-cheering lamp
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd
 By his magnetic beam, that gently warms
 The universe, and to each inward part
 With gentle penetration, though unseen, 430
 Shoots invisible virtue to the deep;
 So wondrously was set his station bright.
 There lands the fiend, the place he found beyond
 Expression bright, compar'd with ought on earth, 435
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd
 With radiant light, as glowing ir'on with fire;
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear;
 If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite.
 Here matter new to gaze the devil met
 Undazled; far and wide his eye commands; 440

For sight no obstacle found here, and th' air,
 No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within ken a glorious angel stand,
 The same whom John saw also in the sun: 445
 *His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid!
 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar
 Circled his head, nor less his locks behind
 Illustrious on his shoulders fledge with wings
 Lay waving round; on some great charge employ'd 450
 He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.*
 Glad was the spi'rit impure, as now in hope
 To find who might direct his wand'ring flight
 To Paradise the happy seat of man.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape, 455
 Which else might work him danger or delay:
 And now a stripling cherub he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smil'd celestial, and to ev'ry limb
 Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd: 460
 Under a coronet his flowing hair
 In curls on either cheek play'd; wings he wore
 Of many a colour'd plume sprinkled with gold,
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
 Before his decent steps a silver wand. 465
 He drew not nigh unheard; the angel bright,
 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,
 Admonish'd by his ear, and strait was known
 Th' arch-angel Uriel, one of the seven
 Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne, 470
 Stand ready at command, and are his eyes
 That run through all the heav'ns, or down to th' earth

Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
 O'er sea and land: him Satan thus accosts.
 Uriel, for thou of those sev'n spi'rits that stand 475
 In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,
 The first art wont his great authentic will
 Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,
 Where all his sons thy embassy attend;
 And here art likeliest by supreme decree 480
 Like honour to obtain, and as his eye
 To visit oft' this new creation round;
 Unspeakable desire to see, and know
 All these his wond'rous works, but chiefly man,
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom 485
 All these his works so wond'rous he ordain'd,
 Hath brought me from the choirs of cherubim
 Alone thus wand'ring. Brightest seraph, tell
 In which of all these shining orbs hath man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none, 490
 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell;
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze
 Or open admiration him behold,
 On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd; 495
 That both in him and all things, as is meet,
 The universal Maker we may praise;
 Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes
 To deepest hell, and to repair that loss
 Created this new happy race of men 500
 To serve him better: wise are all his ways.
 *So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd;
 For neither man nor angel can discern
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks

Invisible, except to God alone, 505
 By his permissive will, through heav'n and earth:
 And oft' though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
 At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems:* which now for once beguil'd 510
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held
 The sharpest-sighted spi'rit of all in heav'n;
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul
 In his uprightness answer thus return'd.
 *Fair angel, thy desire which tends to know 515
 The works of God, thereby to glorify
 The great Work-Master, leads to no excess
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone, 520
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps
 Contented with report hear only' in heav'n:
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
 Had in remembrance always with delight; 525
 But what created mind can comprehend
 Their number, or the wisdom infinite
 That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep?
 I saw when at his word the formless mass,
 This world's material mould, came to a heap: 530
 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar
 Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;
 Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,
 Light shone, and order from disorder sprung:
 Swift to their sev'ral quarters hasted then 535
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire:

And this ethereal quintessence of heav'n
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
 That roll'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move; 540
 Each had his place appointed, each his course;
 The rest in circuit walls this universe.
 Look downward on that globe, whose hither side
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines;
 That place is earth the seat of man, that light 545
 His day, which else as th' other hemisphere
 Night would invade; but there the neighb'ring moon
 (So call that opposite fair star) her aid
 Timely' interposes, and her monthly round
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid-heav'n, 550
 With borrow'd light her countenance triform
 Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' earth,
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.
 That spot to which I point is Paradise,
 *Adams abode, those lofty shades his bow'r, 555
 Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.*
 Thus said he turn'd; and Satan, bowing low,
 As to superior spi'rits is wont in heav'n,
 Where honour due and rev'rence none neglects,
 Took leave, and tow'ard the coast of earth beneath, 560
 Throws his steep flight in many' an aery wheel,
 Nor stay'd, till on Niphates' top he lights.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK III.

- Ver. 17. "A drop serene"—Either a *gutta serena*, or *suffusion*, is a species of blindness which is generally incurable.
- Ver. 39. "Irradiate"—Shine into, enlighten.
- Ver. 46. "The sanctities"—The holy angels.
- Ver. 79. "Glozing"—Flattering.
- Ver. 121. "Ambrosial"—Pleasing, delightful. The ancient poets term'd the food of the gods *ambrosia*.
- Ver. 178. "My umpire"—To arbitrate between them and me.
- Ver. 187. "Fealty" is the faith a subject owes to his prince.
- Ver. 235. "Maugre hell"—In spite of hell.
- Ver. 322. The best "jaspers" are of a sea-green colour.
"Amarants" are *purple* [Ver. 313–14].
- Ver. 356. They "extolled thee," turning "back."
- Ver. 377. "Opacous"—Not transparent.
- Ver. 392. "Travell'd"—Tired.
- Ver. 398. "Sparkling orient gems"—Sparkling like the morning.
- Ver. 405. "Scaled"—Went up.
- Ver. 411. "From pole to pole"—From the north to the southernmost point.
- Ver. 414. "Marble air"—Smooth and white as polish'd marble.

- Ver. 422. “Aloof”—At a distance from.
Ver. 438. “Chrysolyte”—A stone of a bright gold colour.
Ver. 442. “His visual ray”—His light.
Ver. 447.³¹ A “tiara” is a kind of coronet.
Ver. 451. “Cogitation”—Thought.
Ver. 464. “Succinct”—Tucked up, girt round him.
Ver. 538. “Spirited with various forms, that roll’d
orbicular”—Those forms are supposed to be that to
the stars, which our spirit is to us. They “roll
orbicular,” that is, move circularly.
Ver. 542. “The rest”—Of the ether.
Ver. 546.³² “Hemisphere”—Half of the sphere, or globe.
Ver. 551. “Triform”—Of three forms: increasing, at full, and
decreasing.

³¹Orig., “448”; a misprint.

³²Orig., “548”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IV.

The Argument.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described; overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a sun-beam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good angel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should

be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel: by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hindered by a sign from heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O for that warning voice, which he who saw
 Th' apocalypse heard cry in heav'n aloud,
 Then when the dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men.
Woe to th' inhabitants on earth! That now, 5
 While time is, our first parents may be warn'd
 The coming of their secret foe! For now
 Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,
 The tempter ere th' accuser of mankind,
 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss 10
 Of that first battle, and his flight to hell:
 Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,
 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth
 Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,
 And like a devilish engine back recoils 15
 Upon himself: horror and doubt distract
 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
 The hell within him; for within him hell
 He brings, and round about him; nor from hell
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly 20
 By change of place: now conscience wakes despair,
 That slumber'd, wakes the bitter memory
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be,
 Worse; of worse deeds worse suff'rings must ensue.
 Sometimes tow'ards Eden, which now in his view 25
 Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad;
 Sometimes tow'ards heav'n and the full-blazing sun,

Which now sat high in his meridian tow'r:
 Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

*O thou that with surpassing glory crown'd 30
 Look'st from thy sole dominion like the God
 Of this new world; at whose sight all the stars
 Hide their diminish'd heads; to thee I call,
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
 O sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams, 35
 That bring to my remembrance from what state
 I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere;
 Till pride and worse ambition threw me down
 Warring in heav'n against heav'n's matchless King:
 Ah wherefore! He deserv'd no such return 40
 From me, whom he created what I was
 In that bright eminence, and with his good
 Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.
 What could be less than to afford him praise,
 The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks, 45
 How due! Yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
 And wrought but malice; lifted up so high
 I 'sdain'd subjection, and thought one step higher
 Wou'd set me highest, and in a moment quit
 The debt immense of endless gratitude, 50
 So burdensome still paying, still to owe:
 Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,
 And understood not that a grateful mind
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
 Indebted and discharg'd; what burden then? 55
 O had his pow'rful destiny ordain'd
 Me some inferior angel, I had stood
 Then happy; no unbounded hope had rais'd
 Ambition. Yet why not? Some other pow'r
 As great might have aspir'd, and me, though mean, 60

Drawn to his part; but other pow'rs as great
 Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.
 Hadst thou the same free will and pow'r to stand?
 Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to' accuse, 65
 But heav'n's free love dealt equally to all?
 Be then his love accurs'd, since love or hate,
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.
 Nay curs'd be thou; since against his thy will
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues. 70
 Me miserable! Which way shall I fly
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?
 Which way I fly is hell; myself am hell;
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
 Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide, 75
 To which the hell I suffer seems a heav'n.
 O then at last relent: is there no place
 Left for repentance, none for pardon left?
 None left but by submission; and that word
 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame 80
 Among the spi'rits beneath, whom I seduc'd
 With other promises and other vaunts
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue
 Th' Omnipotent. Ah me, they little know
 How dearly I abide that boast so vain, 85
 Under what torments inwardly I groan,
 While they adore me on the throne of hell.
 With diadem and scepter high advanc'd,
 The lower still I fall, only supreme
 In misery; such joy ambition finds. 90
 But say I could repent, and could obtain
 By act of grace my former state; how soon
 Would height recal high thoughts, how soon unsay

What feign'd submission swore? Ease would recant
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void. 95
 For never can true reconciliation grow,
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep:
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse
 And heavier fall: so should I purchase dear
 Short intermission bought with double smart. 100
 This knows my punisher; therefore as far
 From granting he, as I from begging peace:
 All hope excluded thus, behold in stead
 Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,
 Mankind created, and for him this world. 105
 So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,
 Farewell remorse: all good to me is lost;
 Evil be thou my good; by thee at least
 Divided empire with heav'n's King I hold,
 By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign; 110
 As man ere long, and this new world shall know.*
 Thus while he spake each passion dimm'd his face,
 Thrice chang'd, with pale, ire, envy, and despair;
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld. 115
 For heav'nly minds from such distempers foul
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm,
 Artificer of fraud; and was the first
 That practis'd falshood under saintly show, 120
 Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge:
 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
 Uriel once warn'd; whose eye pursu'd him down
 The way he went, and on th' Assyrian mount
 Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall 125
 Spirit of happy sort: his gestures fierce

He mark'd, and mad demeanor, then alone,
 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen.
 So on he fares, and to the border comes
 *Of Eden, where delicious Paradise, 130
 Now nearer, crowns with her inclosure green,
 As with a rural mound, the champain head
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,
 Access deny'd; and over head up grew 135
 Insuperable height of loftiest shade,
 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,
 A sylvan scene, and as the ranks ascend
 Shade above shade, a woody theatre
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops 140
 The verd'rous wall of Paradise up sprung:
 Which to our gen'ral sire gave prospect large
 Into his nether empire neighb'ring round.
 And higher than that wall a circling row
 Of goodliest trees loaden with fairest fruit, 145
 Blossoms and fruit at once, of golden hue,
 Appear'd, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd:
 On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams
 Than on fair ev'ning cloud, or humid bow,
 When God hath show'rd the earth; so lovely seem'd 150
 That landskip: and of pure now purer air
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense 155
 Native perfumes. And now to th' ascent
 Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow;[*]
 But further way found none, so thick intwin'd,

As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd 160
 All path of man or beast that pass'd that way:
 One gate there only was, and that look'd east
 On th' other side: which when the arch-felon saw
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt,
 High over leap'd all bound and sheer within 165
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
 Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve
 In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold 170
 Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,
 The middle tree and highest there that grew,
 Sat like a cormorant; yet not true life
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death
 To them who liv'd; nor on the virtue thought 175
 Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd
 For prospect, what well us'd had been the pledge
 Of immortality. So little knows
 Any, but God alone, to value right
 The good before him, but perverts best things 180
 To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.
 *Beneath him with new wonder now he views
 To all delight of human sense expos'd
 In narrow room nature's whole wealth, yea more,
 A heav'n on earth: for blissful Paradise 185
 Of God the garden was, by him in th' east
 Of Eden planted; Eden stretch'd her line
 From Auran eastward to the royal tow'rs
 Of great Seleucia: in this pleasant soil
 His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd; 190
 Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow

All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
 And all amid' them stood the tree of life,
 High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit
 Of vegetable gold; and next to life, 195
 Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,
 Knowledge of good, bought dear by knowing ill.*
 Southward through Eden went a river large,
 Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill
 Pass'd underneath ingulf'd; for God had thrown 200
 That mountain as his garden mould high rais'd
 Upon the rapid current, which through veins
 Of porous earth with kindly thirst up-drawn,
 Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill
 Water'd the garden: thence united fell 205
 Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,
 Which from his darksome passage now appears,
 And now divided into four main streams,
 Runs diverse, wand'ring many a famous realm
 And country, whereof here needs no account; 210
 *But rather to tell how, if art could tell,
 How from that saphire fount the crisped brooks,
 Rolling on orient pearl, and sands of gold,
 With mazy error under pendent shades
 Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 215
 Flow'rs, worthy' of Paradise, which not nice art
 In beds and curious knots, but nature boon
 Pour'd forth profuse, on hill, and dale, and plain,
 Both where the morning sun first warmly smote
 The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade 220
 Imbrown'd the noontide bow'rs: thus was this place
 A happy rural seat of various view;[*]
 Groves whose rich trees wept od'rous gums and balm,
 Others whose fruit burnish'd with golden rind

Hung amiable, and of delicious taste: 225
 Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks,
 Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
 Or palmy hillock; or the flow'ry lap
 Of some irriguous valley spread her store
 Flow'rs of all hues, and without thorn the rose: 230
 Another side, umbrageous grotts and caves
 Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine
 Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps
 Luxuriant; mean while murm'ring waters fall
 Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake, 235
 (That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd
 Her crystal mirror holds) unite their streams.
 The birds their choir apply; airs, vernal airs,
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune
 The trembling leaves, while all the hours in dance 240
 Led on th' eternal spring. *Yet here the fiend
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind
 Of living creatures new to sight, and strange.
 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad 245
 In naked majesty, seem'd lords of all,
 And worthy seem'd; for in their looks divine
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,
 (Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd) 250
 Whence true authority in men; though both
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd;
 For contemplation he and valour form'd,
 For softness she and sweet attractive grace;
 He for God only, she for God in him: 255
 His fair large front and eye sublime declar'd
 Absolute rule; and hyacinthine locks

Round from his parted forelock manly hung
 Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders broad:
 She as a veil down to the slender waste 260
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore
 Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which imply'd
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway.*
 So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight 265
 Of God or angel, for they thought no ill:
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair
 That ever since in love's embraces met;
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born
 His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve. 270
 Under a tuft of shade that on a green
 Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain side
 They sat them down; and after no more toil
 Of their sweet gard'ning labour than suffic'd
 To recommend cool zephyr, and made ease 275
 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite
 More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell,
 Nectarine fruits, which the compliant boughs
 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
 On the soft downy bank damask'd with flow'rs. 280
 About them frisking play'd all beasts of th' earth;
 Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw
 Dandled the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,
 Gambol'd before them; th' unwieldy elephant
 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreath'd 285
 His lithe proboscis; close the serpent sly
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His braided³³ train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass

³³Orig., "breded"; a misprint.

Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat, 290
 Or bedward ruminating; for the sun
 Declin'd was hasting now with prone career
 To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale
 Of heav'n the stars that usher ev'ning rose:
 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood, 295
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.
 *O hell! What do mine eyes with grief behold!
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 300
 Not spirits, yet to heav'nly spirits bright
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them divine resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.
 Ah gentle pair, ye little think how nigh 305
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish, and deliver you to woe,
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;
 Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd
 Long to continue, and this high seat your heav'n 310
 Ill fenc'd for heav'n to keep out such a foe
 As now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,
 Though I unpitied: league with you I seek,
 And mutual amity so streight, so close, 315
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please,
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such
 Accept your Maker's work; he gave it me,
 Which I as freely give; hell shall unfold, 320³⁴
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,
 And send forth all her kings; there will be room,

³⁴Orig., "520"; a misprint.

Not like these narrow limits, to receive
 Your num'rous offspring; if no better place,
 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge 325
 On you, who wrong me not, for him who wrong'd.
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd,
 By conqu'ring this new world, compels me now 330
 To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor.
 So spake the fiend, and with necessity,
 The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.*
 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree
 Down he alights among the sportful herd 335
 Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,
 Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end
 Nearer to view his prey, and unespy'd
 To mark what of their state he more might learn
 By word or action mark'd: about them round 340
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare;
 Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spy'd
 In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,
 Straight couches close, then rising changes oft'
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground, 345
 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both
 Grip'd in each paw: when Adam, first of men,
 To first of women Eve, thus moving speech,
 Turn'd him all ear to hear new utt'rance flow.
 *Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys, 350
 Dearer thyself than all; needs must the pow'r
 That made us, and for us this ample world,
 Be infinitely good, and of his good
 As liberal and free as infinite;

That rais'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here 355
 In all this happiness, who at his hand
 Have nothing merited, nor can perform
 Ought whereof he hath need, he who requires
 From us no other service than to keep
 This one, this easy charge, of all the trees 360
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, not to taste that only tree*
 Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life;
 So near grows death to life, whate'er death is,
 Some dreadful thing, no doubt; for well thou know'st 365
 God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,
 The only sign of our obedience left
 Among so many signs of pow'r and rule
 Conferr'd upon us, and dominion giv'n
 Over all other creatures that possess 370
 Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
 Unlimited of manifold delights:
 But let us ever praise him, and extol 375
 His bounty, following our delightful task,
 To prune these growing plants, and tend these flow'rs,
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.
 *To whom thus Eve reply'd. O thou for whom
 And from whom I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh, 380
 And without whom am to no end, my guide
 And head, what thou hast said is just and right.
 For we to him indeed all praises owe,
 And daily thanks; I chiefly who enjoy
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee 385
 Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou
 Like consort to thyself canst no where find.

That day I oft' remember, when from sleep
 I first awak'd, and found myself repos'd
 Under a shade on flow'rs, much wond'ring where 390
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.
 Not distant far from thence a murm'ring sound
 Of waters issued from a cave, and spread
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd
 Pure as th' expanse of heav'n; I thither went 395
 With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down
 On the green bank, to look into the clear
 Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.
 As I bent down to look, just opposite
 A shape within the wat'ry gleam appear'd, 400
 Bending to look on me: I started back,
 It started back; but pleas'd I soon return'd,
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answ'ring looks
 Of sympathy and love: there I had fix'd
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire, 405
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me, What thou seest,
 What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself;
 With thee it came and goes: but follow me,
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays
 Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he 410
 Whose image thou art; him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparably thine; to him shalt bear
 Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd
 Mother of human race. What could I do,
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led? 415
 Till I espy'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
 Under a platane;³⁵ yet methought less fair,
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,
 Than that smooth wat'ry image: back I turn'd;
 Thou following cry'dst aloud, Return fair Eve. 420

³⁵Orig., "plantane"; a misprint.

Whom fly'st thou? Whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,
 His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side
 Henceforth an individual solace dear: 425
 Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other half. With that thy gentle hand
 Seiz'd mine; I yielded, and from that time see
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair. 430
 *So spake our gen'ral mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd
 On our first father; half her swelling breast
 Naked met his under the flowing gold 435
 Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight,
 Both of her beauty, and submissive charms,
 Smil'd with superior love, and press'd her lip
 With kisses pure: aside the devil turn'd
 For envy, yet with jealous leer malign 440
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plain'd.*
 Sight hateful, sight tormenting! Thus these two
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms,
 The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill
 Of bliss on bliss; while I to hell am thrust, 445
 Where neither joy, nor love, but fierce desire,
 (Among our other torments not the least,)
 Still unfill'd with pain of longing pines.
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
 From their own mouths: all is not theirs, it seems; 450
 One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,
 Forbidden them to taste: knowledge forbidden?

Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord
 Envy them that? Can it be sin to know?
 Can it be death? And do they only stand 455
 By ignorance? Is that their happy state,
 The proof of their obedience, and their faith?
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin! Hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject 460³⁶
 Envious commands, invented with design
 To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt
 Equal with gods: aspiring to be such,
 They taste and die: what likelier can ensue?
 But first with narrow search I must walk round 465
 This garden; chance may lead where I may meet
 Some wand'ring spirit of heav'n, from him to draw
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,
 Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed. 470
 So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began
 Thro' wood, thro' waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam.
 Mean while the setting sun with right aspect
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise 475
 Levell'd his ev'ning rays: it was a rock
 Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,
 Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent
 Accessible from earth, one ent'rance high;
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung 480
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.
 Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,
 Chief of th' angelic guards, awaiting night.
 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the eve'n
 Swift as a shooting star, and thus began. 485

³⁶Orig., "560"; a misprint.

Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath giv'n
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place
 No evil thing approach, or enter in.
 This day, at height of noon, came to my sphere
 A spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know
 More of th' Almighty's works, and chiefly man, 490
 God's latest image: I describ'd his way
 Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gate;
 But in the mount that lies from Eden north,
 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks
 Alien from heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd: 495
 Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade
 Lost sight of him: one of the banish'd crew,
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise
 New troubles; him thy care must be to find.
 To whom the winged warrior thus return'd. 500
 Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
 Amid' the sun's bright circle, where thou sitt'st,
 See far and wide: in at this gate none pass
 The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come
 Well known from heav'n: and since meridian hour 505
 No creature thence: if spirit of other sort,
 So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthy bounds
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.
 But if within the circuit of these walks, 510
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.
 He spake; and Uriel to the sun return'd,
 *Arraying with reflected purple and gold
 The clouds that on his western throne attend. 515
 Now came still ev'ning on, and twilight grey

Had in her sober liv'ry all things clad;
 Silence accompanied; for beast and bird,
 They to their grassy couch, these to their nests
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale; 520
 She all night long her am'rous descant sung;
 Silence was pleas'd: now glow'd the firmament
 With living sapphires: Hesperus, that led
 The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon
 Rising in clouded majesty, at length 525
 Apparent queen unveil'd her peerless light,
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.
 When Adam thus to Eve: fair consort, th' hour
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest,
 Mind us of like repose, since God hath set 530
 Labour and rest, as day and night, to men
 Successive; and the timely dew of sleep
 Now falling, with soft slumb'rous weight inclines
 Our eye-lids: other creatures all day long
 Rove idle unemploy'd, and less need rest; 535
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind
 Appointed, which declares his dignity,
 And the regard of heav'n on all his ways;
 While other animals unactive range,
 And of their doings God takes no account.* 540
 To morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east
 With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform
 Yon' flow'ry arbours, yonder alleys green,
 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown, 545
 Mean while, as nature wills, night bids us rest.
 *To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd.
 My author and disposer, what thou bidst

Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains.
 With thee conversing, I forget all time; 550
 All seasons, and their change, all please alike.
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
 With charm of earliest birds; pleasant the sun,
 When first on this delightful land he spreads
 His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flow'r, 555
 Glist'ring with dew: fragrant the fertile earth
 After soft show'rs; and sweet the coming on
 Of grateful ev'ning mild; then silent night,
 With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,
 And these, the gems of heav'n, her starry train: 560
 But neither breath of morn, when she ascends,
 With charm of earliest birds; nor rising sun
 On this delightful land; nor herb, fruit, flow'r,
 Glist'ring with dew; nor fragrance after show'rs;
 Nor grateful ev'ning mild; nor silent night, 565
 With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,
 Or glitt'ring star-light, without thee is sweet.*
 But wherefore all night long shine these? For whom
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?
 To whom our gen'ral ancestor reply'd. 570
 Daughter of God and man, accomplish'd Eve.
 These have their course to finish round the earth,
 By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land,
 In order, though to nations yet unborn,
 Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise; 575
 *Then not in vain; nor think, though men were none,
 That heav'n wou'd want spectators, God want praise:
 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold 580

Both day and night.* How often from the steep
 Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
 Sole, or responsive each to other's note,
 Singing their great Creator? Oft' in bands 585
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk
 With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds,
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to heav'n.
 Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd 590
 On to their blissful bow'r; it was a place
 Chos'n by the sov'reign Planter, when he fram'd
 All things to man's delightful use; the roof
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
 Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew 595
 Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side
 Acanthus, and each od'rous bushy shrub
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flow'r,
 *Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,
 Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought
 Mosaic; under foot the violet 601
 Crocus, and hyacinth with rich inlay
 Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone
 Of costliest emblem:* other creature here,
 Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none. 605
 *Thus at their shady lodge arriv'd, both stood,
 Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd
 The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heav'n,
 Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,
 And starry pole: thou also mad'st the night,
 Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day, 610
 Which we in our appointed work employ'd

Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help,
 And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss,*
 Ordain'd by thee, and this delicious place
 For us too large, where thy abundance wants 615
 Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.
 But thou hast promis'd from us two a race
 To fill the earth, who shall with us extol
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,
 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep. 620
 This said unanimous, and other rites
 Observing none, but adoration pure,
 Which God likes best, into their inmost bower
 Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off
 These troublesome disguises which we wear. 625
 *Hail wedded love, mysterious law, true source
 Of human offspring, sole propriety
 In Paradise of all things common else.
 By thee adult'rous lust was driv'n from men
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee 630
 Founded in reason, loyal,³⁷ just and pure.
 Relations dear, and all the charities
 Of father, son, and brother first were known.
 Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place, 635
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,
 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,
 Present, or past, as saints or patriarchs us'd.
 Here love his golden shafts employs, here lights
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings, 640
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unindear'd,
 Casual fruition; nor in court amours,

³⁷Orig., "royal"; a misprint.

Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,
 Or serenate, which the starv'd lover sings [645]
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.*
 These lull'd by nightingales embracing slept,
 And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof
 Show'rd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on
 Blest pair; and O yet³⁸ happiest, if ye seek 650
 No happier state, and know to know no more.
 Now had night measur'd with her shadowy cone
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,
 And from their ivory port the cherubim
 Forth issuing at the accustom'd hour stood arm'd 655
 To their night watches in warlike parade,
 When Gabriel to his next in pow'r thus spake.
 Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the north;
 Our circuit meets full west. As flame they part, 660
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.
 From these, two strong and subtle spi'rits he call'd
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.
 Ithuriel and Zephon, with wing speed
 Search through this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook; 665³⁹
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,
 Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harm.
 This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd
 Who tells of some infernal spirit seen
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd 670
 The bars of hell, on errand bad no doubt:
 Such where ye find, seise fast, and hither bring.
 So saying, on he led his radiant files,
 Dazling the moon; these to the bow'r direct,
 In search of whom they sought: him there they found 675

³⁸Orig., "ye"; likely a misprint.

³⁹Orig., "660"; a misprint.

Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve,
 Assaying by his devilish art to reach
 The organs of her fancy, and with them forge
 Illusions as he list, phantasms and dreams.
 *Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear
 Touch'd lightly; for no falshood can indure 680
 Touch of celestial temper, but returns
 Of force to its own likeness: up he starts
 Discover'd and surpriz'd. As when a spark
 Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid
 Fit for the tun some magazine to store 685
 Against a rumor'd war, the smutty grain
 With sudden blaze diffus'd inflames the air;
 So started up in his own shape the fiend.
 Back stept those two fair angels half amaz'd
 So sudden to behold the grisly king; 690
 Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.*
 Which of those rebel spi'rits adjudg'd to hell
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison? And transform'd,
 Why satst thou like an enemy in wait,
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep? 695
 Know ye not then, said Satan fill'd with scorn,
 Know ye not me? Ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar:
 Not to know me argues yourselves unknown,
 The lowest of your throng: or if ye know, 700
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain?
 To whom thus Zephon, answ'ring scorn with scorn.
 Think not, revolted spi'rit, thy shape the same,
 Or brightness undiminish'd to be known, 705
 As when thou stood'st in heav'n upright and pure;

That glory then, when thou no more wast good,
 Departed from thee; and thou resemblest now
 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul.
 But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account 710
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
 This place inviolate, and these from harm.
 So spake the cherub; and his grave rebuke,
 *Severe in youthful beauty, added grace
 Invincible: abash'd the devil stood, 715
 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
 Virtue in her shape how lovely: saw, and pin'd
 His loss; but chiefly to find here observ'd 720
 His lustre visibly impair'd;* yet seem'd
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
 Best with the best, the sender not the sent,
 Or all at once; more glory will be won,
 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,⁴⁰ 725
 Will save us trial what the least can do
 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.
 *The fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage;
 But like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,
 Champing his iron curb: to strive or fly 730
 He held it vain: awe from above had quell'd
 His heart, not else dismay'd.* Now drew they nigh
 The western point, where those half-rounding guards
 Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,
 Awaiting next command. To whom their chief 735
 Gabriel from the front thus call'd aloud.
 O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
 Hastening this way, and now by glimpse discern
 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,
 And with them comes a third of regal port, 740

⁴⁰Orig., "hold"; a misprint.

But faded splendor wan; who by his gate
 And fierce demeanor seems the prince of hell,
 Not likely to part hence without contest;
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd, 745
 And brief related whom they brought, where found,
 How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake.
 Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge 750
 Of others, who approve not to transgress
 By thy example, but have pow'r and right
 To question thy bold entrance on this place;
 Employ'd it seems to violate sleep, and those
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss? 755

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow.
 Gabriel, thou hadst in heav'n th' esteem of wise,
 And such I held thee; but this question ask'd
 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain? *⁴¹
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from hell, 760
 Though thither doom'd? Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt,
 And boldly venture to whatever place
 Farthest from pain, where thou might'st hope to change
 Torment with ease, and soonest recompense
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought; 765
 To thee no reason, who know'st only good,
 But evil hast not try'd: and wilt object
 His will who bounds us? Let him surer bar
 His iron gates, if he intends our stay
 In that dark durance: thus much what was ask'd. 770
 The rest is true, they found me where they say;
 But that implies not violence or harm.

⁴¹It is unclear where this recommended passage begins, because the opening asterisk is missing.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike angel mov'd,
 Disdainfully half smiling thus reply'd.
 O loss of one in heav'n to judge of wise, 775
 Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,
 And now returns him from his prison scap'd,
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither
 Unlicenc'd from his bounds in hell prescrib'd; 780
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain
 However, and to scape his punishment.
 So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,
 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight
 Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to hell, 785
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain
 Can equal anger infinite provok'd.
 But wherefore thou alone? Wherefore with thee
 Came not all hell broke loose? Is pain to them
 Less pain, less to be fled? Or thou than they 790
 Less hardy to indure? Courageous chief!
 The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alledg'd
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.
 To which the fiend thus answer'd frowning stern. 795
 Not that I less indure, or shrink from pain,
 Insulting angel; well thou know'st I stood
 Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid
 The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,
 And seconded thy else not dreaded spear. 800
 But still thy words at random, as before,
 Argue thy inexperience what behoves
 From hard assays and ill successes past

A faithful leader, not to hazard all
 Through ways of danger by himself untry'd: 805
 I therefore, I alone first undertook
 To wing the desolate abyss, and spy
 This new created world, whereof in hell
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
 Better abode, and my afflicted powers 810
 To settle here on earth, or in mid air;
 Though for possession put to try once more
 What thou and thy gay legions dare against;
 Whose easier business were to serve their Lord
 High up in heav'n, with songs to hymn his throne, 815
 And practiced distances to cringe, not fight.
 To whom the warrior angel soon reply'd.
 To say and straight unsay, pretending first
 Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,
 Argues no leader but a liar trac'd, 820
 Satan, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd!
 Faithful to whom? To thy rebellious crew?
 Army of fiends, fit body to fit head.
 Was this your discipline and faith engag'd, 825
 Your military obedience, to dissolve
 Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Pow'r Supreme?
 And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servily ador'd 830
 Heav'n's awful Monarch? Wherefore but in hope
 To dispossess him, and thyself to reign?
 But mark what I arreed thee now, avant;
 Fly thither whence thou fledst: if from this hour
 Within these hallow'd limits thou appear, 835

Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,
 And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn
 The facil gates of hell too slightly barr'd.
 So threaten'd he; but Satan to no threats
 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage reply'd. 840
 Then when I am thy captive, talk of chains,
 Proud liminary cherub, but ere then
 Far heavier load thyself expect to feel
 From my prevailing arm, though heav'n's King
 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers, 845
 Us'd to the yoke, draw'st his triumphant wheels
 In progress through the road of heav'n star-pav'd.
 *While thus he spake, th' angelic squadron bright
 Turn'd fiery red, sharp'ning in mooned horns
 Their phalanx, and began to hem him round 850
 With ported spears, as thick as when a field
 Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends
 Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind
 Sways them. On th' other side Satan alarm'd
 Collecting all his might dilated stood, 855
 Like Teneriff or Atlas unremov'd:
 His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest
 Sat horror plum'd; nor wanted in his grasp
 What seem'd both spear and shield: now dreadful deeds
 Might have ensued, nor only Paradise 860
 In this commotion, but the starry cope
 Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements
 At least had gone to wreck, disturb'd and torn
 With violence of this conflict, had not soon
 Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray 865
 Hung forth in heav'n his golden scales, yet seen
 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign:

Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,
The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air,
In counterpoise, now ponders all events, 870
Battles and realms: in these he put two weights
The sequel each of parting and of fight;
The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam;
Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the fiend.
 *Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine, 875
Neither our own but giv'n; what folly then
To boast what arms can do? Since thine no more
Than heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubled now
To trample thee as mire: for proof look up,
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign, 880
Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak,
If thou resist. The fiend look'd up, and knew
His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled
Murm'ring, and with him fled the shades of night.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IV.

- Verse 2. "The apocalypse"—The Revelation, chap. 12.
ver. 10, 12.
- Ver. 28. "Meridian"—Midday.
- Ver. 48. "'Sdeign'd"—Disdain'd.
- Ver. 70. "Rues"—Repents.
- Ver. 113. "Ire"—Anger.
- Ver. 118. "Perturbation"—Violent passion.
- Ver. 124. "The Assyrian mount"—Niphates borders on Assyria, in which Milton supposes Paradise to have been.
- Ver. 132. "A rural mound"—Such a fence as is used in the country. "Champain"—Even, level.
- Ver. 134. "Grotesque"—Irregular. "Verdurous"—Green [Ver. 141].
- Ver. 143. "His nether empire, neighbouring round"—Beginning at the foot of the mount of Paradise.
- Ver. 149. "Humid bow"—The rainbow.
- Ver. 155. "Odoriferous"—Bringing sweet smells.
- Ver. 156. "Native perfumes"—Not made by art.
- Ver. 212. "Crisped"—Curling, winding.
- Ver. 213. "Orient"—Beautiful.

- Ver. 215. “Ran nectar”—Delicious, as the nectar which the poets feigned to be the drink of the gods.
- Ver. 217. “Boon”—Good, bountiful.
- Ver. 229. “Irrigous”—Well-watered.
- Ver. 231. “Umbrageous”⁴²—Shady. “Of all hues”—Of every colour [Ver. 230].
- Ver. 232. “Mantling”—Covering over, as with a mantle.
- Ver. 238. “Airs”—Gales of wind.
- Ver. 250. “Severe”—Exact, strict.
- Ver. 257. “Hyacinthine”—Raven-black.
- Ver. 263. “Imply’d”⁴³ subjection”—Of which a veil was the token.
- Ver. 269. “The goodliest man of men since born”—That is, goodlier than any of them.
- Ver. 275. “Cool zephyr”—The cooling breeze of wind.
- Ver. 286. “His lithe proboscis”—His limber, pliant trunk.
- Ver. 287. “Insinuating”—Wrapping, winding himself up. “Wove with Gordian twine”—Alluding to the famous Gordian knot, placed in the temple of Apollo, by Gordius, king of Phrygia. None could untie this, but Alexander cut it asunder with his sword.
- Ver. 288. “Braided”—Plaited, folded. And those intricate folds were a token of guile.
- Ver. 291. “Ruminating”—Chewing the cud.
- Ver. 293. “In the ascending scale”—As in a pair of scales, when one descends, the other ascends.
- Ver. 350. “Sole part”—That part of them which alone is dearer than all the rest.
- Ver. 417. “A platan”—A plane-tree, a very broad leaved tree.
- Ver. 491. “I described”—That is, pointed out “his way” to Paradise.

⁴²Orig., “Umbrogous”; a misprint.

⁴³Orig., “Wimpled”; a misprint.

- Ver. 523. “Hesperus”—The evening star: Venus.
- Ver. 555. “Orient”—Rising.
- Ver. 589. “Divide the night”—Into watches, relieving one another.
- Ver. 601. “Mosaic” pavement is chequered with small inlaid stones, of various colours.
- Ver. 626. “Mysterious law”—Containing a deep meaning, which few understand.
- Ver. 632. “Charities”—Love, tenderness, endearments.
- Ver. 645.⁴⁴ A “serenade”—A song sung at night by a lover, under the window of his mistress.
- Ver. 651. “If ye know to know no more”—If ye are content with your present knowledge.
- Ver. 652. A “cone” is a figure round at bottom, and lessening all the way till it ends in a point. Such is the shadow of the earth, which rises higher in the same degree as the sun falls. Consequently at nine o’clock, this would have risen half way “up” the “sublunary vault,” that is, the part of the heavens which lies between the earth and the moon [Ver. 653].
- Ver. 654. This “ivory port” at the east-gate of Paradise is not mentioned till now.
- Ver. 661. “To the shield”—The left. “The spear”—The right.
- Ver. 672. “Hither”—To me, wherever I am.
- Ver. 674. “Direct”—Their course.
- Ver. 681. “Of celestial temper”—Of the spear which was tempered in heaven.
- Ver. 765. “Dole”—Pain.
- Ver. 816. “And to cring at practised distances”—At the several distances to which you are accustomed.

⁴⁴Orig., “644”; a misprint.

- Ver. 833. “Arreed”—Direct, order.
Ver. 838. “Facil”—Easy.
Ver. 842. “Limitary”—Bounded in all thou dost.
Ver. 850.⁴⁵ A “phalanx” is a square body of soldiers drawn up close together.
Ver. 851. “Ported spears”—Held slooping⁴⁶ toward the enemy.
Ver. 852. “Ceres”—Corn.
Ver. 856. “Teneriff” is one of the highest mountains in the world.
Ver. 866.⁴⁷ “His golden scales”—Libra or the Scales, is one of the twelve signs, thro’ which the sun moves yearly, between Astrea (or Virgo) and the Scorpion. This also alludes to the word spoken to Belshazzar, *Thou art weighed in the ballance and found wanting.*

⁴⁵Orig., “849”; a misprint.

⁴⁶I.e., a 16th century spelling of “sloping.”

⁴⁷Orig., “867”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK V.

The Argument.

Morning approaches; Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream. He likes it not, yet comforts her. They come forth to their day labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, sends Raphael to admonish man of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise. His appearance describ'd; his coming discern'd by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower. He goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise, got together by Eve. Their discourse at table. Raphael performs his message; minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof: how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there inticed them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a seraph; who, in argument, dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now morn her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,
When Adam wak'd, so custom'd, for his sleep
Was airy light, from pure digestion bred,
And temp'rate vapours bland, which th' only sound

Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,
 Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill mattin song
 Of birds on ev'ry bough; so much the more
 His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
 With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek, 10
 *As through unquiet rest: he on his side
 Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which whether waking, or asleep,
 Shot forth peculiar graces: then with voice 15
 Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus. Awake,
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight.
 Awake; the morning shines, and the fresh field 20
 Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.* 25
 Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.
 O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
 My glory, my perfection, glad I see
 Thy face, and morn return'd; for I this night 30
 (Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not as I oft' am wont, of thee,
 Works of day past, or morrow's next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksome night: methought 35
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk,
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,

*Why sleep'st thou, Eve? Now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake, 40
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song; now reigns
 Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light
 Shadowy sets off the face of things; in vain,
 If none regard: heav'n wakes with all his eyes,
 Whom to behold but thee, nature's desire? 45
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment,
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze,*
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
 To find thee I directed then my walk:
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50
 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
 Of interdicted knowledge: fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my fancy than by day:
 And as I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from heav'n 55
 By us oft' seen; his dewy locks distill'd
 Ambrosia: on that tree he also gaz'd;
 And, O fair plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,
 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
 Nor god, nor man? Is knowledge so despis'd? 60
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offer'd good, why else set here?
 This said, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm
 He pluck'd, he tasted; me damp horror chill'd 65
 At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold:
 But he thus overjoy'd, O fruit divine,
 Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropt,
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit

For gods, yet able to make gods of men. 70
 And why not gods of men, since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant grows,
 The Author not impair'd, but honour'd more?
 Here, happy creature, fair, angelic Eve,
 Partake thou also; happy though thou art, 75
 Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be:
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods
 Thyself a goddess, not to earth confin'd,
 But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes
 Ascend to heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80
 What life the gods live there, and such live thou.
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Ev'n to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluck'd; the pleasant sav'ry smell
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
 And various: wond'ring at my flight and change
 To this high exaltation; suddenly 90
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
 And fell asleep: but O how glad I wak'd
 To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her night
 Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.
 Best image of myself, and dearer half, 95
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
 Affects me equally; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;
 Yet evil, whence? In thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know, that in the soul 100
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve

Reason as chief; among these fancy next
 Her office holds; of all external things,
 Which the five watchful senses represent,
 She forms imaginations, airy shapes, 105
 Which reason joining or disjoining, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
 Into her private cell when nature rests.
 Oft' in her absence mimic fancy wakes 110
 To imitate her; but misjoining shapes,
 Wild work produces oft', and most in dreams,
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Some such resemblances methinks I find
 Of our last ev'ning's talk, in this thy dream, 115
 But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
 Evil into the mind of God or man
 May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave
 No spot or blame behind: which gives me hope
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream, 120
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.
 Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,
 That wont to be more chearful and serene
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world:
 And let us to our fresh employments rise 125
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flow'rs
 That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,
 Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.
 *So chear'd he his fair spouse, and she was chear'd,
 But silently a gentle tear let fall 130
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair;
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,
 Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell

Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
 And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.* 135
 So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.
 But first, from under shady arbo'rous roof
 Soon as they forth were come to open sight
 Of day-spring, and the sun, (who scarce up ris'n,
 With wheels yet hov'ring o'er the ocean brim, 140
 Shot parallel to th' earth his dewy ray,
 Discov'ring in wide landskip all the east
 Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,)
 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
 Their orisons, each morning duly paid 145
 In various stile; for neither various stile
 Nor holy rapture, wanted they to praise
 Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd or sung
 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence
 Flow'd from their lips, in prose or num'rous verse, 150
 More tuneable than needed lute or harp
 To add more sweetness; and they thus began.
 *These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
 Almighty, thine this universal frame,
 Thus wond'rous fair; thyself how wond'rous then! 155
 To us invisible, or dimly seen
 In these thy lowest works; yet these declare
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and pow'r divine.
 Speak ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160
 Angels; for ye behold him, and with songs
 And choral symphonies, day without night,
 Circle his throne rejoicing; ye in heav'n:
 On earth join all ye creatures to extol
 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end, 165

Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,
 If better thou belong not to the dawn,
 Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn
 With thy bright cirlet, praise him in thy sphere,
 While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170
 Thou sun, of this great world both eye and soul,
 Acknowledge him thy greater, sound his praise
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,
 And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.
 Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fly'st, 175
 And ye five other wand'ring fires that move
 In mystic dance not without song, resound
 His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.
 Air, and ye elements, the eldest birth
 Of nature's womb, that in quaternion run 180
 Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix
 And nourish all things; let your ceaseless change
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.
 Ye mists and exhalations that now rise
 From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray, 185
 Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,
 In honor to the world's great Author rise,
 Whether to deck with clouds th' uncolour'd sky,
 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,
 Rising or falling still advance his praise. 190
 His praise ye winds, that from four quarters blow,
 Breathe soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye pines,
 With every plant, in sign of worship wave.
 Fountains, and ye that warble as ye flow,
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise. 195
 Join voices all ye living souls; ye birds,
 That singing up to heaven's gate ascend,
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.

Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk
 The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep; 200
 Witness if I be silent, morn or even,
 To hill, or valley, fountain or fresh shade
 Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.
 Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still
 To give us only good; and if the night 205
 Have gather'd ought of evil or conceal'd,
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.*
 So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts
 Firm peace recover'd soon and wonted calm.
 On to their morning's rural work they haste 210
 Among sweet dews and flow'rs; where any row
 Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far
 Their pamper'd boughs. Them thus employ'd beheld
 With pity heav'n's high King, and to him call'd
 Raphael, the sociable spirit, that deign'd 215
 To travel with Tobias, and secur'd
 His marriage with the sev'ntimes-wedded maid.
 Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on earth
 Satan from hell scap'd through the darksome gulf
 Hath rais'd in Paradise. Go half this day 220
 Converse with Adam. Such discourse bring on,
 As may advise him of his happy state,
 Happiness in his pow'r left free to will,
 Left to his own free will, his will though free,
 Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware 225
 He swerve not too secure: tell him withal
 His danger, and from whom; what enemy,
 Late fall'n himself from heav'n, is plotting now
 The fall of others from like state of bliss.
 So spake th' eternal Father, and fulfill'd 230
 All justice: nor delay'd the winged saint

After his charge receiv'd; but from among
 Thousand celestial ardors, where he stood
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up springing light
 Flew thro' the midst of heav'n; th' angelic quires, 235
 On each hand parting, to his speed gave way
 Through all th' empyreal road; till at the gate
 Of heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide
 On golden hinges turning, as by work
 Divine the sov'reign Architect had fram'd. 240
 From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,
 Star interpos'd, however small he sees,
 Not unconform to other shining globes,
 Earth and the gard'n of God, with cedars crown'd
 Above all hills. Down thither prone in flight 245
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing.
 *At once on th' eastern cliff of Paradise
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns
 A seraph wing'd; six wings he wore, to shade 250
 His lineaments divine; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast
 With regal ornament; the middle pair
 Girt like a starry zone his waste, and round
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold 255
 And colours dipt in heav'n; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood,
 And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide.* Strait knew him all the bands 260
 Of angels under watch; and to his state,
 And to his message high in honour rise;
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come

Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh, 265
 And flow'ring odors, cassia, nard, and balm;
 A wilderness of sweets; for nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above rule or art; enormous bliss. 270
 Him through the spicy forest onward come
 Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat
 Of his cool bow'r, while now the mounted sun
 Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs: 275
 And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd
 For dinner savory fruits, of taste to please
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst
 Of necta'rous draughts between, from milky stream,
 Berry or grape: to whom thus Adam call'd. 280
 Haste hither Eve, and worth thy sight behold
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape
 Comes this way moving; seems another morn
 Ris'n on mid-noon: some great behest from heaven
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe 285
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,
 And what thy plenteous stores contain, bring forth.
 To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mold,
 Of God inspir'd, I from each bough and brake,
 Each plant and juciest gourd, will pluck such choice 290
 To entertain our angel guest, as he
 Beholding shall confess, that here on earth
 God hath dispens'd his bounties as in heaven.
 So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent. 295
 Mean while our primitive great sire, to meet

His god-like guest, walks forth, with no more train
 Accompanied than with his own complete
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits 300
 On princes, than their rich retinue long
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold.
 Nearer his presence Adam though not aw'd,
 Yet with submit approach and reverence meek,
 As to' a superior nature, bowing low, 305
 Thus said. Native of heav'n, for other place
 None can than heav'n such glorious shape contain;
 Since by descending from the thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us 310
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower
 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline. 315
 Whom thus th' angelic virtue answer'd mild.
 Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though spi'rits of heaven
 To visit thee; lead on then where thy bower 320
 O'ershades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,
 I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge
 They came, that smil'd with flow'rets deck'd, and Eve
 Stood to' entertain her guest from heav'n; no veil
 She needed, virtue-proof; no thought infirm 325
 Alter'd her cheek. On whom the angel hail
 Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd
 Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.

Hail mother of mankind, whose fruitful womb
 Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons, 330
 Than with these various fruits the trees of God
 Have heap'd this table. Rais'd of grassy turf
 Their table was, and mossy seats had round,
 And on her ample square from side to side
 All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here 335
 Danc'd sweetly hand in hand, when thus began
 Our Author. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
 These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom
 All perfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 340
 The earth to yield; unsavory food perhaps
 To spiritual natures; only this I know,
 That one celestial Father gives to all.
 To whom the angel. Though in heav'n the trees
 Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines 345
 Yield nectar; though from off the boughs each morn
 We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain: yet God hath here
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with heaven. So down they sat, 350
 And to their viands fell; the mean while Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown: O innocence
 Deserving Paradise! If ever, then,
 Then had the sons of God excuse to have been 355
 Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell.
 Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,

Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose 360
 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass
 Giv'n him by this great conference to know
 Of things above his world, and of their being
 Who dwell in heaven, and his wary speech
 Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd. 365
 Inhabitant with God, now know I well
 Thy favour, in this honour done to man,
 Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste.
 To whom the winged hierarch reply'd. 370
 O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom
 All things proceed, and up to him return,
 If not deprav'd from good, created all
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,
 Indued with various forms, various degrees 375
 Of substance, and in things that live, of life.
 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
 If I refuse not. Time may come, when men
 With angels may participate, and ascend
 Ethereal, as we, or may at choice 380
 Here or in heav'nly paradises dwell;
 If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire,
 Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happy state 385
 Can comprehend, incapable of more.
 To whom the patriarch of mankind reply'd.
 O favourable spi'rit, propitious guest,
 What meant that caution join'd, If ye be found
 Obedient? Can we want obedience then 390
 To him, or possibly his love desert

Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?
 To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth, 395
 Attend: that thou art happy, owe to God;
 That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee; be advis'd.
 *God made thee perfect, not immutable; 400
 And good he made thee, but to persevere
 He left it in thy pow'r; ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity:
 Our voluntary service he requires, 405
 Not our necessitated; such with him
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand 410
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
 On other surety none; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not; in this we stand or fall:* 415
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heav'n to deepest hell; O fall
 From what high state of bliss into what woe!
 To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 420
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighb'ring hills

Aereal music sent: nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 425
 Our Maker, and obey him whose command
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assur'd me, and still assure: though what thou tell'st
 Hath past in heav'n, some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 430
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy in sacred silence to be heard;
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins
 His other half in the great round of heaven. 435
 Thus Adam made request; and Raphael
 After short pause assenting, thus began.
 High matter thou injoin'st me, O prime of men,
 Sad task and hard; for how shall I relate
 To human sense th' invisible exploits 440
 Of warring spirits? How without remorse
 The ruin of so many, glorious once
 And perfect while they stood? How last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps
 Not lawful to reveal? Yet for thy good 445
 This is dispens'd; and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
 By likening spiritual to corporeal forms,
 As may express them best; though what if earth
 Be but the shadow of heav'n, and things therein 450
 Each to' other like, more than on earth is thought?
 As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild
 Reign'd where these heav'ns now roll, where earth now rests
 Upon her center pois'd; when on a day

(For time, though in eternity, apply'd 455
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future) on such day
 As heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal host
 Of angels by imperial summons call'd,
 Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne 460
 Forthwith from all the ends of heav'n appear'd
 Under their hierarchs in orders bright:
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve
 Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees; 465
 Or in their glittering tissues bear emblaz'd
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood
 Orb within orb, the Father infinite, 470
 By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,
 Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.
 Hear all ye angels, progeny of light,
 Thrones, dominations, pryncedoms, virtues, powers, 475
 Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.
 This day my only Son, I on this hill
 Anointed have, your head I him appoint;
 And by myself have sworn to him shall bow
 All knees in heav'n, and shall confess him Lord. 480
 So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words
 All seem'd well pleas'd; all seem'd, but were not all.
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent
 In song and dance about the sacred hill.
 Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhal'd 485
 From that high mount of God, whence light and shade

Spring forth, the face of brightest heav'n had chang'd
 To grateful twilight (for night comes not there
 In darker veil) and roseat dews dispos'd
 All but th' unsleeping eyes of God to rest; 490
 Wide over all the plain, and wider far
 Than all this globous earth in plain outspread,
 (Such are the courts of God) th' angelic throng,
 Dispers'd in bands and files, their camp extend 495
 By living streams among the trees of life,
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,
 Celestial tabernacles, where they slept
 Fann'd with cool winds; save those who in their course
 Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne
 Alternate all night long. But not so wak'd 500
 Satan; so call him now, his former name
 Is heard no more in heav'n. He of the first,
 If not the first arch-angel, great in power,
 In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught
 With envy against the Son of God, resolv'd 505
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave
 Unworshipt, unbey'd the throne supreme
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake. 510
 Sleep'st thou, companion dear, what sleep can close
 Thy eye-lids? And remember'st what decree
 Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips
 Of heav'n's Almighty Sire? More in this place
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou 515
 Of all those myriads which we lead, the chiefs:
 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night

Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,
 And all who under me their banners wave,
 Homeward with flying march where we possess 520
 The quarters of the north; there to prepare
 Fit entertainment to receive our King
 The great Messiah, and his new commands,
 Who speedily through all the hierarchies
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws. 525
 So spake the false arch-angel, and infus'd
 Bad influence into th' unwary breast
 Of his associate: he together calls
 Or several one by one, the regent powers,
 Under him regent; tells, as he was taught, 530
 That the Most High commanding, now ere night,
 Now ere dim night had disincumber'd heaven,
 The great hierarchal standard was to move;
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound 535
 Or taint integrity: but all obey'd
 The wonted signal, and superior voice
 Of their great potentate; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in heaven;
 His count'nance, as the morning star that guides 540
 The starry flock, allur'd them, and his lies
 Drew after him the third part of heav'n's host.
 Mean while th' eternal eye whose sight discerns
 Saw among the sons of morn, what multitudes
 Were banded to oppose his high decree; 545
 And to his Son thus said.
 Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
 In full resplendence, heir of all my might,
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure

Of our omnipotence, while such a foe 550
 Is rising, who intends to erect his throne
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north.
 To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear,
 (Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,
 Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes 555
 Justly hast in derision, and secure
 Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain.
 So spake the Son; but Satan with his powers
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed, an host
 Innumerable as the stars of night, 560
 Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun
 Impearls on every leaf and every flower.
 Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies
 Of seraphim and potentates and thrones
 In their triple degrees; regions to which 565
 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,
 And all the sea, from one entire globose
 Stretch'd into longitude; which having pass'd
 At length into the limits of the north 570
 They came, and Satan to his royal seat
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount
 Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and towers
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold;
 The palace of great Lucifer, (so call 575
 That structure in the dialect of men
 Interpreted) and with calumnious art
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.
 Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues, powers,
 If these magnificent titles yet remain 580
 Not merely titular, since by decree

Another now hath to himself ingross'd
 All pow'r, and us eclips'd under the name
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here, 585
 This only to consult how we may best
 With what may be devis'd of honors new
 Receive him coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile.
 But what if better counsels might erect 590
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?
 Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend
 The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust
 To know you right, or if ye know yourselves 595
 Natives and sons of heav'n possess'd before
 By none. Who can in reason then assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right
 His equals, if in pow'r and splendor less,
 In freedom equal? Or can introduce
 Law and edict on us, who without law 600
 Err not? Much less for this to be our Lord!
 Thus far his bold discourse without controll
 Had audience, when among the seraphim
 Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd 605
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,
 Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe
 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.
 O argument blasphemous, false and proud!
 Words which no ear ever to hear in heaven
 Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate, 610
 In place thyself so high above thy peers.
 Canst thou condemn the just decree of God,

That to his only Son by right indued
 With regal⁴⁸ scepter, every soul in heaven
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honor due 615
 Confess him rightful King? Unjust, thou say'st,
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free.
 Shalt thou give law to God? Shalt thou dispute
 With him the points of liberty, who made
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the pow'rs of heaven 620
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being?
 Yet by experience taught we know how good,
 And of our good and of our dignity
 How provident he is, how far from thought
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt 625
 Our happy state. But grant it were unjust,
 That equal over equals monarch reign:
 Thyself though great and glorious dost thou count,
 Or all angelic nature join'd in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son? By whom 630
 As by his word the mighty Father made
 All things, ev'n thee; and all the spi'rits of heaven
 By him created in their bright degrees,
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd
 Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues, powers, 635
 Essential powers. Cease then this impious rage,
 And tempt not these; but hasten to appease
 Th' incensed Father, and th' incensed Son,
 While pardon may be found in time besought.
 So spake the fervent angel; but his zeal 640
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,
 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
 Th' apostate, and more haughty thus reply'd.
 That we were form'd say'st thou? Strange point and new!

⁴⁸Orig., "legal"; a misprint.

Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who saw 645
 When this creation was? Remember'st thou
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 We know no time when we were not as now;
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd
 By our own quick'ning pow'r, when fatal course 650
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature
 Of this our native heav'n, ethereal sons.
 Our puissance is our own; our own right hand
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try
 Who is our equal. Go, and this report, 655
 These tidings carry to th' anointed King;
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.
 *He said, and as the sound of waters deep
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
 Through the infinite host. Nor less for that 660
 The flaming seraph fearless, though alone
 Incompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.*
 O alienate from God, O spi'rit accurs'd,
 Forsaken of all good; I see thy fall
 Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd 665
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread
 Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth
 No more be troubled how to quit the yoke
 Of God's Messiah; those indulgent laws
 Will not be now vouchsaf'd; other decrees 670
 Against thee are gone forth without recall;
 That golden scepter, which thou didst reject,
 Is now an iron rod to bruise and break
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise:
 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly 675
 These wicked tents devote, but lest the wrath

Impendent raging into sudden flame
 Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel
 His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
 Then who created thee lamenting learn, 680
 When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.
 So spake the seraph Abdiel faithful found
 *Among the faithless, faithful only he;
 Among innumerable false, unmov'd,
 Unshaken, uneduc'd, unterrify'd 685
 His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal;
 Nor number, nor example with him wrought
 To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind
 Though single.* From amidst them forth he pass'd,
 Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd 690
 Superior, nor of violence fear'd ought;
 And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd
 On those proud tow'rs to swift destruction doom'd.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK V.

Ver. 5.⁴⁹ "Bland"—Friendly to nature.
 Ver. 6.⁵⁰ "Aurora"—The morning.
 Ver. 7.⁵¹ "Mattin-song"—Morning-song.

⁴⁹Orig., "6"; a misprint.

⁵⁰Orig., "7"; a misprint.

⁵¹Orig., "8"; a misprint.

- Ver. 16.⁵² “Zephyrus”—The west-wind, “on Flora breaths”—On the flowers. “The prime”—The first hour of the day [Ver. 21].
- Ver. 52. “Interdicted”—Forbidden.
- Ver. 118. “So” it be “unapproved.”
- Ver. 145. “Orisons”—Prayers.
- Ver. 176. “Wandering fires”—Planets. “Not without song”—The music of the spheres was much talked of among the antient philosophers [Ver. 177].
- Ver. 180.⁵³ “In quaternion”⁵⁴—Fourfold. “Multiform”—In many forms [Ver. 181].
- Ver. 213. “Pampered”—Overgrown with leaves.
- Ver. 222. “Advise”—Make him sensible of.
- Ver. 225. “Mutable”—Liable to change.
- Ver. 233. “Celestial arders”—Angels burning with love.
- Ver. 242. “No star” being “interposed.”
- Ver. 247. “Between worlds and worlds”—It is hard to say, whether the planets⁵⁵ are inhabited or not. We have no proof on either side.
- Ver. 249. “To his proper shape returns”—He stood on his feet, and replaced his wings in their proper situation.
- Ver. 254. “Zone”—A girdle.
- Ver. 257. “With feathered mail”—One feather coming a little short of the other, like the plates on a coat of mail.
- Ver. 258. “Maia’s son”—Mercury, supposed by the heathens to be the messenger of Jupiter, and pictured with wings at his feet.
- Ver. 269. “Pouring forth” what was the “more sweet,” because “wild above rule or art.”
- Ver. 272. “As in the door he sat”—Like Abraham, Gen. xviii. 1.

⁵²Orig., “15”; a misprint.

⁵³Orig., 181”; a misprint.

⁵⁴Orig., “quarterniom”; a misprint.

⁵⁵Orig., “plants”; a misprint.

- Ver. 284. “Behest”—Command.
- Ver. 347. “Mellifluous”—Honey “dews and pearly grain.”
Alluding to *manna*, which is termed *angels food*,
Psalm cv. 40.
- Ver. 357. “Unlibidinous”⁵⁶—Without lust.
- Ver. 370. “Hierarch”—Holy prince or governor.
- Ver. 374. “Such”—Good to perfection, perfectly good.
- Ver. 404. “Inextricable”—From which none can extricate or
free himself.
- Ver. 441. “Remorse”—Grief, concern.
- Ver. 443. “Perfect”—Without fault.
- Ver. 445. “Not lawful”—Without a particular leave.
- Ver. 481. See Psalm ii. 6, 7. Heb. i. 6.
- Ver. 489. “Roseat”—Pleasant, fragrant as roses.
- Ver. 500. “Alternate”—Sing by turns.
- Ver. 554. “Lightning divine”—Flashing divine brightness.
- Ver. 561. “The sun impearls”—They shine like pearls, as soon
as the sun shines upon them.
- Ver. 579. “Virtues”—An order of angels, so called.
- Ver. 601. “Much less” can he introduce a law “for this”
(whom in disdain he will not name) “to be our
Lord.”

⁵⁶Orig., “Unlibidnous”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VI.

The Argument.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described: Satan and his powers retire under night: he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up mountains overwhelm'd both the force and machines of Satan: yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that victory: he in the power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepar'd for them in the deep: Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

All night the dreadless angel unpursued
Through heav'n's wide champain held his way; till morn,
Wak'd by the circling hours, with rosy hand
Unbarr'd the gates of light. *There is a cave
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,
Where light and darkness in perpetual round
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through heaven
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night;

Light issues forth, and at the other door
 Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10
 To veil the heav'n, though darkness there might well
 Seem twilight here. And now went forth the morn
 Such as in highest heav'n,* when all the plain
 Cover'd with thick imbattel'd squadrons bright,
 Chariots and flaming arms, first met his view: 15
 War he perceiv'd, war in procinct, and found
 Already known what he for news had thought
 To have reported: gladly then he mix'd
 Among those friendly pow'rs, who him receiv'd
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one, 20
 That of so many myriads fall'n, yet one
 Return'd not lost: on to the sacred hill
 They led him high applauded, and present
 Before the seat supreme; from whence a voice
 From midst a golden cloud thus mild was heard. 25
 *Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd
 Against revolted multitudes the cause
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms;
 And for the testimony of truth hast borne 30
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear
 Than violence; for this was all thy care
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds
 Judg'd thee perverse:* the easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends, 35
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue
 By force, who reason for their law refuse.
 Go, Michael of celestial armies prince,
 And thou in military prowess next 40

Gabriel, lead forth to battel these my sons
 Invincible, lead forth my armed saints
 By thousands and by millions rang'd for fight,
 Equal in number to that godless crew
 Rebellious; them with fire and hostile arms 45
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of heaven
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss
 Into their place of punishment, the gulf
 Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
 His fiery Chaos to receive their fall. 50

So spake the sov'reign voice, and clouds began
 To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll
 In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign
 Of wrath awak'd. Nor with less dread the loud
 Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow: 55
 At which command the powers militant,
 That stood for heav'n, in mighty quadrate join'd
 Of union irresistible, mov'd on
 In silence their bright legions, to the sound
 Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd 60
 Heroic ardor to adventrous deeds
 Under their god-like leaders, in the cause
 Of God and his Messiah. On they move
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,
 Nor strait'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream divides 65
 Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground
 Their march was, and the passive air upbore
 Their nimble tread. As when the total kind
 Of birds, in orderly array on wing,
 Came summon'd over Eden to receive 70
 Their names of thee; so over many a tract
 Of heav'n they march'd, and many a province wide

Tenfold the length of this terrene: at last
 Far in th' horizon to the north appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 75
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields
 Various, with boastful argument portray'd,
 The banded pow'rs of Satan hasting on 80
 With furious expedition; for they ween'd
 That self-same day by fight, or by surprise,
 To win the mount of God, and on his throne
 To set the envier of his state, the proud
 Aspirer; but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain 85
 In the mid way: though strange to us it seem'd
 At first, that angel should with angel war
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
 So oft in festivals of joy and love
 Unanimous, as sons of one great sire 90
 Hymning th' eternal Father: but the shout
 Of battle now began, and rushing sound
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
 High in the midst exalted as a god
 Th' apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 95
 Idol of majesty divine, inclos'd
 With flaming cherubim and golden shields;
 Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now
 'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,
 A dreadful interval, and front to front 100
 Presented stood in terrible array
 Of hideous length. Before the cloudy van,
 On the rough edge of battel ere it join'd,
 Satan with vast and haughty strides advanc'd

Came tow'ring, arm'd in adamant and gold; 105
 Abdiel that sight indur'd not, where he stood
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.
 O heav'n! That such resemblance of the Highest
 Should yet remain, where faith and realty 110
 Remain not: wherefore should not strength and might
 There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove
 Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable?
 His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aid,
 I mean to try, whose reason I have try'd 115
 Unsound and false; nor is ought but just,
 That he who in debate of truth hath won,
 Should win in arms, in both disputes alike.
 So pondering, and from his armed peers
 Forth stepping opposite, half way he met 120
 His daring foe, at this prevention more
 Incens'd, and thus securely him defy'd.
 Proud, art thou met? Thy hope was to have reach'd
 The height of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
 The throne of God unguarded, and his side 125
 Abandon'd at the terror of thy power
 Or potent tongue: fool, not to think how vain
 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms;
 Who out of smallest things could without end
 Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat 130
 Thy folly; or with solitary hand
 Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow
 Unaided could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
 Thy legions under darkness. But thou seest
 *All are not of thy train; there be who faith 135
 Prefer, and piety to God, though then

To thee not visible, when I alone
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all. My sect thou seest; now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.* 140
 Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance
 Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou return'st
 From flight, seditious angel, to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first assay 145
 Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue
 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose
 A third part of the gods, in synod met
 Their deities to assert, who while they feel
 Vigor divine within them, can allow 150
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
 Before thy fellows: thy success shall show
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know;
 At first I thought that liberty and heaven 155
 To heav'nly souls had been all one; but now
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Ministring spi'rits, train'd up in feast and song;
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heaven,
 Servility with freedom to contend, 160
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove.
 To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern reply'd.
 Apostate, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find,
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote.
 Unjustly thou depriv'st it with the name 165
 Of servitude to serve whom God ordains,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels

Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 170
 Thyself not free, but to thyself inthrall'd;
 Yet lewdly dar'st our ministring upbraid.
 Reign thou in hell thy kingdom; let me serve
 In heav'n God ever blest, and his divine
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd. 175
 Yet chains in hell, not realms expect: mean while
 From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 This greeting on thy impious crest receive.
 *So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 180
 On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield
 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
 He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee
 His massy spear upstay'd. As if on earth 185
 Winds under ground, or waters forcing way
 Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat
 Half sunk with all his pines.* Amazement seis'd
 The rebel thrones, but greater rage to see
 Thus foil'd their mightiest; ours joy fill'd, and shout 190
 Presage of victory, and fierce desire
 Of battle: whereat Michael bid sound
 Th' arch-angel trumpet; through the vast of heaven
 It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
 Hosanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze 195
 The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd
 The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
 And clamour such as heard in heav'n till now
 Was never: arms on armour clashing bray'd

Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 200
 Of brazen chariots rag'd; *dire was the noise
 Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss
 Of fiery darts in flaming vollies flew,
 And flying vaulted either host with fire.
 So under fiery cope together rush'd 205
 Both battles main, with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage; all heaven
 Resounded, and had earth been then, all earth
 Had to her center shook. What wonder? When
 Millions of fierce encountring angels fought 210
 On either side, the least of whom could weild
 These elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their regions: how much more of power
 Army against army numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 215
 Though not destroy, their happy native seat;
 Had not th' eternal King Omnipotent
 From his strong hold of heav'n, high over-rul'd
 And limited their might; though in number such
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 220
 A numerous host, in strength each armed hand
 A legion: led in fight yet leader seem'd
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 225
 The ridges of grim war;* no thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
 That argued fear; each on himself rely'd,
 As only in his arm the moment lay
 Of victory: deeds of eternal fame 230
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread

That war and various, sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then
 Conflicting fire: long time in even scale 235
 The battle hung; till Satan, who that day
 Prodigious pow'r had shewn, amid the ranks
 Of fighting seraphim confus'd, at length
 *Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd
 Squadrons at once; with huge two handed sway 240
 Brandish'd aloft the horrid edge came down
 Wide wasting; such destruction to withstand
 He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb
 Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,
 A vast circumference:* at his approach 245
 The great arch-angel from his warlike toil
 Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end
 Intestin war in heav'n, the arch-foe subdu'd
 Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown
 And visage all inflam'd first thus began. 250
 Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
 Unnam'd in heaven, how hast thou disturb'd
 Heav'n's blessed peace, and into nature brought
 Misery, uncreated till the crime
 Of thy rebellion? How hast thou instill'd 255
 Thy malice into thousands, once upright
 And faithful, now prov'd false? But think not here
 To trouble holy rest: heav'n casts thee out
 From all her confines. Heav'n the seat of bliss
 Brooks not the works of violence and war. 260
 Hence then, (and evil go with thee along,
 Thy offspring,) to the place of evil, hell,
 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broils,

Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,
 Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God 265
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain.
 So spake the prince of angels; to whom thus
 The adversary. Nor think thou with wind
 Of aery threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these 270
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise
 Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence? Err not that so shall end 275
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we stile
 The strife of glory; which we mean to win,
 Or turn this heav'n itself into the hell
 Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign; mean while thy utmost force,
 And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid, 280
 I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.
 They ended parle, and both address'd for fight
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
 Of angels, can relate? Or to what things
 Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift 285
 Human imagination to such height
 Of godlike pow'r? For likest gods they seem'd,
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms
 Fit to decide the empire of great heaven.
 *Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air 290
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields
 Blaz'd opposit, while expectation stood
 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd,
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind 295

Of such commotion; such as, to set forth
 Great things by small, if nature's concord broke,
 Among the constellations war were sprung,
 Two planets rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition in mid sky 300
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.
 Together both next to almighty arm
 Up-lifted imminent; one stroke they aim'd
 That might determin, and not need repeat,
 As not of pow'r at once. Nor odds appear'd 305
 In might or swift prevention: but the sword
 Of Michael from the armoury of God
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 The sword of Satan with steep force to smite 310
 Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stay'd,
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep entring shared
 All his right side: then Satan first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound 315
 Pass'd through him: but th' ethereal substance clos'd,
 Not long divisible; and from the gash
 A stream of necta'rous humour issuing flow'd
 Sanguin, such as celestial spi'rits may bleed,
 And all his armour stain'd ere while so bright.* 320
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run
 By angels many and strong, who interpos'd
 Defence, while others bore him on their shields
 Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd
 From off the files of war; there they him laid 325
 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame,
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride

Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath
 His confidence to equal God in pow'r.
 *Yet soon he heal'd; for spi'rits that live throughout 330
 Vital in every part, not as frail man
 In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,
 Cannot but by annihilating die;
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
 Receive, no more than can the fluid air: 335
 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,
 All intellect, all sense; and as they please,
 They limb themselves, and colour, shape or size
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.*
 Mean while in other parts like deeds deserv'd 340
 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,
 And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array
 Of Moloch furious king; who him defy'd,
 And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of heaven 345
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon
 Down cloven to the waste, with shatter'd arms
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
 Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,
 Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd, 350
 Vanquish'd Adramelech, and Asmodai,
 Two potent thrones, that to be less than gods
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,
 Mangled with ghastly wounds through plate and mail.
 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy 355
 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow
 Ariel and Arioch, and the violence
 Of Ramiel scorch'd and blasted overthrew.
 I might relate of thousands, and their names

Eternize here on earth; but those elect 360
 Angels, contented with their fame in heaven,
 Seek not the praise of men: the other sort,
 Cancel'd from heav'n and sacred memory,
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.
 And now their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd, 365
 With many an inroad gor'd: deformed rout
 Enter'd and foul disorder; all the ground
 With shiver'd armour strown; what stood, recoil'd
 O'er-wearied, through the faint satanic host
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd. 370
 Far otherwise th' inviolable saints
 In cubic phalanx firm advanc'd entire,
 Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd;
 Such high advantages their innocence
 Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd, 375
 Not to have disobey'd; in fight they stood
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
 By wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.
 Now night her course began, and over heaven
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd, 380
 And silence on the odious din of war.
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,
 Victor and vanquish'd: on the foughten field
 Michael and his angels prevalent
 Incamping, plac'd in guard their watches round, 385
 Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,
 Far in the dark dislodg'd; and void of rest,
 His potentates to council call'd by night;
 And in the midst thus undismay'd begun. 390
 O now in danger try'd, now known in arms

Not to be overpow'r'd, companions dear,
 Found worthy not of liberty alone,
 Too mean pretence, but what we more affect,
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown;
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight 395
 (And if one day, why not eternal days?)
 What heaven's Lord had pow'rfullest to send
 Against us from about his throne, and judg'd
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,
 But proves not so: then fallible, it seems, 400
 Of future we may deem him, though till now
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,
 Some disadvantage we indur'd and pain,
 Till now not known, but known as soon contemn'd;
 Since now we find this our empyreal form 405
 Incapable of mortal injury,
 Imperishable, and though pierc'd with wound,
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.
 Of evil then so small as easy think
 The remedy; perhaps more valid arms, 410
 Weapons more violent, when next we meet,
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes,
 Or equal what between us made the odds,
 In nature none: if other hidden cause
 Left them superior, while we can preserve 415
 Unhurt our minds and understanding sound,
 Due search and consultation will disclose.
 He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood
 Nisroch, of principalities the prime;
 As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight, 420
 Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,
 And cloudy in aspect thus answ'ring spake.

Deliverer from new lords, leader to free
 Enjoyment of our right as gods; yet hard
 For gods, and too unequal work we find, 425
 Against unequal arms to fight in pain,
 Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil
 Ruin must needs ensue; *for what avails
 Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands 430
 Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,
 But pain is perfect misery, the worst
 Of evils, and excessive, overturns
 All patience.* He who therefore can invent 435
 With what more forcible we may offend
 Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm
 Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.
 Whereto with look compos'd Satan reply'd. 440
 Not uninvented that, which thou aright
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.
 Which of us who beholds the surface bright
 Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,
 This continent of spacious heav'n, adorn'd 445
 With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems and gold;
 Whose eye so superficially surveys
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spiritous and fiery spume, till touch'd 450
 With heaven's ray, and temper'd they shoot forth
 So beauteous, opening to the ambient light?
 These in their dark nativity the deep
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame;

Which into hallow engines long and round 455
 Thick ramm'd, at th' other bore with touch of fire
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth
 From far with thund'ring noise among our foes
 Such implements of mischief, as shall dash
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands 460
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd
 The Thund'rer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour; yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;
 Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd 465
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.
 He ended, and his words their drooping chear
 Inlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how he
 To be th' inventor miss'd; so easy it seem'd 470
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought
 Impossible. Yet haply of thy race
 In future days, if malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With devilish machination, might devise 475
 Like instrument to plague the sons of men
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from council to the work they flew;
 None arguing stood; innumerable hands
 Were ready; in a moment up they turn'd 480
 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath
 Th' originals of nature in their crude
 Conception; sulphurous and nitrous foam
 They found, they mingled, and with art reduc'd
 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd: 485
 Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth

Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,
 Whereof to found their engines and their balls
 Of missive ruin; part incentive reed
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 490
 So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,
 Secret they finish'd, and in order set,
 With silent circumspection unespy'd.
 Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appear'd,
 Up rose the victor angels, and to arms 495
 The matin trumpet sung. In arms they stood
 Of golden panoply, refulgent host,
 Soon banded; others from the dawning hills
 Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,
 Each quarter to descry the distant foe, 500
 Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,
 In motion or in halt. Him soon they met
 Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
 But firm battalion; back with speediest sail
 Zophiel, of cherubim the swiftest wing, 505
 Came fly'ing, and in mid air aloud thus cry'd.
 Arm, warriors, arm for fight; the foe at hand,
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
 This day; fear not his flight; so thick a cloud
 He comes, and settled in his face I see 510
 Sad resolution and secure: let each
 His adamantin⁵⁷ coat gird well, and each
 Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,
 Borne ev'n or high; for this day will pour down,
 If I conjecture ought, no drizzling shower, 515
 But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.

⁵⁷Orig., "adamant in"; a misprint.

So warn'd he them aware themselves, and soon
 In order, quit of all impediment;
 Instant without disturb they took alarm,
 And onward moved imbattel'd: when behold 520
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe
 Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube
 Training his devilish engin'ry, impal'd
 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 525
 A while; but suddenly at head appear'd
 Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.
 Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold;
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and composure, and with open breast 530
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse.
 So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
 Had ended; when to right and left the front
 Divided, and to either flank retir'd 535
 Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of pillars laid
 On wheels, for like to pillars most they seem'd,
 (Brass, iron, stony mould,) had not their mouths
 With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide, 540
 Portending hollow truce; at each behind
 A seraph stood, and in his hand a reed
 Held waving tipt with fire; while we suspense,
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd.
 Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds 545
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,
 But soon obscur'd with smoke, all heav'n appear'd,

From those deep-throated engins belch'd, whose roar
 Imboweld with outrageous noise the air 550
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
 Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail
 Of iron globes; which on the victor host
 Level'd, with such impetuous fury smote,
 That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand, 555
 Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell
 By thousands, angel on arch-angel roll'd;
 The sooner for their arms; unarm'd they might
 Have easily as spi'rits evaded swift
 By quick contraction or remove; but now 560
 Foul dissipation follow'd and forc'd rout.
 Nor serv'd it to relax their serried files.⁵⁸
 What should they do? If on they rush'd, repulse
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow
 Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd, 565
 And to their foes a laughter; for in view
 Stood rank'd of seraphim another row,
 In posture to displode their second tire
 Of thunder: back defeated to return
 They worse abhorr'd. Satan and all his host 570
 Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond
 All doubt of victory; eternal might
 To match with their inventions they presum'd
 So easy', and of his thunder made a scorn,
 And all his host derided, while they stood 575
 A while in trouble: but they stood not long;
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
 Against such hellish mischief fit to' oppose.
 *Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,
 Which God hath in his mighty angels plac'd) 580

⁵⁸Orig., "fies"; a misprint.

Their arms away they threw, and to the hills
 (For earth hath this variety from heaven
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)
 Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew. 585
 From their foundations loosning to and fro
 They pluck'd the seated hills with all their load,
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops
 Up-lifting bore them in their hands: amaze,
 Be sure, and terror seis'd the rebel host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw 590
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd;
 Till on those cursed engins triple-row
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep;
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads 595
 Main promontories flung, which in the air
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd;
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruis'd
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan, 600
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such pris'on, though spi'rits of purest light,
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest in imitation to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighb'ring hills uptore; 605
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade;*
 Infernal noise; war seem'd a civil game
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heap'd 610
 Upon confusion rose: and now all heaven
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread;

Had not th' Almighty Father, where he sits
 Shrin'd in his sanctuary of heav'n foreseen
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd: 615
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil,
 To honour his anointed Son aveng'd
 Upon his enemies, whence to his Son
 Th' assessor of his throne he thus began.

Effulgence of my glory, Son below'd, 620
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld
 Visibly, what by deity I am,
 And in whose hand what by decree I do,
 Second Omnipotence, two days are past,
 Two days, as we compute the days of heaven, 625
 Since Michael and his pow'rs went forth to tame
 These disobedient: sore hath been their fight,
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd;
 For to themselves I left them, and thou know'st,
 Equal in their creation they were form'd. 630
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine;
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine
 Of ending this great war, since none but thou
 Can end it. Into thee such virtue' and grace 635
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know
 In heav'n and hell thy pow'r above compare.
 Go then thou mightiest, in thy Father's might,
 Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels
 That shake heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war, 640
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms;
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out
 From all heav'n's bounds into the utter deep;

There let them learn, as likes them, to despise 645
 God and Messiah his anointed King.
 He said, and on his Son with rays direct
 Shone full; he all his Father full express'd
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd;
 And thus the filial godhead answ'ring spake. 650
 O Father, O Supreme of heav'nly thrones,
 First, highest, holiest, best, thou always seek'st
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee,
 As is most just; this I my glory' account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight. 655
 Soon shall clear I all heav'n of these rebell'd,
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,
 To chains of darkness. So said, he arose
 From the right hand of glory where he sat; 660
 And the third sacred morn began to shine,
 *Dawning through heav'n: forth rush'd with whirlwind sound
 The chariot of paternal Deity,
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,
 Itself instinct with spirit, but convoy'd 665
 By four cherubic shapes; four faces each
 Had wondrous; as with stars their bodies all
 And wings were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels
 Of beril, and carreering fires between.
 Over their heads a crystal firmament, 670
 Whereon a saphir throne, inlaid with pure
 Amber, and colours of the show'ry arch.
 He in celestial panoply all arm'd
 Of radiant urim, work divinely wrought,
 Ascended; at his right hand victory 675
 Sat eagle-wing'd; beside him hung his bow
 And quiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd,

And from about him fierce effusion roll'd
 Of smoke and bickering flame and sparkles dire:
 Attended with ten thousand thousand saints, 680
 He onward came, far off his coming shone;
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen:
 He on the wings of cherub rode sublime
 On the crystallin sky, in saphir thron'd, 685
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own
 First seen; them unexpected joy surpris'd,
 When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd
 Aloft by angels borne, his sign in heaven;*
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd 690
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,
 Under their head imbodied all in one.
 *Before him pow'r divine his way prepar'd.
 At his command th' uprooted hills retir'd
 Each to his place; they heard his voice, and went 695⁵⁹
 Obsequious; heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.*
 This saw his hapless foes but stood obdur'd,
 And to rebellious fight rallied their powers
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair. 700
 In heav'nly spi'rits could such perverseness dwell?
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,
 Or wonders move th' obdurate to relent?
 They harden'd more by what might most reclame,
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight 705
 Took envy; and aspiring to his heighth,
 Stood reimbattel'd fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall

⁵⁹Orig., "995"; a misprint.

In universal ruin lost⁶⁰; and now 710
 To final battle drew, disdain'g flight,
 Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
 To all his host on either hand thus spake.
 Stand still in bright array, ye saints, here stand
 Ye angels arm'd, this day from battle rest. 715
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause.
 And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done
 Invincibly; but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs. 720
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd
 Nor multitude; stand only and behold
 God's indignation on these godless pour'd
 By me; not you but me they have despis'd.
 *So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd 725
 His count'nance too severe to be beheld,
 And full of wrath bent on his enemies.
 At once the four spread out their starry wings
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
 Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound 730
 Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host.
 He on his impious foes right onward drove,
 Gloomy as night; under his burning wheels
 The stedfast empyrean shook throughout,
 All but the throne itself of God. Full soon 735
 Among them he arriv'd, in his right hand
 Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent
 Before him, such as in their souls infix'd
 Plagues; they astonish'd all resistance lost,
 All courage; down their idle weapons dropt. 740
 O'er shields and helms and helmed heads he rode

⁶⁰Milton's original has "last." JW's text may be a misprint, or perhaps a purposeful change.

Of thrones and mighty seraphim prostrate,
 That wish'd the mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell 735⁶¹
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd four
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;
 One spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
 Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire 740⁶²
 Among th' accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength,
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 His thunder in mid volly; for he meant 745
 Not to destroy, but root them out of heaven.*
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd
 Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd
 Drove them before him thunder-struck, to th' bounds
 And crystal wall of heav'n, which opening wide, 750
 Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd
 Into the wasteful deep; the monstrous sight
 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse
 Urg'd them behind; headlong themselves they threw
 Down from the verge of heav'n; eternal wrath 755
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.
 *Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, hell saw
 Heav'n ruining from heav'n and would have fled
 Affrighted; but strict fate had cast too deep
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 760
 Nine days they fell; confounded Chaos roar'd,
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout

⁶¹A misprint showed "735" twice, with the first occurrence on the previous page.

⁶²A misprint showed "740" twice, with the first occurrence on the previous page.

Incumber'd him with ruin: hell at last
 Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd; 765
 Hell their fit habitation fraught with fire
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.*
 Disburden'd heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.
 Sole victor from th' expulsion of his foes 770
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd:
 To meet him all his saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,
 With jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,
 Shaded with branching palm, each order bright 775
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord. He celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid heav'n, into the courts
 And temple of his mighty Father thron'd
 On high; who into glory him receiv'd, 780
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.
 Thus measuring things in heav'n by things on earth,
 At thy request, and that thou may'st beware
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd
 What might have else to human race been hid; 785
 The discord which befel, and war in heaven
 Among th' angelic pow'rs, and the deep fall
 Of those too⁶³ high aspiring, who rebell'd
 With Satan: him who envies now thy state
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce 790
 Thee also from obedience, that with him
 Bereav'd of happiness thou may'st partake
 His punishment, eternal misery.
 But listen not to his temptations, warn

⁶³Orig., "to"; a misprint.

Thy weaker; let it profit thee to' have heard
 By terrible example the reward
 Of disobedience; firm they might have stood,
 Yet fell; remember, and fear to transgress.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VI.

- Ver. 16.⁶⁴ “War in procinct”—The Roman soldiers were said to stand in procinct, when they were just ready for the onset.
- Ver. 40. “Prowess”—Valour.
- Ver. 56. “Militant”—Warring.
- Ver. 64. “Obvious”—Lying in their way.
- Ver. 73.⁶⁵ “This terrene”—This earth.
- Ver. 74. “In the horizon”—The part which bounds the view.
- Ver. 78. “Rigid”—Stiff, firm. “Pourtraid”—Painted [Ver. 79].
- Ver. 81. “They ween’d”—Thought. “Hosting”—Encounter [Ver. 88].
- Ver. 96. “Idol of majesty divine”—Mimicking it.
- Ver. 108. “And thus”—Reasons within himself.
- Ver. 110. “Realty”—Reality: no substance.
- Ver. 159. “The minstrelsy”—Musicians *of heaven*.
- Ver. 177. “Erst”—A while since. “Lewdly”—Profanely, impiously [Ver. 172].

⁶⁴Orig., “18”; a misprint.

⁶⁵Orig., “70”; a misprint.

- Ver. 226. “The ridges”—The ranks are figuratively so called, alluding to a ploughed field.
- Ver. 229. “The moment”—Is the weight which turns the scales, equally poised before.
- Ver. 268. “The adversary”—Of God and man, emphatically so called.
- Ver. 278. “Here however” we mean “to dwell free.”
- Ver. 312.⁶⁶ “Shared”—Pierced thro’. To “gride” is to cut [Ver. 315].
- Ver. 314. “Convolved”—Bowed together.
- Ver. 315. “Discontinuous”—Dividing the parts from each other.
- Ver. 334. “Liquid”—Pliable, flexible; not solid or hard.
- Ver. 354. “Plate” is broad, solid armour; “Mail” is composed of small pieces like fish-scales.
- Ver. 365.⁶⁷ “Swerved”—Leaned to one side.
- Ver. 372. “Cubic phalanx”—Square every way.
- Ver. 377. “Unobnoxious”—Not liable.
- Ver. 400.⁶⁸ “Fallible of future”—Liable to mistake as to future events.
- Ver. 450. “Spume”—Froth.
- Ver. 452. “Ambient”—Surrounding.
- Ver. 453. “In their nativity”—Their native bed.
- Ver. 454. “Infernal flame”—Though they had not yet seen it, they had heard of hell.
- Ver. 475. “Machination”—Contrivance: “Crude”—Unripe [Ver. 482].
- Ver. 488. “To found”—To cast in moulds.
- Ver. 489. “Missive” weapons are those that are shot or thrown.
 “Incentive reed”—Easy to take or kindle fire.
 “Pernicious”—Quick, speedy [Ver. 490].
- Ver. 491. “Under conscious night”—During the night, which was privy to their designs.
- Ver. 497. “Panoply”—Compleat armour.

⁶⁶Orig., “311”; a misprint.

⁶⁷Orig., “336”; a misprint.

⁶⁸Orig., “401”; a misprint.

- Ver. 511. “Sad”—Sour and sullen.
 Ver. 516. “Barbed”—Bearded, headed.
 Ver. 523. “Training”—Drawing. “Impaled”—Coverd.
 Ver. 550. “Embowel’d”—Tore the bowels of it.
 Ver. 562.⁶⁹ “To relax their serried files”—To open their close ranks.
 Ver. 568. “To displode”—To discharge. “Tire”—Row.
 Ver. 607. “Jaculation”—Darting, tossing.
 Ver. 615. “Advised”—Of set purpose.
 Ver. 619. “The assessor⁷⁰ of his throne”—Who sat by him on his throne.
 Ver. 669. “Beril” is a precious stone of a sea green colour.
 “And careering fires between”—Striking forward, whirling, flashing: lightnings, darting out strait, then turning quick every way.
 Ver. 674. “Urim”—Light.
 Ver. 679.⁷¹ “Bickering flame”—Breaking out in sudden flashes, and kindling it to fury, Ezek. i. 4. it is a *fire infolding itself*: literally, *fire catching itself*.
 Ver. 691. “Circumfused”—Spread around.
 Ver. 698. “Obdured”—Hardened.
 Ver. 758. “Ruining”—Rushing violently.
 Ver. 769. “Her mural breach”—The breach in her wall.

⁶⁹Orig., “561”; a misprint.

⁷⁰Orig., “assessors”; a misprint.

⁷¹Orig., “678”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VII.

The Argument.

Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declar'd his pleasure to create another world and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory and attendance of angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into heaven.

Adam mean time with his consorted Eve
The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
With admiration and deep muse, to hear
Of things so high and strange; but soon repell'd
The doubts that in his heart arose: and now 5
Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
What nearer might concern him, how this world
Of heav'n and earth conspicuous first began,
Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 10
Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,
Divine interpreter, by favor sent
Down from the empyrean to forwarn
Us timely' of what might else have been our loss,

Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach: 15
 For which to th' infinitely Good we owe
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
 Receive with solemn purpose to observe
 Immutably his sov'reign will, the end
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 20
 Gently for our instruction to impart
 Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avail us known, 25
 *How first began this heav'n which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd
 Innumerable, and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd
 Embracing round this florid earth,* what cause 30
 Mov'd the Creator in his holy rest
 Through all eternity so late to build
 In Chaos, and the work begun, how soon
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou may'st unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 35
 Of his eternal empire, but the more
 To magnify his works, the more we know.
 *And the great light of day yet wants to run
 Much of his race though steep; suspense in heaven,
 Held by thy voice; thy potent voice he hears, 40
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 His generation, and the rising birth
 Of nature from the unapparent deep:
 Or if the star of evening and the moon
 Haste to thy audience, night with her will bring 45
 Silence, and sleep list'ning to thee will watch,

Or we can bid his absence, till thy song
 End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.*
 Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought:
 And thus the godlike angel answer'd mild. 50
 This also thy request with caution ask'd
 Obtain: though to recount almighty works
 What words or tongue of seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve 55
 To glorify the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing, such commission from above
 I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire
 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain 60
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,
 Only omniscient, hath suppress'd in night,
 To none communicable in earth or heaven:
 Enough is left besides to search and know. 65
 *But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her temp'rance over appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain;
 Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns
 Wisdom to folly', as nourishment to wind.* 70
 Know then, that after Lucifer from heaven
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the host
 Of angels, than that star the stars among)
 Fell with his flaming legions through the deep
 Into his place, and the great Son return'd 75
 Victorious with his saints, th' Omnipotent
 Eternal Father from his throne beheld
 Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 80
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of deity supreme, us dispossess'd,
 He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no more.
 Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 85
 Their station, heaven yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her realms
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
 With ministeries due and solemn rites.
 But lest his heart exalt him in the harm 90
 Already done, to have dispeopled heaven,
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair
 That detriment, (if such it be to lose
 Self-lost,) and in a moment will create
 Another world, out of one man a race 95
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here, till under long obedience try'd.
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
 This I perform, speak thou, and be it done:
 My overshadowing Spi'rit and might with thee 100
 I send along; ride forth, and bid the deep
 Within appointed bounds be heav'n and earth.
 Boundless the deep, because I am who fill
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
 So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake 105
 His Word the filial godhead, gave effect.
 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift
 Than time or motion, but to human ears
 Cannot without process of speech be told,
 So told as earthly notion can receive. 110

Great triumph and rejoicing was in heaven,
 When such was heard declar'd th' Almighty's will;
 Glory they sung to the Most High, good-will
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace:
 Glory to him, whose just avenging ire 115
 Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight
 And th' habitations of the just; to him
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
 Good out of evil to create, instead
 Of spi'rits malign a better race to bring 120
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse
 His good to worlds and ages infinite.

*So sang the hierarchies: mean while the Son
 On his great expedition now appear'd,
 Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd 125
 Of majesty divine; sapience, and love
 Immense, and all his Father in him shone.
 About his chariot numberless were pour'd
 Cherub and seraph, potentates and thrones,
 And virtues, winged spi'rits, and chariots wing'd 130
 From th' armoury of God, where stand of old
 Myriads between two brazen mountains lodg'd
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,
 Celestial equipage; and now came forth
 Spontaneous, for within them spirit liv'd, 135
 Attendant on their Lord: heav'n open'd wide
 Her ever during gates, harmonious sound
 On golden hinges moving, to let forth
 The King of Glory in his pow'rful Word
 And Spirit coming to create new worlds. 140
 On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
 They view'd the vast immeasurable abyss

Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds
 And surging waves, as mountains, to assault 145
 Heav'n's height, and with the center mix the pole.
 *Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou deep, peace,
 Said then th' omnific Word, your discord end:
 Nor stay'd, but on the wings of cherubim
 Uplifted, in paternal glory rode 150
 Far into Chaos, and the world unborn;
 For Chaos heard his voice: him all his train
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.
 Then stay'd the fervid wheels, and in his hand 155
 He took the golden compasses, prepar'd
 In God's eternal store, to circumscribe
 This universe, and all created things:
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profundity obscure, 160
 And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,
 This be thy just circumference, O world.*
 Thus God the heav'n created, thus the earth,
 Matter unform'd and void: darkness profound
 Cover'd th' abyss: but on the watry calm 165
 His brooding wings the Spi'rit of God outspread,
 And vital virtue' infus'd, and vital warmth
 Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purg'd
 The black tartareous cold infernal dregs
 Adverse to life: then founded, then conglob'd 170
 Like things to like, the rest to several place
 Disparted, and between spun out the air,
 And earth self-balanc'd on her center hung.
 *Let there be light, said God, and forthwith light

Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure 175
 Sprung from the deep, and from her native east
 To journey through the aery gloom began,
 Spher'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun
 Was not; she in a cloudy tabernacle
 Sojourn'd the while.* God saw the light was good; 180
 And light from darkness by the hemisphere
 Divided: light the day, and darkness night
 *He nam'd. Thus was the first day ev'n and morn:
 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
 By the celestial choirs, when orient light 185
 Exhaling first from darkness they beheld;
 Birth-day of heav'n and earth; with joy and shout
 The hollow universal orb they fill'd,*
 And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd
 God and his works, Creator him they sung, 190
 Both when first evening was, and when first morn.
 Again, God said, Let there be firmament
 Amid the waters, and let it divide
 The waters from the waters: and God made
 The firmament, expanse of liquid pure, 195
 Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd
 In circuit to the uttermost convex
 Of this great round: partition firm and sure,
 The waters underneath from those above
 Dividing: for as earth, so he the world 200
 Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide
 Crystallin ocean, and the loud misrule
 Of Chaos far remov'd, lest fierce extremes
 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:
 And heav'n he nam'd the firmament: so even 205
 And morning chorus sung the second day.

The earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet
 Of waters, embryon immature involv'd,
 Appear'd not: over all the face of earth
 Main ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warm 210
 Prolific humor soft'ning all her glebe,
 Fermented the great mother to conceive,
 Sate with genial moisture, when God said,
 Be gather'd now ye waters under heaven
 Into one place, and let dry land appear. 215
 *Immediately the mountains huge appear
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
 Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky:
 So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep. 220
 Capacious bed of waters:* thither they
 Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry.
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste; such flight the great command impress'd 225
 On the swift floods: as armies at the call
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to their standard, so the watry throng,
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,
 If steep with torrent rapture, if through plain, 230
 Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them rock or hill,
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With serpent error wand'ring, found their way,
 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore;
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry, 235
 *All but within those banks, where rivers now
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.*
 The dry land, earth, and the great receptacle

Of congregated waters he call'd seas:
 And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' earth 240
 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed,
 And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,
 Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.
 He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd, 245
 *Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad
 Her universal face with pleasant green:
 Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flow'rd
 Opening their various colours, and made gay
 Her bosom smelling sweet: and these scarce blown, 250
 Forth flourish'd thick the clustring vine, forth crept
 The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed
 Imbattl'd in her field, and th' humble shrub,
 And bush with frizled hair implicit: last
 Rose as in dance the stately trees, and spread 255
 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd,
 Their blossoms: with high woods the hills were crown'd,
 With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side,
 With borders long the rivers: that earth now
 Seem'd like to heav'n, a seat where gods might dwell,* 260
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt
 Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd
 Upon the earth, and man to till the ground
 None was, but from the earth a dewy mist
 Went up and water'd all the ground, and each 265
 Plant of the field, which, ere it was in th' earth
 God made, and every herb, before it grew
 On the green stem; God saw that it was good:
 So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.
 Again th' Almighty spake, Let there be lights 270

High in th' expanse of heaven to divide
 The day from night; and let them be for signs,
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years,
 And let them be for lights as I ordain
 Their office in the firmament of heaven 275
 To give light on the earth; and it was so.
 And God made two great lights, great for their use
 To man, the greater to have rule by day,
 The less by night altern; and made the stars,
 And set them in the firmament of heaven 280
 To' illuminate the earth, and rule the day
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night,
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great work, that it was good.
 *Of the celestial bodies first the sun 285
 A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first,
 Though of ethereal mold: then form'd the moon
 Globose, and every magnitude of stars,
 And sow'd with stars the heav'n thick as a field:
 Of light by far the greater part he took, 290
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the liquid light, firm to retain
 Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.
 Hither as to their fountain other stars 295
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,
 And hence the morning planet gilds her horns.*
 By tincture or reflection they augment
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen. 300
 *First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,
 Regent of day, and all th' horizon round

Invested with bright rays, jocund to run
 His longitude through heav'n's high road; the gray
 Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd 305
 Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon,
 But opposite in level'd west was set
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light
 From him, for other light she needed none
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps 310
 Till night, then in the east shines, and her reign
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,*
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd
 Spangling the hemisphere: then first adorn'd
 With their bright luminaries that set and rose, 315
 Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.
 And God said, Let the waters generate
 Reptil with spawn abundant, living soul:
 And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings
 Display'd on the' open firmament of heaven. 320
 And God created the great whales, and each
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
 The waters generated by their kinds,
 And every bird of wing after his kind;
 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying, 325
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas
 And lakes and running streams the waters fill;
 And let the fowl be multiply'd on th' earth.
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 330
 *Of fishes that with fins and shining scales
 Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft
 Bank the mid sea: part single or with mate
 Graze the sea weed their pasture, and through groves

Of coral stray, or sporting with quick glance 335
 Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold,*
 Or in their pearly shells at ease, attend
 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food
 In jointed armour watch: on smooth the seal,
 And bended dolphins play: part huge of bulk 340
 Wallowing unwieldy', enormous in their gate
 Tempest the ocean: there leviathan,
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
 Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps or swims,
 And seems a moving land, and at his gills 345
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.
 Mean while the tepid caves, and fens and shores
 Their brood as numerous hatch, from th' egg that soon
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd
 Their callow young, but feather'd soon and fledge 350
 They summ'd their pens, and soaring th' air sublime
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect; there the eagle and the stork
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build:
 Part loosly wing the region, part more wise 355
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their aery caravan high over seas
 Flying, and over lands with mutual wing
 Easing their flight; (so steers the prudent crane 360
 Her annual voyage,) borne on winds⁷²; the air
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes.
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song
 Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings
 Till ev'n, nor then the solemn nightingale 365
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays:

⁷²Orig., "wings"; a misprint.

Others on silver lakes and rivers bath'd
 Their downy breast; *the swan with arched neck
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows
 Her state with oary feet; yet oft they quit 370
 The dank, and rising on stiff pennons, tower
 The mid aerial sky: others on ground
 Walk'd firm; the crested cock whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours, and th' other whose gay train
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue 375
 Of rainbows and starry' eyes.* The waters thus
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,
 Evening and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.
 The sixth, and of creation last arose
 With evening harps and matin, when God said, 380
 Let th' earth bring forth fowl⁷³ living in her kind,
 Cattel and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,
 Each in their kind. The earth obey'd, and strait
 Opening her fertile womb teem'd at a birth
 Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 385
 Limb'd and full grown: out of the ground up rose
 As from his lair the wild beast where he wons
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den;
 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd:
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green: 390
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.
 *The grassy clods now calv'd, now half appear'd
 The tawny lion, pawing to get free
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bands, 395
 And rampant shakes his brinded mane, the ounce,
 The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw

⁷³Orig., "foul"; likely a misprint. Milton's original uses "fowl," apparently referring to domestic birds like chickens, by contrast with the wild birds created on day five. Richard Bentley opted to change this word to "soul," to reflect Gen. 1:24: "a living soul."

In hillocks: the swift stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head:* scarce from his mold 400
 Behemoth biggest born of earth upheav'd
 His vastness: fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,
 As plants: ambiguous between sea and land
 The river horse and scaly crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground 405
 *Insect or worm: those wav'd their limber fans
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride
 With spots of gold and purple', azure and green:
 These as a line their long dimensions drew, 410
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all
 Minims of nature: some of serpent kind,
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involv'd
 Their snaky folds, and added wings.* First crept
 The parsimonious emmet, provident 415
 Of future, in small room large heart inclos'd,
 Pattern of just equality perhaps
 Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes
 Of commonalty: swarming next appear'd
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 420
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells
 With honey stor'd: the rest are numberless,
 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,
 Needless to thee repeated. Nor unknown
 The serpent subtlest beast of all the field, 425
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 And hairy mane terrific, though to thee
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.
 *Now heav'n in all her glory shone, and roll'd
 Her motions as the great First Mover's hand 430

First wheel'd their course; earth in her rich attire
 Consummate lovely smil'd;* air, water, earth,
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd
 Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remain'd.
 There wanted yet the master work, the end 435
 Of all yet done; a creature who not prone
 And brute as other creatures, but indued
 With sanctity of reason, might erect
 His stature, and upright with front serene
 Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 440
 Magnanimous to correspond with heaven,
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes
 Directed in devotion, to adore
 And worship God supreme, who made him chief 445
 Of all his works: therefore th' Omnipotent
 Eternal Father (for where is not he
 Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake.
 Let us make now man in our image, man
 In our similitude, and let them rule 450
 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,
 Beast of the field, and over all the earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O man,
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd 455
 The breath of life, in his own image he
 Created thee, in the image of God
 Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.
 Male he created thee, but thy consort
 Female for race; then bless'd mankind, and said, 460
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth,
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold

Over fish of the sea, and fowl of th' air,
 And every living thing that moves on th' earth
 Wherever thus created, (for no place 465
 Is yet distinct by name,) thence, as thou know'st,
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste;
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 470
 Gave thee; all sorts are here that all th' earth yields,
 Variety without end; but of the tree,
 Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,
 Thou may'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou dy'st.
 Death is the penalty impos'd, beware, 475
 And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
 So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the sixth day: 480
 Yet not till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,
 Up to the heav'n of heav'ns his high abode,
 Thence to behold this new created world
 Th' addition of his empire, how it show'd 485
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
 Answering his great idea. Up he rode
 Follow'd with acclamation and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps that tun'd
 Angelic harmonies: the earth, the air 490
 Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heardst)
 The heav'ns and all the constellations rung,
 The planets in their station list'ning stood,
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.

Open, ye everlasting gates, they sung, 495
 Open, ye heav'ns, your living doors; let in
 The great Creator from his work return'd
 Magnificent, his six days' work, a world.
 Open, and henceforth oft'; for God will deign
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men 500
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
 Thither will send his winged messengers
 On errands of supernal grace. So sung
 The glorious train ascending: he through heaven,
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 505
 To God's eternal house direct the way,
 A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,
 Seen in the galaxy, that Milky Way,
 Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest 510
 Powder'd with stars. And now on earth the seventh
 Evening arose in Eden, for the sun
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,
 Forerunning night; when at the holy mount
 Of heav'n's high-seated top, th' imperial throne 515
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,
 The filial pow'r arriv'd, and from his work
 Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day,
 As resting on that day from all his work;
 But not in silence only⁷⁴ kept; the harp 520
 Had work and rested not, of incense clouds
 Fuming from golden censers hid the mount.
 Creation and the six days' acts they sung,
 Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite
 Thy pow'r; what thought can measure thee or tongue 525
 Relate thee? Greater now in thy return

⁷⁴Milton's original has "holy"; it is unclear whether this is a misprint or a purposeful change.

Than from the giant angels. Thee that day
 Thy thunders magnify'd; but to create
 Is greater than created to destroy.
 Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound 530
 Thy empire? Easily the proud attempt
 Of spi'rits apostate and their counsels vain
 Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks 535
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 To manifest the more thy might; his evil
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
 Witness this new-made world, another heaven
 From heaven gate not far, founded in view 540
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea:
 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars
 Numerous, and every star perhaps a world
 Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st
 Their seasons: among these the seat of men, 545
 Earth with her nether ocean circumfus'd,
 Their pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy men,
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc'd,
 Created in his image, there to dwell
 And worship him, and in reward to rule 550
 Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,
 And multiply a race of worshippers
 Holy and just: thrice happy if they know
 Their happiness, and persevere upright.
 So sung they, and the empyrean rung, 555
 With hallelujahs: thus was Sabbath kept.
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd
 How first this world and face of things began,

And what before thy memory was done
 From the beginning, that posterity 560
 Inform'd by thee might know; if else thou seek'st
 Ought, not surpassing human measure, say.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VII.

- Ver. 29. "Interfused"—Insinuating into and betwixt all other bodies.
- Ver. 94. "Self-lost"—Those who destroy themselves.
- Ver. 126. "Sapience"—Wisdom.
- Ver. 132. The thought is taken from Zech. vi. 1.
- Ver. 148. "Omnific"—All creating.
- Ver. 170. "Founded" and "conglobed"—Caused them to mingle and cleave together.
- Ver. 181. "By the hemisphere, divided"—One half of the globe being inlightened, the other, not.
- Ver. 192. It is not called the "firmament," as being a solid body, but as being a partition firm and immovable.
- Ver. 201. "Circumfluous"—Flowing round it.
- Ver. 230. "With torrent rapture"—Pouring on swiftly and violently.

- Ver. 233. “With serpent error”—Creeping round about.
 Ver. 234. “Oose”—Sea or river mud.
 Ver. 248. “Then” the earth brought forth “herbs.”
 Ver. 252. “Corny”—Stiff like horn.
 Ver. 254. “Implicit”—Intangled.
 Ver. 256. “Gemm’d”—Budded forth.
 Ver. 279. “Altern”—By turns.
 Ver. 297. “The morning planet,” Venus—Varies her appearances, just as the moon does.
 Ver. 300. Being “so far remote,” they appear much less than they are.
 Ver. 304. “His longitude”—His course from east to west.
 Ver. 305. “The Pleiades”—The seven stars.
 Ver. 332. “Sculls”—Sholes so large as to appear like banks in the sea.
 Ver. 337. “Attend”—Wait for.
 Ver. 339. “The seal”—Sea calf.
 Ver. 347. “Tepid”—Warm.
 Ver. 351. “Summ’d their pens”—Gathered⁷⁵ their feathers close which had attained their full strength.
 Ver. 354. “Eyries” are eagles’ nests.
 Ver. 356. “Wedge their way”—Fly in the form of a wedge, with the point foremost.
 Ver. 357. “Intelligent of seasons”—Understanding that the winter season approaches.
 Ver. 374. “The’ other”—The peacock.
 Ver. 387. “His lair”—His bed or place of rest. “He wons”—Dwells, is wont to be.
 Ver. 393. “Calved”—Brought forth.
 Ver. 396. “The ounce”—More usually term’d lynx.
 Ver. 411. “Sinuous”—Winding.

⁷⁵Orig., “Gatheed”; a misprint.

- Ver. 412. “Minims of nature”—The least of nature’s works.
Ver. 436. “Prone”—Hanging the head downward.
Ver. 546. “Her nether ocean”—Which is *the waters under the firmament*.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VIII.

The Argument.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions, is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge: Adam assents, and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his own creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the angel thereupon; who after admonitions repeated departs.

The angel ended, and in Adam's ear
So charming left his voice, that he a while
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear;
Then as new wak'd thus gratefully reply'd.
 What thanks sufficient, or what recompense 5
Equal have I to render thee, divine
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd
This friendly condescension, to relate
Things else by me unsearchable, now heard 10
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
With glory attributed to the high
Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,
Which only thy solution can resolve.
When I behold this goodly frame, this world 15
Of heav'n and earth consisting, and compute

Their magnitudes, this earth a spot, a grain,
 An atom, with the firmament compar'd
 And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll
 Space incomprehensible (for such 20
 Their distance argues and their swift return
 Diurnal) merely to officiate light
 Round this opacious earth, this punctual spot
 One day and night, in all their vast survey
 Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire, 25
 How nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater⁷⁶ so manifold to this one use,
 For ought appears, and on their orbs impose 30
 Such restless revolution day by day
 Repeated, while the sedentary earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives, 35
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness, number fails.
 So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seem'd
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse, which Eve 40
 Perceiving where she sat retir'd in sight,
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose; and went forth among her fruits and flowers,
 To visit how they prosper, bud and bloom. 45
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd,

⁷⁶Orig., "Creator"; a misprint.

Adam relating, she sole auditress;
 Her husband the relater she preferr'd 50
 Before the angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix
 Grateful digression, and solve high dispute
 With conjugal caresses; from his lip
 Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now 55
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?
 And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
 Benevolent and facil thus reply'd.
 To ask or search I blame thee not, for heaven
 Is as the book of God before thee set, 60
 Wherein to read his wond'rous works, and learn
 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years.
 This to attain, whether heav'n move or earth
 Imports not, if thou reckon right. The rest
 From man or angel the great Architect 65
 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
 Rather admire; or if they lift to try
 Conjecture, he his fabric of the heavens
 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move 70
 His laughter at their quaint opinions wide.
 Already by thy reasoning this I guess,
 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
 The less not bright, nor heav'n such journeys run, 75
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
 The benefit. Consider first, that great
 Or bright infers not excellence: the earth
 Though, in comparison of heav'n, so small,
 Nor glist'ring, may of solid good contain 80

More plenty than the sun that barren shines,
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect,
 But in the fruitful earth; there first receiv'd
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
 Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries 85
 Officious, but to the earth's habitant.
 And for the heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak
 The Maker's high magnificence, who built
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far:
 That man may know he dwells not in his own; 90
 An edifice too large for him to fill,
 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
 The swiftness of those circles attribute,
 Though numberless, to his omnipotence, 95
 That to corporeal substances could add
 Speed almost spiritual. Me thou think'st not slow,
 Who since the morning hour set out from heaven
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd
 In Eden, distance inexpressible 100
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,
 Admitting motion in the heav'ns, to show
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd.
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth. 105
 God to remove his ways from human sense,
 Plac'd heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,
 If it presume, might err in things too high,
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun
 Be center to the world, and other stars 110
 By his attractive virtue and their own
 Incited, dance about him various rounds?

In six thou seest, and what if seventh to these,
 If earth industrious of herself fetch day
 Travelling east, and with her part averse 115
 From the sun's beams meet night, her other part
 Still lumi'nous by his ray? What if that light
 Sent from her through the wide transpicuous air,
 To the terrestrial moon be as a star
 Inlightning her by day, as she by night 120
 This earth? Reciprocal, if land be there,
 Fields and inhabitants: her spots thou seest
 As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
 Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat
 Allotted there; and other suns perhaps 125
 With their attendant moons thou wilt descry,
 Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.
 *But whether thus these things, or whether not,
 Whether the sun predominant in heaven
 Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun, 130
 He from the east his flaming road begin,
 Or she from west her silent course advance
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
 On her soft axle, while she paces even,
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along, 135
 Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,
 Leave them to God above, him serve and fear;
 Of other creatures, as him pleases best,
 Wherever plac'd, let him dispose: joy thou
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise 140
 And thy fair Eve, heav'n is for thee too high
 To know what passes there; be lowly wise:*
 Think only what concerns thee and thy being;
 Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there

Live, in what state, condition or degree, 145
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd
 Not of earth only but of highest heaven.
 To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, reply'd.
 How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure
 Intelligence of heav'n, angel serene, 150
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of life, from which
 God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,
 And not molest us, unless we ourselves 155
 Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.
 But apt the mind or fancy is to rove
 Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn,
 That not to know at large of things remote 160
 From use, obscure or subtle, but to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime wisdom; what is more, is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,
 And renders us in things that most concern 165
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise
 Of something not unseasonable to ask 170
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 Thee I have heard relating what was done
 Ere my remembrance: now hear me relate
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard;
 And day is yet not spent; till then thou seest 175
 How subtly to detain thee I devise,

Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:
 *For while I sit with thee, I seem in heaven, 180
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
 Than fruit of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
 Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill
 Though pleasant, but thy words with grace divine 185
 Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety.*
 To whom thus Raphael answer'd heav'nly meek.
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, sire of men
 Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee,
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 190
 Inward and outward both, his image fair:
 Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace
 Attend thee, and each word, each motion form.
 Nor less think we in heav'n of thee on earth
 Than of our fellow servant, and inquire 195
 Gladly into the ways of God with man:
 For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set
 On man his equal love: say therefore on:
 For I that day was absent, as befel,
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 200
 Far on excursion tow'ard the gates of hell;
 Squar'd in full legion (such command we had)
 To see that none thence issued forth a spy,
 Or enemy, while God was at his work.
 Lest he incens'd at such eruption bold, 205
 Destruction with creation might have mix'd.
 We found fast shut the dismal gates and strong;
 But long ere our approaching heard within
 Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,

Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage. 210
 Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light
 Ere Sabbath evening: so we had in charge.
 But thy relation now; for I attend,
 Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.
 So spake the godlike pow'r, and thus our sire. 215
 *For man to tell how human life began
 Is hard; for who himself beginning knew?
 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induced me. As new waked from soundest sleep
 Soft on the flow'ry herb I found me laid 220
 In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun
 Soon dry'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.
 Strait toward heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,
 And gazed a while the ample sky, till rais'd
 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung, 225
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright
 Stood on my feet; about me round I saw
 Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,
 And liquid lapse of murm'ring streams; by these,
 Creatures that liv'd and mov'd and walk'd, or flew, 230
 Birds on the branches warbling: all things smil'd
 With fragrance; and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.
 Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints, and lively vigour led: 235
 But who I was, or where, or from what cause,
 Knew not; to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake;
 My tongue obey'd and readily could name
 Whate'er I saw. Thou sun, said I, fair light,
 And thou inlighten'd earth, so fresh and gay, 240
 Ye hills, and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains,

And ye that live and move, fair creatures, tell,
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?
 Not of myself; by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power pre-eminent. 245
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier than I know.
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld 250
 This happy light, when answer none return'd,
 On a green shady bank profuse of flowers
 Pensive I sat me down; there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression sies'd
 My droused sense, untroubled, though I thought 255
 I then was passing to my former state
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:*
 *When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 My fancy to believe I yet had being, 260
 And liv'd: one came, methought, of shape divine,
 And said, thy mansion wants thee, Adam, rise,
 First man, of men innumerable ordain'd
 First father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide
 To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd. 265
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,
 And over fields and waters, as in air
 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,
 A circuit wide, inclos'd, with goodliest trees 270
 Planted, with walks, and bow'rs, that what I saw
 Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree
 Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to th' eye

Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eat: whereat I wak'd, and found 275
 Before mine eyes all real, as the dream
 Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun
 My wand'ring, had not he who was my Guide
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,
 Presence divine.* Rejoicing, but with awe, 280
 In adoration at his feet I fell
 Submiss: he rear'd me', and whom thou sought'st I am,
 Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest
 Above or round about thee, or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine 285
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat.
 Of every tree that in the garden grows
 Eat freely with glad heart: fear here no dearth:
 But of the tree whose operation brings
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set 290
 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,
 Amid the garden by the tree of life,
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,
 And shun the bitter consequence: for know,
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command 295
 Transgress'd, inevitably thou shall die,
 From that day mortal. Sternly he pronounced
 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice
 Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect 300
 Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
 Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth
 To thee and to thy race I give; as lord
 Possess it, and all things that therein live,
 Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl. 305

In sign whereof each bird and beast behold
 After their kinds; I bring them to receive
 From thee their names, and pay thee fealty
 With low subjection; understand the same
 Of fish within their watry residence, 310
 Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change
 Their element to draw the thinner air.
 *As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold
 Approaching two and two, these cowering low
 With blandishment, each bird stoop'd on his wing. 315
 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood
 Their nature, with such knowlege God indued
 My sudden apprehension: but in these
 I found not what methought I wanted still*
 And to the heav'nly vision thus presum'd. 320
 O by what name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or ought than mankind higher
 Surpassest far my naming, how may I
 Adore thee, Author of this universe,
 And all this good to man? For whose well being 325
 So amply, and with hands so liberal
 Thou hast provided all things: but with me
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness? Who can enjoy alone,
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find? 330
 Thus I presumptuous; and the vision bright,
 As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.
 What call'st thou solitude? Is not the earth
 With various living creatures, and the air
 Replenish'd, and all these at thy command 335
 To come and play before thee? Know'st thou not
 Their language and their ways? They also know,
 And reason not contemptibly; with these

Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large.
 So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd 340
 So ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,
 And humble deprecation thus reply'd.
 Let not my words offend thee, heav'nly power,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute, 345
 And these inferior far beneath me set?
 Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due
 Giv'n and receiv'd. Of fellowship I speak 350
 Such as I seek, fit to participate
 All rational delight, wherein the brute
 Cannot be human consort; they rejoice
 Each with their kind, lion with lioness.
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd; 355
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl
 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.
 Thus I imbolden'd spake, and freedom us'd
 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd 360
 This answer from the gracious voice divine.
 Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
 And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thyself,
 Expressing well the sp'rit within thee free, 365
 My image, not imparted to the brute,
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike.
 And be so minded still. I ere thou spak'st,
 Knew it not good for man to be alone, 370

And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee, for trial only brought,
 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet.
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 375
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more, for now
 My earthly by his heav'nly overpower'd,
 Which it had long stood under, strain'd to th' height
 In that celestial colloquy sublime, 380
 As with an object that excels the sense
 Dazled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.
 *Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 385
 Of fancy, my internal sight, by which
 Abstract as in a trance methought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood;
 Who stooping open'd my left side, and took 390
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,
 And life-blood streaming fresh. Wide was the wound
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd:
 The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands;
 Under his forming hands a creature grew, 395
 Manlike, but different sex, so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now
 Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd
 And in her looks, which from that time infus'd
 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before.* 400
 She disappear'd, and left me dark; I waked
 To find her, or for ever to deplore

Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure:
 When out of hope, behold her, not far off,
 Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd 405
 With what all earth or heaven could bestow
 *To make her amiable: on she came,
 Led by her heav'nly Maker, though unseen,
 And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd 410
 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites:
 Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye,
 In every gesture dignity and love.*
 I overjoy'd could not forbear aloud.
 This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign, 415
 Giver of all things fair, but fairest this
 Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see
 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself
 Before me: woman is her name, of man
 Extracted; for this cause he shall forego 420
 Father and mother, and to' his wife adhere;
 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.
 *She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,
 Yet innocence and virgin modesty,
 Her virtue and the conscience of her worth, 425
 That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,
 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,
 The more desirable, or to say all,
 Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,
 Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd; 430
 I follow'd her, she what was honour knew,
 And with obsequious majesty approv'd
 My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower
 I led her blushing like the morn: all heaven,

And happy constellations on that hour 435
 Shed their selectest influence; the earth
 Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill;
 Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs
 Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings
 Flung rose, flung odors from the spicy shrub, 440
 Disporting, till the amorous bird of night
 Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening star
 On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.^[*177]
 Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought
 My story to the sum of earthly bliss 445
 Which I enjoy, and must confess to find
 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,
 Nor vehement desire; these delicacies
 I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers, 450
 Walks, and the melody of birds; but here
 Far otherwise, transported I behold,
 Transported touch; here passion first I felt,
 Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 Superior and unmov'd, here only weak 455
 Against the charm of beauty's pow'rful glance.
 Yet well I understand in the prime end
 Of nature her th' inferior, in the mind
 And inward faculties, which most excel.
 In outward also her resembling less 460
 His image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that dominion given
 *O'er other creatures; yet when I approach
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in herself complete, so well to know 465
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,

⁷⁷Baker suggests that a closing asterisk was omitted by mistake at this point.

Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best;
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her
 Loses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shews: 470
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard angelic plac'd.*
 To whom the angel with contracted brow.
 Nature, hath done her part; do thou but thine, 475
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,
 An outside? Fair no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thyself?
 *Then value: oft-times nothing profits more 480
 Than self esteem, grounded on just and right,
 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,
 And to realities yields all her shows:
 Made so adorned for thy delight the more, 485
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.*
 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind
 Is propagated seem such dear delight
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd 490
 To cattle and each beast; which would not be
 To them made common and divulg'd, if ought
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 The soul of man, or passion in him move.
 *What high'er in her society thou find'st 500
 Attractive, human, rational, love still;
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
 Wherein true love consists not; love refines

The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat
 In rea'son, and is judicious, is the scale 505
 By which to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend.*
 *To whom thus half abash'd Adam reply'd.
 Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor ought
 In procreation common to all kinds
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far, 510
 And with mysterious reverence I deem)
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts,
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow
 From all her words and actions mix'd with love
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul; 515
 (Harmony to behold in wedded pair*)
 More grateful than harmonious sound to th' ear.
 Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense 520
 Variously representing; yet still free
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou say'st
 Leads up to heav'n, is both the way and guide;
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask; 525
 Love not the heav'nly spi'rits, and how their love
 Express they, by looks only', or do they mix
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?
 To whom the angel with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue, 530
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st
 Us happy', and without love no happiness.
 *Whatever pure thou in the body' enjoy'st
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy

In eminence, and obstacle find none 535
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars;
 Easier than air with air, if sp'rits embrace,
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure.*
 But I can now no more; the parting sun
 Hesperian sets, my signal to depart. 540
 Be strong, live happy', and love, but first of all
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
 His great command; take heed lest passion sway
 Thy judgment to do ought, which else free will
 Would not admit; thine and of all thy sons 545
 The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware.
 I in thy persevering shall rejoice,
 And all the blest: stand fast; to stand or fall
 Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.
 Perfect within, no outward aid require; 550
 And all temptation to transgress repel.
 So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,
 Go heav'nly guest, ethereal messenger,
 Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore. 555
 Gentle to me and affable hath been
 Thy condescension, and shall be' honour'd ever
 With grateful memory: thou to mankind
 Be good and friendly still, and oft return.
 So parted they, the angel up to heaven 560
 From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

The end of the eighth book.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VIII.

- Ver. 22. "Diurnal"—Daily.
Ver. 23. "This punctual spot"—Which is but as a point.
Ver. 32. "Sedentary"—Sitting still, not moving.
Ver. 37. "Incorporeal speed"—Such speed as can scarce be conceived in any thing corporeal.
Ver. 95. "Numberless"—To describe which number fails.
Ver. 118. "Transpicious"—Transparent.
Ver. 121. "Reciprocal"—Each giving light to the other.
Ver. 298. "Interdiction"—Prohibition.
Ver. 314. "Cowering"—Bending, bowing themselves.
Ver. 315. "Blandishment"—Making court.
Ver. 380. "Colloquy"—Conversation.
Ver. 387. "Abstract"—Abstracted from the body.
Ver. 425. "Conscience"—Consciousness.
Ver. 427. "Obvious"—Forward. "Obtrusive"—Thrusting herself on me. "Retired"—Modest, backward.
Ver. 432. "Obsequious"—Yielding, obedient.
Ver. 474.⁷⁸ "With contracted brow"—That is frowning.

⁷⁸Orig., "479"; a misprint.

- Ver. 527.⁷⁹ “Do they mix irradiance”—As it were, dart into one another: by a “virtual”—Something equivalent to, “or,” by an “immediate touching” each other?
- Ver. 540. “Hesperian sets”—Sets in the west.
- Ver. 546. “The weal”—The welfare.
- Ver. 549. “Arbitrement”—Choice.
- Ver. 553. “Benediction”—Thanks.

⁷⁹Orig., “528”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

The Argument.

Satan having compass'd the earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise, enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alledging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone: Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields: the serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve wond'ring to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to human speech and such understanding; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attain'd both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: the serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she pleas'd with the taste deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of love to perish with her: and extenuating the trespass eats also of the fruit:

the effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where God or angel guest
 With man, as with his friend, familiar used
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change 5
 Those notes to tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of man, revolt,
 And disobedience; on the part of heaven
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 And judgment given, that brought into this world 10
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery.

The sun was sunk, and after him the star
 Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring
 Twilight on earth, and now from end to end
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round: 15
 When Satan who late fled before the threats
 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd
 In meditated fraud and malice bent
 On man's destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd. 20
 By night he fled, and at midnight return'd
 From compassing the earth. There was a place,
 Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,
 Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part 25
 Rose up a fountain by the tree of life.
 In with the river sunk, and with it rose

Satan involv'd in rising mist, then sought
 Where to lie hid; and with inspection deep 30
 Consider'd every creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found
 The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
 Him after long debate, his sentence chose
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 35
 From sharpest sight: for in the wily snake,
 Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark.
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.
 O earth, how like to heav'n, if not preferr'd! 40
 Terrestrial heaven, danced round by other heavens
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams.
 *With what delight could I have walk'd thee round, 45
 If I could joy in ought, sweet interchange
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods and plains,
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
 Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 50
 Torment within; all good to me becomes
 Bane, and in heav'n much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in heaven
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring heav'n's Supreme;
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable 55
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:*
 For only in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts: and him destroy'd,

Or won to what may work his utter loss, 60
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe.
 In woe then; that destruction wide may range:
 To me shall be the glory sole among
 Th' infernal pow'rs, in one day to have marr'd 65
 What he Almighty stiled, six nights and days
 Continued making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one night freed
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half 70
 Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers: he to be aveng'd,
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 Determin'd to advance into our room
 A creature form'd of earth, and him endow, 75
 Exalted from so base original,
 With heav'nly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed
 He' effected. Man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,
 Him lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity! 80
 Subjected to his service angel wings,
 And flaming ministers to watch and tend
 Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist
 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and pry 85
 In every bush and brake where hap may find
 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 *O foul descent! That I who erst contended
 With gods to sit the high'est, am now constrain'd 90

Into a beast, and mixt with bestial slime,
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the height of deity aspir'd.
 But what will not ambition and revenge
 Descend to? Who aspires must down as low 95
 As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long back on itself recoils.*
 Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next 100
 Provokes my envy, this new favourite
 Of heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,
 Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.
 So saying, through each thicket dank or dry, 105
 Like a black mist low creeping he held on
 His midnight search, where soonest he might find
 The serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found
 In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
 His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles: 110
 Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,
 Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb
 Fearless, unfear'd he slept: in at his mouth
 The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
 In heart or head, possessing soon inspired 115
 With act intelligential; but his sleep
 Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.
 Now when as sacred light began to dawn
 In Eden on the humid flow'rs, that breath'd
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe, 120
 From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise
 To the Creator, and his nostrils fill

With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
 And join'd their vocal worship to the choir 125
 Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake
 The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs:
 Then commune how that day they best may ply
 Their growing work: for much their work outgrew
 The hands dispatch of two, gard'ning so wide, 130
 And Eve first to her husband thus began.
 Adam, well may we labour still to dress
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb and flower,
 Our pleasant task injoin'd, but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows. 135
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs remain, while I
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd
 With myrtle, find what to redress till noon:
 For while so near each other thus all day 140
 Our task we chuse, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
 Our day's work brought to little, though begun
 Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd. 145
 To whom mild-answer Adam thus return'd.
 Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd
 How we might best fulfil the work which here 150
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass
 *Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 155

Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from reason flow,
 To brute deny'd, and are of love the food, 160
 Love not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd.*
 These paths and bow'rs doubt not but our joint hands
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide 165
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Assist us: but if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield:
 *For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return.* 170
 But other doubt possesses me, lest harm
 Befal thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 175
 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
 Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each
 To other speedy aid might lend at need; 180
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb
 Conjugal love, leave not the faithful side
 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.
 The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks, 185
 Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst indures.

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve,
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd. 190
 Offspring of heav'n and earth, and all earth's lord.
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,
 And from the parting angel over-heard,
 As in a shady nook I stood behind, 195
 Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.
 But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
 To God or thee, because we have a foe
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
 His violence thou fear'st not, being such 200
 As we, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repel.
 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers
 Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd: 205
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,
 Adam misthought of her to thee so dear?
 To whom with healing words Adam reply'd.
 Daughter of God and man, immortal Eve,
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire: 210
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
 Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe,
 Though ineffectual found. Misdemean not then,
 If such affront I labour to avert 215
 From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
 Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light.
 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn; 220

Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce
 Angels; nor think superfluous others' aid.
 *I from the influence of thy looks receive
 Access in every virtue, in thy sight
 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were 225
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or over-reach'd
 Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel
 When I am present, and thy trial choose 230
 With me, best witness of thy virtue try'd?*
 So spake domestic Adam in his care
 And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought
 Less attributed to her faith sincere,
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd. 235
 If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,
 Subtle or violent, we not indued
 Single with like defence, wherever met,
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm? 240
 Let us not then suspect our happy state
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combin'd.
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,
 And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd. 245
 [*]To whom thus Adam fervently reply'd.
 O woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordain'd them; his creating hand
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left
 Of all that he created, much less man, 250
 Or ought that might his happy state secure,
 Secure from outward force; within himself

The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
 Against his will he can receive no harm. 255
 But God left free the will, for what obeys
 Reason, is free, and reason he made right,
 But bid her well beware, and still erect,
 Lest by some fair appearing good surpris'd
 She dictate false, and misinform the will 260
 To do what God expresly hath forbid.*
 Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoins,
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve.
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid 265
 Were better, and most likely, if from me
 Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve
 First thy obedience; th' other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest? 270
 But if thou think, trial unsought may find
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue, summon all, 275
 For God tow'ards thee hath done his part, do thine.
 So spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve
 Persisted; yet submiss, though last, reply'd.
 With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words 280
 Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought,
 May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,
 The willinger I go, nor much expect
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse. 285

Thus saying, from her husband's hand, her hand
 Soft she withdrew, took her to the groves.
 *Her, long with ardent look his eye pursu'd
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return 290
 Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd
 To be return'd by noon amid the bower,
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve! 295
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise
 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose;*
 For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,
 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find 300
 The only two of mankind, but in them
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.
 In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft
 Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance or plantation for delight: 305
 By fountain or by shady rivulet
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 Eve separate, he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies, 310⁸⁰
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,
 Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, mindless the while
 Herself, though fairest unsupported⁸¹ flower, 315
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd

⁸⁰Orig., "510"; a misprint.

⁸¹Orig., "unupsported"; a misprint.

Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm,
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick-woven arborets and flowers. 320
 Much pleasure took the serpent to behold
 *This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 Thus early, thus alone; her heav'nly form
 Angelic, but more soft, and feminine,
 Her graceful innocence, her every air 325
 Of gesture or least action overaw'd
 His malice, and with rapin sweet, bereav'd
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:
 That space the evil one abstracted stood
 From his own ev'il, and for the time remain'd 330
 Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd,
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge:
 But the hot hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid heav'n, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees 335
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd:* then soon
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me! With what sweet
 Compulsion thus transported to forget 340
 What hither brought me! Hate, not love nor hope
 Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste
 Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying; other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass 345
 Occasion which now smiles; behold alone
 The woman, opportune to all attempts,
 Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh.
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods,

Not terrible, though terror be in love 350
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate.
 Hate stronger, under show of love well feign'd,
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.
 So spake the enemy' of mankind, inclos'd
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve 355
 *Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd
 Fold above fold a surging maze, his head
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; 360
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect
 Amidst his circling spires.* With tract oblique
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.
 As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought 365
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail:
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve;
 And bolder now, uncall'd before her stood, 370
 But as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd
 His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck,
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play: he glad 375
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.
 *Wonder not, sov'reign mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder; much less arm 380
 Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,

Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Insatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair, 385
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
 By gift, and thy celestial beauty' adore
 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld
 Where universally admir'd: but here
 In this inclosure wild, these beasts among, 390
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,
 Who sees thee'? (And what is one?) Who shouldst be seen
 A goddess among gods, ador'd and serv'd
 By angels numberless, thy daily train.* 395
 So gloz'd the tempter, and his proem tun'd.
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,
 Though at the voice much marvelling. At length
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean? Language of man pronounc'd 400
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd?
 The first at least of these I thought deny'd
 To beasts, whom God on their creation-day
 Created mute to all articulate sound:
 The latter I demur, for in their looks 405
 Much reas'on, and in their actions oft appears.
 Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
 I knew, but not with human voice indued;
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how 410
 To me so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight:
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful tempter thus reply'd.
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve, 415
 I was at first as other beasts that graze
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
 As was my food; nor ought but food discern'd
 Or sex, and apprehended nothing high:
 Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 420
 A goodly tree far distant to behold
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,
 Ruddy and gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
 When from the boughs a savory odor blew:
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play. 425
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had,
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,
 For high from ground the branches would require
 Thy utmost reach or Adam's: round the tree
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire 430
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
 Amid the tree now got, to eat my fill
 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
 At feed or fountain never had I found.
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive 435
 Strange alteration in me, to degree
 Of reason in my inward pow'rs, and speech
 Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
 Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind 440
 Consider'd all things visible in heaven,
 Or earth or middle, all things fair and good:
 But all that fair and good in thy divine
 Semblance, and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray
 United I beheld; no fair to thine 445
 Equivalent or second, which compell'd

Sole daughter of his voice. The rest, we live
 Law to ourselves, our reason is our law. 480
 To whom the tempter guilefully reply'd.
 Indeed? Hath God then said that of the fruit
 Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,
 Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air?
 To whom thus Eve yet sinless. Of the fruit 485
 Of each tree in the garden we may eat,
 But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
 The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.
 She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold 490
 The tempter all impassion'd thus began.
 O sacred wise, and wisdom-giving plant;
 Mother of science, now I feel thy power
 Within me clear, even to trace the ways
 Of highest agents, deem'd however wise. 495
 Queen of this universe, do not believe
 Those rigid threats of death; ye shall not die:
 How should ye? By the fruit? It gives you life
 To knowledge; by the Threatner? Look on me,
 Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live, 500
 And life more perfect have attain'd than fate
 Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot.
 Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast
 Is open? Or will God incense his ire
 For such a petty trespass, and not praise 505
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
 Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be,
 Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead
 To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;
 Of good, how just? Of evil, if what is evil 510
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?

God therefore cannot hurt you, and be just.
 Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,
 Why but to keep you low and ignorant,
 His worshippers. He knows that in the day 515
 Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as gods,
 Knowing both good and evil as they know.
 That ye should be as gods. Since I as man, 520
 Internal man, is but proportion meet
 I of brute human, ye of human gods:
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
 Human, to put on gods; death to be wish'd,
 Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring. 525
 Goddess human: reach then, and freely taste.
 He ended, and his words replete with guile
 Into her heart too easy entrance won.
 Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold
 Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound 530
 Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd
 With reason, to her seeming, and with truth.
 Mean while the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell
 So savory of that fruit, which with desire, 535
 Inclinal now grown, to touch or taste,
 Solicited her longing eye: yet first
 Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd.
 Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd, 540
 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first essay
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise

Thy praise he also who forbids thy use, 545
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree
 Of knowledge, knowledge both good and evil.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?
 Such prohibitions bind not. But if death 550
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
 Our inward freedom? In the day we eat
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
 How dies the serpent? He hath eat'n and lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns, 555
 Irrational till then. For us alone
 Was death invented? Or to us deny'd
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?
 For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first
 Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy 560
 The good befall'n him, author unsuspect,
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
 What fear I then, rather what know to fear
 Under this ignorance of good and evil,
 Of God or death, of law or penalty? 565
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
 Of virtue to make wise: what hinders then
 To reach, and feed at once body and mind!
 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 570
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:
 *Earth felt the wound, and nature from her seat
 Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost.* Back to the thicket slunk
 The guilty serpent, and well might, for Eve 575
 Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else
 Regarded, such delight till then, as seem'd,

In fruit she never tasted, whether true
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high
 Of knowledge, nor was god-head from her thought. 580
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,
 And knew not eating death. Sate at length,
 And highten'd as with wine, jocond and boon,
 Thus to herself she pleasantly began.
 O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees 585
 In Paradise, henceforth my early care,
 Not without song, each morning, and due praise,
 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
 Till dieted by thee I grow mature 590
 In knowledge, as the gods who all things know.
 Best guide; not following thee I had remain'd
 In ignorance. Thou open'st wisdom's way,
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.
 And I perhaps am secret; heav'n is high, 595
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on earth. But to Adam in what sort
 *Shall I appear? Shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake 600
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
 Without copartner? So to add what wants
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps, 605
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior who is free?
 This may be well: but what if God have seen,
 And death ensue? Then I shall be no more, 610
 And Adam wedded to another Eve,

Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve,
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe: 615
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.*

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd:
 But first low reverence done, as to the power
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd 620
 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd
 From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown. 625
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd:

Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
 Misgave him; he the faltring measure felt;
 And forth to meet her, went the way she took 630
 That morn when first they parted. By the tree
 Of knowledge he must pass, there he her met,
 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand
 A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd. 635
 To him she hasted. In her face excuse
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt,
 Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd 640
 Thy presence, agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I sought,
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange

Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear: 645
 This tree is not as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Opening the way, but of divine effect
 To open eyes, and make them gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise 650
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become,
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd: but thenceforth
 Indued with human voice and human sense,
 Reason to admiration, and with me 655
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine eyes,
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,
 And growing up to godhead; which for thee 660
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love; 665
 Lest thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit.
 Thus Eve with count'nance blithe her story told:
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd. 670
 On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd.
 From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve 675
 Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed.

Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length,
First to himself he inward silence broke.

O fairest of creation, last and best
Of all God's works. Creature in whom excell'd 680

Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,
Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote?
Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress 685

The strict forbiddance, how to violate
The sacred fruit forbid? Some cursed fraud
Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,
And me with thee hath ruin'd, for with thee
Certain my resolution is to die. 690

How can I live without thee, how forego
Thy sweet converse and love so dearly join'd,
To live again in these wild woods forlorn?
Should God create another Eve, and I
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee 695

Would never from my heart. No no, I feel
The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

So having said, as one from sad dismay 700
Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd
Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd.

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous Eve,
And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd, 705
Had it been only coveting to eye
That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,
Much more to taste it under ban to touch.

But past who can recal, or done undo?
 Not God Omnipotent, nor fate; yet so 710
 Perhaps thou shalt not die; perhaps the fact
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first
 Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste:
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives, 715
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live as man
 Higher degree of life, inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attain
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
 But to be gods, or angels, demi-gods. 720
 Nor can think that God, Creator wise
 Though threatning, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime creatures, dignify'd so high,
 Set over all his works, which in our fall,
 For us created, needs with us must fail. 725
 *However I with thee have fix'd my lot,
 Certain to undergo like doom; if death
 Consort with thee, death is to me as life;
 So forcible within my heart I feel
 The bond of nature draw me to my own, 730
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;
 Our state cannot be sever'd, we are one,
 One flesh; to lose thee were to lose myself.*
 *So Adam, and thus Eve to him reply'd.
 O glorious trial of exceeding love, 735
 Illustrious evidence, example high!
 Engaging me to emulate, but short
 Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,
 Adam? From whose dear side I boast me sprung,
 And gladly of our union hear thee speak, 740

One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof
 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
 Rather than death or ought than death more dread
 Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear, 745
 To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,
 If any be, of tasting this fair fruit,
 Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds
 Direct, or by occasion) hath presented
 This happy trial of thy love, which else 750
 So eminently, never had been known.
 Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue
 This my attempt I would sustain alone
 The worst, and not persuade thee. Rather die
 Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 755
 Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assur'd
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,
 So faithful love unequal'd: but I feel
 Far otherwise th' event, not death, but life
 Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys, 760
 Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.
 So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 765
 Tenderly wept, much won that he his love
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
 In recompence (for such compliance bad
 Such recompense best merits) from the bough 770
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
 With liberal hand: he scrupled not to eat
 Against his better knowledge, not deceiv'd,

But fondly overcome with female charm.
 Earth trembled from her entrails as again 775
 In pangs, and nature gave a second groan,
 Sky lour'd, and muttering thunder, some sad drops
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin
 Original;* while Adam took no thought,
 Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate 780
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to sooth
 Him with her lov'd society, that now
 As with new wine intoxicated both,
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
 Divinity within them breeding wings 785
 Wherewith to spurn the earth: but that false fruit
 Far other operation first display'd,
 Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve
 Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him
 As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn: 790
 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.
 Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
 From this delightful fruit, nor known till now
 True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be 795
 In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd,
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten.
 But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,
 As meet is, after such delicious fare;
 For never did thy beauty since the day 800
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd
 With all perfections, so inflame my sense
 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
 Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.
 So said he, and forebore not glance or toy 805

Of amorous intent, well understood
 Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.
 Her hand he seiz'd, and to a shady bank,
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowl'd,
 He led her nothing loath; flow'rs were the couch, 810
 Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,
 And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.
 There they their fill of love and love's disport
 Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,
 The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep 815
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,
 That with exhilarating vapour blan'd
 About their spi'rits had play'd, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhal'd; and grosser sleep 820
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams
 Incumber'd, now had left them; up they rose
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds
 How darken'd; innocence, that as a veil 825
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,
 And honour from about them, naked left
 To guilty shame. So rose the Danite, strong
 Herculean Sampson from the harlot-lap 830
 Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue: silent, and in face
 Confounded long they sat, as stricken mute,
 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd. 835
 O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught

To counterfeit man's voice, true in our fall,
 False in our promis'd rising; since our eyes
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know 840
 Both good and ev'il, good lost, and evil got.
 Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity,
 Our wanted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd, 845
 And in our faces evident the signs
 Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;
 Ev'n shame, the last of evils; of the first
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face
 Henceforth of God or angel, erst with joy 850
 And rapture so' oft beheld; those heav'nly shapes
 Will dazle now this earthly with their blaze
 Insufferably bright. O might I here
 In solitude live savage, in some glade
 *Obscur'd, where highest woods impenetrable 855
 To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad
 And brown as evening. Cover me ye pines,
 Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more.*
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise 860
 What best may for the present serve to hide
 The parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and may cover round
 Those middle parts, that this new comer, shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean. 865
 So counsel'd he, and both together went
 Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose
 The fig-tree, not that kind for fruit renown'd,
 But such as at this day to Indians known

In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms 870
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade
 High overarch'd, and echoing walks between. 875
 Those leaves they gather'd, and together sow'd,
 To gird their waste, vain covering if to hide
 Their guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike
 To that first naked glory! Such of late
 Columbus found th' American, so girt 880
 With feather'd cincture, naked else and wild
 Among the trees on isles and woody shores.
 Thus fenc'd, and as they thought, their shame in part
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind,
 They sat them down to weep; nor only tears 885
 Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent: 890
 For understanding rul'd not, and the will
 Heard not her lore, both in subjection now
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath
 Usurping over sov'reign reason claim'd
 Superior sway: from thus distemper'd breast, 895
 Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd stile,
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.
 Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and stay'd
 *With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
 Desire of wand'ring this unhappy morn, 900
 I know not whence possess'd thee; we had then
 Remain'd still happy, not as now, despoil'd

Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to' approve
 The faith they owe; when earnestly they seek 905
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.*
 To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus Eve.
 What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe!
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will
 Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows 910
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,
 Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,
 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
 Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake;
 No ground of enmity between us known, 915
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm?
 Was I to have never parted from thy side?
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.
 Being as I am, why didst not thou the head
 Command me absolutely not to go, 920
 Going into such danger as thou saidst?
 Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,
 Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent,
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me. 925
 To whom then first incens'd Adam reply'd.
 Is this the love, is this the recompense
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, express'd
 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,
 Who might have liv'd and joy'd immortal bliss: 930
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?
 And am I now upbraided as the cause
 Of thy transgressing? Not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint: what could I more?

I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold
The danger, and the lurking enemy
That lay in wait; beyond this had been force,
And force upon free will hath here no place.
But confidence then bore thee on secure,
Either to meet no danger, or to find
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
I also err'd in overmuch admiring
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue
That error now, which is become my crime,
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall
Him, who to worth in woman overtrusting,
Lest her will rule; restraint she will not brook,
And left to' herself, if evil thence ensue,
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.
Thus they in mutual accusation spent
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

The end of the ninth book.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

- Ver. 5. "Venial"—By leave obtain'd.
 Ver. 23. Tho' it is "not now."
 Ver. 112.⁸² "Nocent"—Hurtful.
 Ver. 116. "With act intelligential"—With intelligence or understanding.
 Ver. 188. "Virgin-majesty"—Blooming, beautiful as a virgin.
 Ver. 224.⁸³ "Access"—Increase.
 Ver. 232.⁸⁴ "Domestic"—Having a careful regard to the good of his family.
 Ver. 258.⁸⁵ "Beware"—Wary. "Erect"—On it's guard.
 Ver. 319.⁸⁶ "Voluble"—Rolling himself up and down.
 Ver. 338.⁸⁷ "Gratulating"—Congratulating himself.
 Ver. 347.⁸⁸ "Opportune"—Ready for all.
 Ver. 355.⁸⁹ "Inmate"—Inhabitant.
 Ver. 360.⁹⁰ "Carbuncle"—Fiery red, like a carbuncle.
 Ver. 362.⁹¹ "With tract oblique"—Drawing himself on sideways.
 Ver. 368.⁹² "Tortuous"—Twisted together.
 Ver. 396.⁹³ "Proem"—Prelude, introduction.
 Ver. 404.⁹⁴ "Articulate sound"—Sound form'd into distinct

⁸²Orig., "122"; a misprint.

⁸³Orig., "222"; a misprint.

⁸⁴Orig., "230"; a misprint.

⁸⁵Orig., "256"; a misprint.

⁸⁶Orig., "318"; a misprint.

⁸⁷Orig., "337"; a misprint.

⁸⁸Orig., "346"; a misprint.

⁸⁹Orig., "354"; a misprint.

⁹⁰Orig., "359"; a misprint.

⁹¹Orig., "361"; a misprint.

⁹²Orig., "367"; a misprint.

⁹³Orig., "495"; a misprint.

⁹⁴Orig., "403"; a misprint.

- words.
- [Ver.] 405.⁹⁵ “Demur”—Doubt of: I am not clear either way.
- Ver. 407.⁹⁶ “Subtlest”—Having most understanding.
- Ver. 447. “Importune”—Unseasonable, troublesome.
- Ver. 450. “Spirited”—Actuated by the evil spirit.
- Ver. 479. “Sole daughter of his voice”—The only command which he uttered. As to “the rest,” all the other trees.
- Ver. 491.⁹⁷ Seeming to be “all impassioned”—Fill’d with passion, with indignation.
- Ver. 531. “Impregned”—Impregnated, filled.
- Ver. 542. “Elocution”—Speech.
- Ver. 582.⁹⁸ “And knew not” that she was in effect “eating death.”
- Ver. 583.⁹⁹ “Boon”—Hearty, well pleased.
- Ver. 628. “Divine of ill”—Divining, presaging it.
- Ver. 628. “His heart” beat uneven.
- Ver. 637. “Came prologue”—Came beforehand.
- Ver. 638. “Bland”—Soft, smooth.
- Ver. 659. “Dilated”—Raised, cheared.
- Ver. 703. “In calm mood”—In deep, settled sadness.
- Ver. 708. “Under ban to touch”—Forbidden to touch it, under pain of God’s curse.
- Ver. 727.¹⁰⁰ “If death consort with thee”—Attend thee; if thou must die.
- Ver. 755.¹⁰¹ “Oblige thee with a fact”—Induce thee to do it.
- Ver. 780. “To iterate”—To repeat.
- Ver. 856. “Umbrage”—Shade.
- Ver. 881. “Featherd cincture”—Feathers girt round them.

⁹⁵Orig., “404”; a misprint.

⁹⁶Orig., “406”; a misprint.

⁹⁷Orig., “489”; a misprint.

⁹⁸Orig., “583”; a misprint.

⁹⁹Orig., “584”; a misprint.

¹⁰⁰Orig., “728”; a misprint.

¹⁰¹Orig., “775”; a misprint.

PARADISE LOST.**BOOK X.****The Argument.**

Man's transgression known, the guardian angels forsake Paradise, and return up to heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approv'd, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends¹⁰² and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death sitting till then at the gates of hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man: to make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad high-way or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then preparing for earth, they meet him proud of his success returning to hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transform'd with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his angels to make several altera-

¹⁰²Orig., "ascends"; a misprint.

tions in the heavens and elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fall'n condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be reveng'd on the serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

Mean while the heinous and despiteful act
 Of Satan done in Paradise, was known
 In heav'n; for what can 'scape the eye of God
 All seeing? Who in all things wise and just,
 Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind 5
 Of man, with strength entire, and free-will arm'd,
 Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
 Up into heav'n from Paradise in haste
 Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad 10
 For man, for of his state by this they knew,
 Much wond'ring how the subtle fiend had stol'n
 Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news
 From earth arriv'd; dim sadness did not spare,
 That time celestial visages, yet mix'd 15
 With pity, violated not their bliss.
 About the new arriv'd, in multitudes
 Th' ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befel: they tow'ards the throne supreme
 Accountable made haste to make appear 20
 With righteous plea their utmost vigilance,

And easily approv'd; when the most high
 Eternal Father from his secret cloud,
 Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled angels, and ye pow'rs return'd 25
 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent,
 Foretold so late, yet fall'n he is, and now
 What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass 30
 On his transgression, death denounc'd that day?
 Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.
 But whom send I to judge them? Whom but thee
 Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferr'd
 All judgment, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell. 35
 Easy it may be seen that I intend
 Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee
 Man's friend, his mediator, his design'd
 Both ransom and redeemer voluntary,
 And destin'd man himself to judge man fall'n. 40

So spake the Father, and unfolding bright
 Tow'ard the right hand his glory, on the Son
 Blaz'd forth unclouded deity; he full
 Resplendent all his Father manifest
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild. 45

Father Eternal, thine is to decree,
 Mine both in heav'n and earth to do thy will
 Supreme, that thou in me thy Son below'd
 May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge
 These thy transgressors, yet shall, temper so 50
 Justice with mercy', as may illustrate most
 Them fully satisfy'd, and thee appease.
 Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none

Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd,
 Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd, 55
 Convict by flight, and rebel to all law:
 Conviction to the serpent none belongs.
 Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose
 Of high collateral glory': him thrones and powers,
 Princedoms, and dominations ministrant 60
 Accompanied to heaven gate, from whence
 Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.
 Now was the sun in western cadence low
 From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour
 To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in 65
 The evening cool, when he from wrath more cool
 Came the mild judge and intercessor both
 To sentence man. The voice of God they heard
 Now walking in the garden, by soft winds
 Brought to their ears, while day declin'd; they heard, 70
 And from his presence hid themselves among
 The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God
 Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.
 Where art thou Adam, wont with joy to meet
 My coming seen far off? I miss thee here, 75
 Where obvious duty' ere while appear'd unsought:
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.
 He came, and with him Eve, more loath, though first
 To' offend, discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd; 80
 Love was not in their looks, either to God
 Or to each other, but apparant guilt,
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
 Anger, and obstinacy', and hate, and guile.
 Whence Adam faulting long, thus answer'd brief. 85

I heard thee in the gard'n, and of thy voice
 Afraid, being naked, hid myself. To whom
 The gracious judge without revile reply'd.
 My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,
 But still rejoic'd; how is it now become 90
 So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who
 Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou should'st not eat?
 To whom thus Adam sore beset reply'd.
 O heav'n! In evil strait this day I stand 95
 Before my Judge, either to undergo
 Myself the total crime, or to accuse,
 My other self, the partner of my life!
 This woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,
 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good, 100
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.
 To whom the Sov'reign Presence thus reply'd.
 Was she thy god, that her thou didst obey
 Before his voice, or was she made thy guide, 105
 Superior, or but equal, that to her
 Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place
 Wherein God set thee' above her, made of thee,
 And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd
 Hers in all real dignity? Adorn'd 110
 She was indeed, and lovely to attract
 Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts
 Were such as under government well seem'd,
 Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part
 And person, hadst thou known thyself aright. 115
 So having said, he thus to Eve in few.
 Say woman, what is this which thou hast done?
 To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelm'd,

Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd. 120
 The serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.
 Which when the Lord God heard without delay
 To judgment he proceeded on th' accus'd
 Serpent though brute, unable to transfer
 The guilt on him who made him instrument 125
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
 Of his creation; justly then accurs'd.
 Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd
 Above all cattle, each beast of the field;
 Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go, 130
 And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.
 Between thee and the woman I will put
 Enmity, and between thine and her seed:
 Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.
 So spake this oracle, then verify'd 135
 When Jesus son of Mary, second Eve,
 Saw Satan fall like lightning down from heaven,
 Prince of the air; then raising from his grave
 Spoil'd principalities and pow'rs, triumph'd
 In open show, and with ascension bright 140
 Captivity led captive through the air.
 Next to the woman he his sentence turn'd.
 Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
 By thy conception; children thou shalt bring
 In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will 145
 Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule.
 On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd.
 Because thou' hast hearken'd to the' voice of thy wife,
 And eaten of the tree, concerning which
 I charg'd thee, say'ing, Thou shalt not eat thereof: 150

Curs'd is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow
 Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life;
 Thorns also' and thistles it shall bring thee forth
 Unbid; and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field,
 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 155
 Till thou return unto the ground; for thou
 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth:
 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.
 [*]So judg'd he man, both Judge and Saviour sent,
 And th' instant stroke of death denounc'd that day 160
 Remov'd far off; then pitying how they stood
 Before him naked to the air, that now
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
 As when he wash'd his servants feet, so now 165
 He clad their nakedness with skins of beasts.^{103*}
 Nor he their outward only with the skins
 Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more
 Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness,
 Arraying cover'd from his Father's sight. 170
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd
 In glory as of old; to him appeas'd
 All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with man
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet. 175
 Mean while ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on earth,
 Within the gates of hell sat Sin and Death,
 In counterview within the gates that now
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
 Far into Chaos, since the fiend pass'd through, 180
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

¹⁰³Orig., "beast"; a misprint.

O son, why sit we here each other viewing
 Idly, while Satan our great author thrives
 In other worlds, and happier seats provides
 For us his offspring dear? It cannot be 185¹⁰⁴
 But that success attends him; if mishap,
 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven.
 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
 Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large
 Beyond this deep; whatever draws me on, 190
 Or sympathy, or some connatural force
 Pow'rful at greatest distance to unite
 With secret amity things of like kind
 By secretest conveyance. Thou my shade
 Inseparable must with me along; 195
 For Death from Sin no pow'r can separate.
 But lest the difficulty of passing back
 Stay his return perhaps over this gulf
 Impassable, impervious, let us try
 Adventrous work, yet to thy pow'r and mine 200
 Not unagreeable, to found a path
 Over this main from hell to that new world
 Where Satan now prevails, a monument
 Of merit high to all th' infernal host.
 Whom thus the meager shadow answer'd soon. 205
 Go whither fate and inclination strong
 Leads thee; I shall not lag behind, nor err
 The way, thou leading, such a scent I draw
 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
 The savour of Death from all things there that live: 210
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

¹⁰⁴Orig., "285"; a misprint.

*So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
 Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock
 Of ravenous fowl, tho' many a league remote, 215
 Against the day of battle, to a field,
 Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lur'd
 With scent of living carcasses design'd
 For death the following day, in bloody fight:
 So scented the grim feature, and upturn'd 220
 His nostril wide into the murky air,
 Sagacious of his quarry from so far.
 Then both from out hell gates into the waste
 Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark
 Flew diverse, and with pow'r (their pow'r was great) 225
 Hovering' upon the waters, what they met
 Solid or slimy, as in raging sea
 Tost up and down, together crouded drove
 From each side sholing. The aggregated soil
 Death with his mace petrific, smote, and fixt: 230
 And with asphaltic slime, (broad as the gate,
 Deep to the roots of hell) the gather'd beach
 They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on
 Over the foaming deep high arch'd, a bridge
 Of length prodigious, joining to the wall 235¹⁰⁵
 Immoveable of this new fenceless world
 Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,
 Smooth, easy, inoffensive down to hell.*
 Now had they brought the work by wondrous art
 Over the vex'd abyss, following the track 240
 Of Satan to the self same place where he
 First lighted from his wing, and landed safe
 From out of Chaos, to the outside bare
 Of this round world: with pins of adamant

¹⁰⁵Orig., "135"; a misprint.

And chains they made all fast, too fast they made
 And durable. And now in little space
 The confines met of empyrean heaven
 And of this world, and on the left hand hell 250
 With long reach interpos'd; three several ways
 In sight, to each of these three places led.
 And now their way to earth they had descry'd,
 To Paradise first tending, when behold
 Satan in likeness of an angel bright. 255
 Disguis'd he came, but those his children dear
 Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 He after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk
 Into the wood fast by, and changing shape
 To' observe the sequel, saw his guileful act 260
 By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded
 Upon her husband, saw their shame that sought
 Vain covertures; but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them, terrify'd
 He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun 265
 The present, fearing guilty what his wrath
 Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd
 By night, and list'ning where the hapless pair
 Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,
 Thence gather'd his own doom, which understood 270
 Not instant, but of future time, with joy
 And tidings fraught, to hell he now return'd;
 And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
 Of this new wonderous pontifice, unhop'd,
 Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear. 275
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair

Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.
 O parent, these are thy magnific deeds, 280
 Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thy own;
 Thou art their author, and prime architect;
 For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,
 My heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connection sweet, 285
 That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, but I felt
 Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt
 That I must after thee with this thy son,
 Such fatal consequence unites us three:
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,
 Nor this unvoyageable¹⁰⁶ gulf obscure 290
 Detain from following thy illustrious track.
 Thou hast atchiev'd our liberty, confin'd
 Within hell gates till now, thou us impower'd
 To fortify thus far, and overlay,
 With this portentous bridge the dark abyss. 295
 Thine now is all this world; thy virtue' hath won
 What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd
 With odds what war hath lost, and fully aveng'd
 Our foil in heav'n; here thou shalt monarch reign,
 There didst not; there let him still victor sway 300
 As battle hath adjudg'd, from this new world
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated,
 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
 Of all things parted by th' empyreal bounds,
 His quadrature, from thy orbicular world.
 Whom thus the prince of darkness answer'd glad. 305
 Fair daughter, and thou son and grandchild both,
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race

¹⁰⁶Orig., "unvoysagable"; a misprint.

Of Satan, (for I glory in the name,
 Antagonist of heav'n's Almighty King)
 Amply have merited of me, of all 310
 Th' infernal empire, that so near heav'n's door
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met
 Mine with this glorious work. Therefore while I
 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,
 To my associate pow'rs, them to acquaint 315
 With these successes, and with them rejoice,
 You two this way, to Paradise descend;
 There dwell and reign in bliss, thence on the earth
 Dominion exercise and in the air,
 Chiefly on man, so lord of all declar'd, 320
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My substitutes I send you, and create
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me: on your joint vigour now,
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends, 325
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.

So saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed
 Their course through thickest constellations held,
 Spreading their bane. Mean time Satan went down
 The causey to hell gate; on either side 330
 Disparted Chaos over built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,
 That scorn'd his indignation: through the gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,
 And all about found desolate; for those 335
 Appointed to sit there, had left their charge.
 The rest were all retir'd, about the walls
 Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat
 Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd,

Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd. 340
 There kept their watch the legions, while the grand
 In council sat, solicitous what chance
 Might intercept their emp'ror sent; so he
 Departing gave command. He through the midst
 In show plebeian angel militant 345
 Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door
 Of that Plutonian hall, invisible
 Ascended his high throne, which under state
 Of richest texture spread, at the upper end
 Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while 350
 He sat, and round about him saw unseen:
 At last as from a cloud his fulgent head
 And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad
 With what permissive glory since his fall
 Was left him, or false glitter: all amaz'd 355
 At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,
 Their mighty chief return'd: loud was th' acclame:
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,
 Rais'd from their dark divan, and with like joy 360
 Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand
 Silence, and with these words attention won.
 Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues, powers,
 For in possession such, not only of right,
 I call you and declare you now, return'd 365
 Successful beyond hope, to lead you forth
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit
 The dungeon of our tyrant: now possess,
 As lords, a spacious world, to' our native heaven
 Little inferior, by my adventure hard 370
 With peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell

What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain
 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
 Of horrible confusion, over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd 375
 To expedite your glorious march: but I
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride
 Th' untractable abyss, plung'd in the womb
 Of unoriginal Night; thence how I found
 The new created world, which fame in heaven 380
 Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful
 Of absolute perfection, therein man
 Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile
 Made happy: him by fraud I have seduc'd
 From his Creator, and the more to' increase 385
 Your wonder, with an apple; he thereat
 Offended, hath giv'n up man and his world,
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,
 To range in, and to dwell, and over man
 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd. 390
 True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather
 Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape
 Man I deceiv'd: that which to me belongs,
 Is enmity, which he will put between
 Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel 395
 His seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise,
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have the account
 Of my performance: what remains ye gods,
 But up and enter now into full bliss?
 So having said, a while he stood, expecting 400
 Their universal shout and high applause
 To fill his ear, when contrary he hears
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues

A dismal universal hiss, the sound
 Of public scorn; he wonder'd, but not long 405
 Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more;
 His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
 His arms clung to his ribs, his legs intertwining
 Each other, till supplanted down he fell
 A monstrous serpent on his belly prone, 410
 Reluctant, but in vain, a greater power
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd
 According to his doom: he would have spoke,
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue
 To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd 415
 Alike, to serpents all as accessories
 To his bold riot: dreadful was the din
 Of hissing through the hall; thick swarming all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout 420
 Heav'n-fallen, in station stood or just array,
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief;
 They saw, but other sight instead, a croud
 Of ugly serpents. Horror on them fell, 425
 And horrid sympathy; for what they saw,
 They felt themselves now changing; down their arms,
 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 Catch'd by contagion, like in punishment, 430
 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant,
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame.
 Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair
 Too soon arriv'd, Sin and behind her Death
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet 435

On his pale horse: to whom Sin thus began.
 Second of Satan sprung, all conqu'ring Death,
 What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd
 With travel difficult, not better far
 Than still at hell's dark threshold to' have sat watch, 440
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself half starv'd?
 Whom thus the sin-born monster answer'd soon.
 To me, who with eternal famin pine,
 Alike is hell, or Paradise, or heaven,
 There best, where most with ravin I may meet. 445
 To whom th' incestuous mother thus reply'd.
 Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers
 Feed first, on each beast next, and fish, and foul.
 No homely morsels; and whatever thing
 The sithe of time mowes down, devour unspar'd; 450
 Till I in man residing through the race,
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.
 This said, they both betook them several ways,
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make 455
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
 Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing,
 From his transcendent seat the saints among,
 To those bright orders utter'd thus his voice.
 See with what heat these dogs of hell advance 460
 To waste and havoc yonder world, which I
 So fair and good created, and had still
 Kept in that state, had not the folly' of man
 Let in these wasteful furies, who impute
 Folly to me, so doth the prince of hell 465
 And his adherents, that with so much ease
 I suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem

To gratify my scornful enemies,
 And know not that at victorious one sling
 Of thy Almighty arm, well-pleasing Son, 470
 Both Sin and Death, and yawning Grave at last
 Through Chaos hurl'd, shall stop the mouth of hell
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.
 Then heav'n and earth renew'd shall be made pure
 To sanctity that shall receive no stain: 475
 Till then the curse pronounc'd on both precedes.
 He ended, and the heav'nly audience loud
 Sung hallelujah, as the sound of seas,
 Through multitude that sung: Just are thy ways,
 Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works; 480
 Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,
 Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom
 New heav'n and earth shall to the ages rise,
 Or down from heaven descend. Such was their song,
 While the Creator calling forth by name 485
 His mighty angels gave them several charge,
 As sorted best with present things. The sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat
 Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call 490
 Decrepit winter, from the south to bring
 Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five
 Their planetary motions; and the fix'd
 Their influence malignant when to shower, 495
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous: to the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound
 Sea, air, and shore, the thunder when to roll

With terror, through the dark aerial hall. 500
 Some say he bid his angels turn ascense
 The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more
 From the sun's axle; they with labour push'd
 Oblique the centric globe, to bring in change
 Of seasons to each clime; else had the spring 505
 Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernant flowers,
 Equal in days and nights, except to those
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun
 To recompence his distance, in their sight 510
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known
 Or east or west, which had forbid the snow
 From cold Estotiland, and south as far.
 These changes in the heav'ns, though slow, produc'd
 Like change on sea and land, sideral blast, 515
 Vapor, and mist, and exhalation hot,
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice
 And snow and hail and stormy gust and flaw,
 Boreas and Caecias and Argestes loud 520
 And Thrascias rend the woods and seas upturn.
 With adverse blast upturns them from the south
 Notus and Afer: thwart of these forth rush
 Eurus and Zephyr with their lateral noise,
 Sirocco, and Libecchio. Thus began 525
 Outrage from lifeless things: but Discord first
 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,
 Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy.
 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,
 And fish with fish; to graze the herb all leaving, 530
 Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe

Of man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
 Glar'd on him passing. These were from without
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw
 Already' in part, though hid in gloomiest shade 535
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,
 And in a troubled sea of passion tost,
 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.
 *O miserable of happy'! Is this the end
 Of this new glorious world, and me so late 540
 The glory of that glory, who now become
 Accurs'd of blessed! Hide me from the face
 Of God, whom to behold was then my height
 Of happiness? Yet well, if here would end
 The misery; I deserv'd it, and would bear 545
 My own deservings; but this will not serve;
 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard
 Delightfully, *Increase and multiply*,
 Now death to hear! For what can I increase 550
 Or multiply, but curses on my head?
 Who of all ages to succeed, but feeling
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse
 My head? Ill fare our ancestor impure,
 For this we may thank Adam; so besides 555
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from me
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound,
 On me as on their center'. O fleeting joys
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes!
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay 560
 To mould me man? Did I solicit thee
 From darkness to promote me, or here place
 In this delicious garden? As my will

Concurr'd not to my be'ing, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust, 565
 Desirous to resign and render back
 All I receiv'd, unable to perform
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added 570
 The sense of endless woes? Inexplicable
 Thy justice seems. Yet to say truth, too late
 I thus contest; then should have been refus'd
 Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:
 Thou did'st accept them; wilt thou' enjoy the good, 575
 Then cavil the conditions? And though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
 Wherefore didst thou beget me; I sought it not:
 Wouldst thou admit for this contempt of thee 580
 That proud excuse? Yet him not thy election,
 But natural necessity begot.
 God made thee' of choice his own, and of his own
 To serve him; thy reward was of his grace,
 Thy punishment then justly' is at his will. 585
 *Be' it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return.
 O welcome hour whenever! Why delays
 His hand to execute what his decree
 Fix'd on this day? Why do I overlive, 590
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out
 To deathless pain? How gladly would I meet
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth
 Insensible, how glad would lay me down
 As in my mother's lap? There I should rest 595

And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more
 Would thunder in my ears, no fear of worse
 To me and to my offspring would torment me
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
 Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die, 600
 Lest that pure breath of life, the spi'rit of man
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish
 With this corporeal clod. Then in the grave,
 Or in some other dismal place, who knows
 But I shall die a living death? 'Tis so, 605
 That death is not one stroke, as I suppos'd,
 Bereaving sense, but endless misery
 From this day onward, which I feel begun
 Both in me, and without me, and to last
 To perpetuity. Ay me, that fear 610
 Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution
 On my defenceless head; both Death and I
 Am found eternal, and incorporate both.
 Nor I on my part single, in me all
 Posterity stands curs'd: fair patrimony 615
 That I must leave you, sons; O were I able
 To waste it all myself, and leave you none! *
 So disinherited how would ye bless
 Me now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind
 For one man's fault thus guiltless be condemn'd? 620
 If guiltless. But from me what can proceed,
 But all corrupt, both mind and will deprav'd,
 Not to do only, but to will the same
 With me? How can they then acquitted stand
 In sight of God? Him after all disputes 625
 Forc'd I absolve: all my evasions vain,
 And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still

But to my own conviction: first and last
 On me, me only, as the source and spring
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due. 630
 So might the wrath. Fond wish! Couldst thou support
 That burden heavier than the earth to bear,
 Than all the world much heavier, though divided
 With that bad woman? Thus what thou desir'st
 And what thou fear'st alike destroys all hope 635
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable;
 To Satan only like both crime and doom.
 O conscience, into what abyss of fears
 And horrors hast thou driv'n me; out of which
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd! 640
 Thus Adam to himself lamented loud
 *Through the still night, not now, as ere man fell,
 Wholesome and cool, and mild, but with black air
 Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
 Which to his evil conscience represented 645
 All things with double terror: on the ground
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
 Curs'd his creation, death as oft accus'd
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd
 The day of his offence. Why comes not death, 650
 Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke
 To end me? Shall truth fail to keep her word,
 Justice divine not hasten to be just?
 But death comes not at call, justice divine
 Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries. 655
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales and bowers,
 With other echo late I taught your shades
 To answer and resound far other song.*
 Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,

Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh, 660
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd:
 But her with stern regard he thus repel'd.
 Out of my sight, thou serpent; that name best
 Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false
 And hateful: nothing wants, but that thy shape, 665
 Like his, and colour serpentine may show
 Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee
 Henceforth; lest that too heav'nly form, pretended
 To hellish falshood, snare them. But for thee
 I had persisted happy', had not thy pride 670
 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
 Not to be trusted, longing to be seen
 Though by the dev'l himself, him overweening
 To over-reach, but with the serpent meeting
 Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee, 675
 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
 And understood not all was but a show
 Rather than solid virtue'. *O why did God,
 Creator wise, that peopled highest heaven 680
 With spirits masculine, create at last
 This novelty on earth; this fair defect
 Of nature, and not fill the world at once
 With men as angels without feminineless?
 Or find some other way to generate 685
 Mankind? This mischief had not then befall'n,
 And more that shall befall, innumerable
 Disturbances on earth through female snares,
 And strait conjunction with this sex. For either
 He never shall find out fit mate, but such 690
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;

Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd
 By a far worse, or if she love, withheld
 By parents; or his happiest choice too late 695
 Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound
 To a fell adversary', his hate or shame.*
 He added not, and from her turn'd; but Eve
 Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing,
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet 700
 Fell humble, and embracing them, besought
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.
 *Forsake me not thus, Adam, witness heaven
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended, 705
 Unhappily deceiv'd; thy suppliant
 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress,
 My only strength and stay: forlorn of thee, 710
 Whither¹⁰⁷ shall I betake me, where subsist?
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
 Between us two let there be peace, both joining,
 As join'd in injuries, one enmity
 Against a foe by doom express assign'd us, 715
 That cruel serpent: on me exercise not
 Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,
 On me already lost, me than thyself
 More miserable; both have sinn'd, but thou
 Against God only', I against God and thee, 720
 And to the place of judgment will return,
 There with my cries importune heav'n, that all
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light

¹⁰⁷Orig., "Whether"; a misprint.

On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe, 725
 Me, only me, just object of his ire.
 *She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought
 Commiseration; soon his heart relented 730
 Tow'ards her, his life so late and sole delight,
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
 His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid.
 As once disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 735
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.^[*]
 Unwary', and too desirous, as before,
 So now, of what thou know'st not, who desir'st
 The punishment all on thyself; alas,
 Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain 740
 His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. *If prayers
 Could alter high decrees, I to that place
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard
 That on my head all might be visited, 745
 Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,
 To me committed and by me expos'd.
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive
 In offices of love, how we may lighten 750
 Each other's burden, in our share of woe;
 Since this day's death denounc'd, if ought I see,
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow pac'd evil,
 A long day's dying to augment our pain,
 And to our seed (O hapless seed!) deriv'd.* 755
 To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, reply'd.

Adam, by sad experiment I know
 How little weight my words with thee can find,
 Found so erroneous, thence by just event
 Found so unfortunate; nevertheless, 760
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
 Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
 What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen. 765
 If care of our descent perplex us most,
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd
 By Death at last; and miserable it is
 To be to others cause of misery,
 Our own begott'en, and of our loins to bring 770
 Into this cursed world a woeful race,
 That after wretched life must be at last
 Food for so foul a monster; in thy power
 It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
 The race unblest, to be'ing yet unbegot. 775
 Childless thou art, childless remain: so Death
 Shall be deceiv'd his glut, and with us two
 Be forc'd to satisfy his ravenous maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain 780
 From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,
 And with desire to languish without hope,
 Before the present object languishing
 With like desire, which would be misery
 And torment less than none of what we dread; 785
 Then both ourselves and seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make short,
 Let us seek Death, or he not found, supply

With our own hands his office on ourselves:
 Why stand we longer shivering under fears, 790
 That show no end but death, and have the power,
 Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,
 Destruction with destruction to destroy?
 She ended here, or vehement despair
 Broke off the rest; so much of death her thoughts 795
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.
 But Adam with such counsel nothing sway'd,
 To better hopes his more attentive mind
 Lab'ring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.
 *Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems 800
 To argue in thee something more sublime
 And excellent than what thy mind contemns;
 But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes
 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret 805
 For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.
 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end
 Of misery, so thinking to evade
 The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so 810
 To be forestall'd; much more I fear lest death
 So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain
 We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest
 To make death in us live.* Then let us seek 815
 Some safer resolution, which methinks
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed
 Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise
 The serpent's head; piteous amends, unless
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe 820

Satan, who in the serpent hath contriv'd
 Against us this deceit. To crush his head
 Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost
 By death brought on ourselves, or childless days
 Resolv'd as thou proposest; so our foe 825
 Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads.
 No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against ourselves, and wilful barrenness,
 That cuts us off from hope, and savours only 830
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
 Without wrath or reviling; we expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought 835
 Was meant by death that day, when lo, to thee
 Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,
 And bringing forth, soon recompens'd with joy,
 Fruit of thy womb: on me the curse aslope
 Glanc'd on the ground; with labour I must earn 840
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse;
 My labour will sustain me; and lest cold
 Or heat should injure us, his timely care
 Hath unbesought provided, and his hands
 Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd; 845
 *How much more, if we pray him, will his ear
 Be open, and his heart to pity' incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun
 Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail and snow?
 Which now the sky with various face begins 850
 To show us in this mountain, while the winds
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks

Of these fair spreading trees; which bids us seek
 Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish
 Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star 855
 Leave cold the night,* how we his gather'd beams
 Reflected, may with matter sere foment,
 Or by collision of two bodies grind
 The air attrite to fire, as late the clouds
 Justling or push'd with winds rude in their shock 860
 Tine the slant lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n down
 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,
 And sends a comfortable heat from far,
 Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,
 And what may else be remedy or cure
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 865
 He will instruct us praying, and of grace
 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 870
 What better can we do, than to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent, and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears,
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air 875
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow' unfeign'd, and humiliation meek?
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn
 From his displeasure: in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe, 880
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone?
 So spake our father penitent, nor Eve
 Felt less remorse: they forthwith to the place

Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd 885
 Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK X.

- Ver. 37. "Colleague with justice"—Companion of it.
 Ver. 59. "Collateral"—Co-ordinate, coequal.
 Ver. 63. "In western cadence low"—Fallen in the west.
 Ver. 120. "Loquacious"—Talkative.
 Ver. 178. "In counterview"—Over against each other.
 Ver. 199. "Impervious"—Having no path through it.
 Ver. 513. "Estotiland"—A part of America, near the Arctic¹⁰⁸
 Circle.
 Ver. 515. "Sideral"—From the stars.
 Ver. 520. "Boreas"—The Northward, "Caecias,"¹⁰⁹ the N.W.
 "Argestes,"¹¹⁰ the N.E. "Thrascias," N.E. and by
 East [Ver. 521].
 Ver. 523. "Notus"—The South West, "Afer" or Africus the S.
 West: "Eurus," the East Wind, "Zephyr," the West

¹⁰⁸Orig., "Arectic"; a misprint.

¹⁰⁹Orig., "Caceias"; a misprint.

¹¹⁰Orig., "Argestees"; a misprint.

- “latural”—Sideways. “Sirocco,”¹¹¹ the S.E.
“Libeccio,” the South West [Ver. 525]. So the
Italians call them.
- Ver. 613.¹¹² “Incorporate”—Join’d in one.
- Ver. 649.¹¹³ “Tardey”—Slow.
- Ver. 661. “She assay’d”—Tried the effect of.
- Ver. 668. “Pretended”—Held or spread before, made a cover
for.
- Ver. 705. “Unweeting”—Ignorantly, undesignedly.
- Ver. 710. “Forlorn”—Forsaken.
- Ver. 814. “Contumacy”—Obstinacy.
- Ver. 855.¹¹⁴ “This diurnal star”—The sun, many suppose all the
fixt stars are suns.
- Ver. 857.¹¹⁵ “Sere”—Dry. “Collision”—Rubbling together [Ver.
858].
- Ver. 859. “Attrite.”¹¹⁶
- Ver. 861. “Tine”—Sharpen or kindle.

¹¹¹Orig., “Siroocco”; a misprint.

¹¹²Orig., “612”; a misprint.

¹¹³Orig., “652”; a misprint.

¹¹⁴Orig., “885”; a misprint.

¹¹⁵Orig., “814”; a misprint.

¹¹⁶*OED*: “Worn or ground down by rubbing, scraping, etc.”

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XI.

The Argument.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they¹¹⁷ must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him: the angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the angel leads him up to a high hill, sets before him in vision what shall happen till the flood.

Thus they in lowl'est plight repentant stood
 Praying, for from the mercy-seat above
 Prevenient grace descending had remov'd
 The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now¹¹⁸ breath'd 5
 Unutterable, which the spi'rit of prayer
 Inspir'd and wing'd for heav'n with speedier flight
 Than loudest oratory: to heav'n their prayers
 Flew up, nor miss'd the way and in they pass'd
 Dimensionless through heav'nly doors; then clad 10
 With incense, where the golden altar fum'd
 By their great Intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Father's throne; them the glad Son

¹¹⁷Orig., "thty"; a misprint.

¹¹⁸Orig., "new"; a misprint.

Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung 15
 From thy implanted grace in man, these sighs
 And pray'rs, which in this golden censer, mix'd
 With incense, I thy priest before thee bring,
 Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those 20
 Which his own hand manuring all the trees
 Of Paradise could have produc'd, ere fall'n
 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear
 To supplication; hear his sighs though mute;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me 25
 Interpret for him, me his advocate
 And propitiation; all his works on me
 Good or not good ingraft, my merit those
 Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
 Accept me, and in me from these receive 30
 The smell of peace tow'ard mankind; let him live
 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
 Number'd, though sad, till death his doom, (which I
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)
 To better life shall yield him, where with me 35
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,
 Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene.
 All thy request for man, accepted Son,
 Obtain; but in that Paradise to dwell, 40
 The law I gave to nature him forbids:
 Those pure immortal elements that know
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,
 Eject him tainted, gross to air as gross,
 And mortal food, as may dispose him best 45

For dissolution wrought by sin, that first
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
 Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
 Created him endow'd, with happiness
 And immortality: that fondly lost, 50
 This other serv'd but to eternize woe;
 Till I provided death; so death becomes
 His final remedy, and after life
 Try'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
 By faith and faithful works, to second life, 55
 Resigns him up with heav'n and earth renew'd.
 But let us call to synod all the blest
 Through heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not hide
 My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,
 As how with peccant angels late they saw, 60
 And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd.
 He ended, and the Son gave signal high
 To the bright minister that watch'd; he blew
 His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps
 When God descended, and perhaps once more 65
 To sound at general doom. Th' angelic blast
 Fill'd all the regions: from their blissful bowers
 Of amarantin shade, fountain or spring,
 By the waters of life, where'er they sat
 In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 70
 Hasted, resorting to the summons high,
 And took their seats; till from his throne supreme
 Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign will.
 O sons, like one of us man is become
 To know both good and evil; but let him boast 75
 His knowledge of good lost, and evil got;
 Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known

Good by itself, and evil not at all.
 He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,
 My motions in him; longer than they move, 80
 His heart I know, how variable and vain
 Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand
 Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,
 And live for ever, dream at least to live
 For ever to remove him I decree, 85
 And send him from the garden forth to till
 The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.
 Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,
 Take to thee from among the cherubim
 Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the fiend, 90
 Or in behalf of man, or to invade
 Vacant possession, some new trouble raise:
 Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God
 Without remorse drive out the sinful pair,
 From hallow'd ground th' unholy, and denounce 95
 To them and to their progeny from thence
 Perpetual banishment. Yet lest they faint
 For I behold them soften'd and with tears
 Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.
 Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveal 100
 To Adam what shall come in future days,
 As I shall thee enlighten; intermix
 My covenant in the woman's seed renew'd;
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace:
 And on the east side of the garden place, 105
 Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,
 Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame
 Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,
 And guard all passage to the tree of life.

He ceas'd; and th' archangelic pow'r prepar'd 110
 For swift descent, with him the cohort bright
 Of watchful cherubim descend. Mean while
 To resalute the world with sacred light
 Leucothea wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalm'd
 The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve 115
 Had ended now their orisons, and found
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring
 Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet link'd;
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 120
 *Eve easily may faith admit, that all
 The good which we enjoy, from heav'n descends;
 But that from us ought should ascend to heaven
 So prevalent as to concern the mind
 Of God high-blest, or to incline his will, 125
 Hard to belief may seem; yet this will prayer
 Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne
 Ev'n to the seat of God.* For since I sought
 By prayer th' offended Deity to' appease,
 Methought I saw him placable and mild, 130
 Bending his ear; persuasion in me grew
 That I was heard with favour; peace return'd
 Home to my breast, and to my memory
 His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe;
 Which then not minded in dismay, yet now 135
 Assures me that the bitterness of death
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,
 Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind.
 To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.
 Ill worthy I such title should belong 140
 To me transgressor, who for thee ordain'd
 A help, became thy snare; to me reproach

Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise:
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
 That I who first brought death on all, am grac'd 145
 The source of life; next favourable thou,
 Who highly thus to' intitle me vouchsaf'st,
 Far other name deserving. But the field
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
 Though after sleepless night; for see the morn, 150
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
 Her rosy progress smiling; let us forth,
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray.
 What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks?
 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content.
 So spake, so wish'd much humbled Eve, but fate 155
 Subscrib'd not; nature first gave signs, impress'd
 On bird, beast, air; air suddenly eclips'd
 After short blush of morn; nigh in her sight
 The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aery tour,
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove: 160
 Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,
 First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind;
 Direct to th' eastern gate was bent their flight.
 Adam observ'd, and with his eye the chase 165
 Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.
 O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
 Which heav'n by these mute signs in nature shews,
 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn
 Us haply too secure of our discharge [170]
 From penalty, because from death releas'd
 Some days; how long, and what till then our life,
 Who knows, or more than this, that we are dust,
 And thither must return and be no more? 175

Why else this double object in our sight
 Of flight pursu'd in th' air, and o'er the ground,
 One way the self-same hour? Why in the east
 Darkness ere day's mid course, and morning light
 More orient in yon¹¹⁹ western cloud, that draws 180
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,
 And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught?
 He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly bands
 Down from a sky of jasper lighted now
 In Paradise, and on a hill made halt, 185
 A glorious apparition, had not doubt
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.
 Not that more glorious, when the angels met
 Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw
 The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright; 200
 Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd,
 In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,
 Against the Syrian king. The hierarch
 In their bright stand there left his pow'rs to seise
 Possession of the garden; he alone, 205
 To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,
 Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,
 While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake.
 Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps 210
 Of us will soon determine, or impose
 New laws to be observ'd; for I descry
 From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill
 One of the heav'nly host, and by his gate
 None of the meanest, some great potentate
 Or of the thrones above, such majesty 215
 Invests him coming; yet not terrible,
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,

¹¹⁹Orig., "you"; a misprint.

As Raphael, that I should much confide,
 But solemn and sublime, whom not to' offend,
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire. 220

He ended; and th' arch-angel soon drew nigh,
 Not in his shape celestial, but as man
 Clad to meet man; over his lucid arms
 A military vest of purple flow'd.
 His starry helm unbuckled shew'd him prime
 In manhood where youth ended; by his side
 As in a glist'ring zodiac hung the sword, 225
 Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear.
 Adam bow'd low; he kingly from his state
 Inclined not, but his coming thus declared.

Adam, heav'n's high behest no preface needs:
 Sufficient that thy pray'rs are heard, and death, 230
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
 Defeated of his seizure many days
 Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou mayst repent,
 And one bad act with many deeds well done
 May'st cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd 235
 Redeem thee quite from death's rapacious clame;
 But longer in this Paradise to dwell
 Permits not; to remove thee I am come,
 And send thee from the garden forth to till
 The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil. 240

He added not, for Adam at the news
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
 That all his senses bound; Eve, who unseen
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire. 245

*O unexpected stroke, worse than of death!
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? Thus leave
 Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades,

Fit haunt of gods; where I had hope to spend,
 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day 250
 That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,
 That never will in other climate grow,
 My earliest visitation and my last
 At ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
 From the first opening bud, and gave you names, 255
 Who now shall rear you to the sun, or rank
 Your tribes, and water from th' ambrosial fount?
 Thee lastly, nuptial bow'r, by me adorn'd
 With what to sight or smell was sweet, from thee
 How shall I part, and whither wander down 260
 Into a lower world, to this obscure
 And wild? How shall we breathe in other air
 Less pure, accustom'd to immortal fruits?*
 Whom thus the angel interrupted mild.
 Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign 265
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
 Thus over fond, on that which is not thine;
 Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes
 Thy husband; him to follow thou art bound;
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil. 270
 Adam by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spi'rits return'd,
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd.
 Celestial, whether among the thrones, or nam'd
 Of them the high'est, for such of shape may seem 275
 Prince above princes, gently hast thou told
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
 And in performing end us; what besides
 Of sorrow and dejection and despair
 Our frailty can sustain thy tidings bring, 280

Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and only consolation left
 Familiar to our eyes, all places else
 Inhospitable' appear and desolate,
 Nor knowing us nor known: *and if by prayer 285
 Incessant I could hope to change the will
 Of him who all things can, I would not cease
 To weary him with my assiduous cries:
 But pray'r against his absolute decree
 No more avails than¹²⁰ breath against the wind, 290
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
 This most afflicts me, that departing hence,
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd
 His blessed count'nance; here I could frequent
 With worship place by place where he vouchsaf'd 295
 Presence divine, and to my sons relate,
 On this mount he appear'd, under this tree
 Stood visible, among these pines his voice
 I heard, here with him at this fountain talk'd:
 So many grateful altars I would rear 300
 Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory,
 Or monument to ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet smelling gums and fruits and flowers:
 In yonder nether world where shall I seek 305
 His bright appearances, or foot-step trace?
 For though I fled him angry, yet recall'd
 To life prolong'd and promis'd race, I now
 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
 Of glory, and far off his steps adore.* 310
 To whom thus Michael with regard benign.
 Adam, thou know'st heav'n his, and all the earth,

¹²⁰Orig., "then"; a misprint.

Not this rock only'; his omnipresence fills
 Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives.
 All th' earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
 No despicable gift; surmise not then 315
 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd
 Of Paradise or Eden: this had been
 Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread
 All generations, and had hither come
 From all the ends of th' earth to celebrate 320
 And reverence thee their great progenitor.
 But this pre-eminence thou' hast lost, brought down
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons:
 Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain
 God is as here, and will be found alike 325
 Present, and of his presence many a sign
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round.
 Which that thou mayst believe, and be confirm'd
 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent
 To shew thee what shall come in future days 330
 To thee and to thy offspring; good with bad
 Expect to hear, supernal grace contending
 With sinfulness of men; thereby to learn
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
 And pious sorrow, equally inur'd 335
 By moderation either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse; so shalt thou lead
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd indure
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
 This hill; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes) 340
 Here sleep below, while thou to foresight wak'st;
 As once thou slep'st, while she to life was form'd.
 To whom thus Adam gratefully reply'd.

Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide, the path
 Thou lead'st me', and to the hand of heav'n submit, 345
 However chast'ning, to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, arming¹²¹ to overcome
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the visions of God: it was a hill 350
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken
 Stretch'd out to th' amplest reach of prospect lay.
 His eye might there command wherever stood
 City of old or modern fame, the seat 355
 Of mightiest empire: but to nobler sights
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,
 Which that false fruit had bred; then purg'd the nerve,
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd.
 So deep the pow'r of these ingredients pierc'd, 360
 Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,
 That Adam now enforc'd to close his eyes,
 Sunk down, and all his spi'rits became intranc'd;
 But him the gentle angel by the hand
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd. 365
 Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd
 The excepted tree, nor with the snake conspir'd,
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive 370
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.
 His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves
 New reap'd, the other part sheep-walks and folds;
 I' th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood, 375

¹²¹Orig., "aiming"; likely a misprint.

Rustic, of grassy sord¹²²; thither anon
 A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought
 First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,
 Uncull'd, as came to hand. A shepherd next
 More meek came with the firstlings of his flock 380
 Choicest and best; then sacrificing, laid
 The inwards and their fat with incense strow'd,
 On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd.
 His offering soon propitious fire from heaven
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam; 385
 The other's not, for his was not sincere;
 Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone
 That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale
 Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd. 390
 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' angel cry'd.
 O teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid? 395
 T' whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, reply'd.
 These two are brethren, Adam, and to come
 Out of thy loins; th' unjust the just hath slain,
 For envy that his brother's offering found
 From heav'n acceptance; but the bloody fact 400
 Will be aveng'd, and the other's faith approv'd
 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our sire.
 Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
 *But have I now seen death? Is this the way 405
 I must return to native dust? O sight
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,

¹²²I.e., "sword."

Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!*
 To whom thus Michael. Death thou hast seen 410
 In his first shape on man; but many shapes
 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead
 To his grim cave, all dismal; yet to sense
 More terrible at th' entrance than within.
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
 By fire, flood, famine, by intemp'rance more 415
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
 Before thee shall appear; that thou mayst know
 What misery th' inabstinence of Eve
 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place 420
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisom, dark,
 A lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid
 Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies
 Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds, 425
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,
 Intestin¹²³ stone and ulcer, colic pangs,
 Demoniac phrenzy, moaping melancholy,
 And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,
 Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence, 430
 Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; despair
 Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch;
 And over them triumphant Death his dart
 Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invok'd 435
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long
 Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept,
 Though not of woman born; compassion quell'd

¹²³Orig., "In testin"; a misprint.

His best of man, and gave him up to tears*¹²⁴ 440
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess;
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.
 *O miserable mankind, to what fall
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!
 Better end here unborn. Why is life given 445
 To be thus wrested from us? Rather why
 Obtruded on us thus? Who if we knew
 What we receive, would either not accept
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus 450
 Th' image of God in man created once
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not man,
 Retaining still divine similitude 455
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And for his Maker's image sake exempt?*
 Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took 460
 His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice.
 Therefore so abject is their punishment,
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own,
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd,
 While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules 465
 To loathsome sickness, worthily, since they
 God's image did not reverence in themselves.
 I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come 470
 To death, and mix with our connatural dust?

¹²⁴[This is the end asterisk to this section, but JW does not show a beginning asterisk. Baker shows the silent beginning with line 409.]

*There is, said Michael, if thou well observe
 The rule of not too much, by temp'rance taught,
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight, 475
 Till many years over thy head return:
 So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop
 Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature:
 This is old age; but then thou must outlive 480
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
 To wither'd, weak, and gray; thy senses then
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgo,
 To what thou hast; and for the air of youth,
 Hopeful and chearful, in thy blood will reign 485
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume
 The balm of life. To whom our ancestor.

*Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit 490
 Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge,
 Which I must keep till my appointed day
 Of rendring up, and patiently attend
 My dissolution. Michael reply'd.

*Nor love thy life, nor hate; but what thou liv'st 495
 Live well, how long or short permit to heaven:*\br/>
 And now prepare thee for another sight.

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon
 Were tents of various hue; by some were herds
 Of cattel grazing; others whence the sound 500
 Of instruments that made melodious chime.
 In other part stood one who at the forge
 Lab'ring, two massy clods of ir'on and brass

Had melted; next the liquid ore he drain'd
 Into fit molds prepar'd; from which he form'd 505
 First his own tools; then, what might else be wrought
 Fusil or grav'n in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side, a different sort
 From the high neigh'bring hills, which was their seat
 Down to the plain descended: by their guise 510
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve
 Freedom and peace to men: they on the plain
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold 515
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay
 In gems and wanton dress; to th' harp they sung
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on:
 The men though grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes
 Rove without rein, till in the amorous net 520
 Fast¹²⁵ caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose:
 And now of love they treat, till th' evening star,
 Love's harbinger, appear'd; then all in heat
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke
 Hymen, then first to marriage rites invok'd: 525
 With feast and music all the tents resound.
 Such happy interview and fair event
 And charming symphonies attach'd the heart
 Of Adam, soon inclin'd t' admit delight,
 The bent of nature; which he thus express'd. 530
 True opener of mine eyes, prime angel blest,
 Much better seems this vision, and more hope
 Of peaceful days portends, than those two past;
 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
 Here nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends. 535

¹²⁵Orig., "First"; likely a misprint but possibly changed by Wesley purposefully.

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best
 By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,
 Created, as thou art, to nobler end
 Holy and pure, conformity divine.
 Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents 540
 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race
 Who slew his brother; studious they appear
 Of arts that polish life, inventors rare,
 Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit
 Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none. 545
 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget;
 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, so gay,
 Yet empty of all good wherein consists
 Woman's domestic honour and chief praise;
 Bred only and completed to the taste 550
 Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance.
 To these that sober race of men, whose lives
 Religious titled them the sons of God.
 Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
 Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles 555
 Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy,
 And laugh, for which the world ere long must weep.
 *To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft.
 O pity' and shame, that they who to live well
 Enter'd so fair, should turn aside, to tread 560
 Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!*
 But still I see the tenour of man's woe
 Holds on the same, from woman to begin.
 From man's effeminate slackness it begins,
 Said th' angel, who should better hold his place 565
 By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd.
 But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread
 Before him, towns, and rural works between,
 Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, 570
 Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,
 Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise;
 Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,
 Single or in array of battle rang'd
 Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring stood; 575
 One way a band select from forage drives
 An herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine
 From a fat meadow ground, or fleecy flock,
 Ewes and their bleeting lambs over the plain,
 Their booty: others to a city strong 580
 Lay siege, incamp'd; by battery, scale, and mine,
 Assaulting; others from the wall defend
 With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire;
 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.
 In other part the scepter'd heralds call 585
 To council in the city gates: anon
 Grey-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,
 Assemble, and harangues are heard, but soon
 In factious opposition, till at last
 Of middle age one rising, eminent 590
 In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,
 Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,
 And judgment from above: him old and young
 Exploded and had seis'd with violent hands,
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence 595
 Unseen amid the throng: so violence
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide

Lamenting turn'd full sad; O what are these, 600
 Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
 Ten thousand fold the sin of him who slew
 His brother: for of whom such massacre
 Make they but of their brethren, men of men? 605
 But who was that just man, who had not heaven
 Rescu'd, had in his righteousness been lost?
 To whom thus Michael. These are the product
 Of those ill mated marriages thou saw'st;
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves 610
 Abhor to join: and by imprudence mix'd,
 Produce prodigious births of body' or mind.
 Such were these giants, men of high renown;
 For in those days might only shall be' admir'd,
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd; 615
 Thus fame shall be atchiev'd, renown on earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But he the sev'nth from thee, whom thou beheldst
 The only righteous in a world perverse,
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset 620
 With foes for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his saints: him the Most High
 Rapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God 625
 High in salvation and the climes of bliss,
 Exempt from death; to shew thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment;
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.
 He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd; 630
 The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar;

All now was turn'd to jollity and game,
 Marrying or prostituting, as befel,
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair
 Allur'd them; thence from cups to civil broils. 635
 At length a reverend sire among them came,
 And of their doings great dislike declar'd,
 And testify'd against their ways; he oft
 Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,
 Triumphs or festivals, and to them preach'd 640
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls
 In prison under judgments imminent:
 But all in vain: which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his tents far off;
 Then from the mountain hewing timber tall, 645
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,
 Measur'd by cubit, length and breadth, and height.
 Smear'd round with pitch, and in the side a door
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large
 For man and beast: when lo a wonder strange! 650
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small
 Came sev'ns, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught
 Their order: last the sire, and his three sons
 With their four wives; and God made fast the door.
 *Mean while the south wind rose, and with black wings 655
 Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove
 From under heav'n; and now the thicken'd sky
 Like a dark cieling stood; down rush'd the rain
 Impetuous, and continu'd till the earth
 No more was seen; the floating vessel swum 660
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the waves; all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp

Deep under water roll'd; sea cover'd sea,
 Sea without shore; and in their palaces 665
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabled; of mankind, so numerous late,
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.
 *How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 The end of all thy ofspring, end so sad, 670
 Depopulation? Thee another flood,
 Of tears and sorrow' a flood thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy sons; till gently rear'd
 By th' angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
 Though comfortless, as when a father mourns 675
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once;*
 And scarce to th' angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.
 O visions ill foreseen! Better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had¹²⁶ borne
 My part of evil only, each day's lot 680
 Enough¹²⁷ to bear; not those that were dispens'd
 The burd'n of many ages. Let none we seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall
 Him or his children; evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent, 685
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past.
 Man is not whom to warn: those few escap'd
 Famine and anguish will at last consume 690
 Wand'ring that watry desert: I had hope
 When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth,
 All would have then gone well, but now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
 How comes it thus? Unfold, celestial guide, 695

¹²⁶Orig., "bad"; a misprint.

¹²⁷Orig., "Enoug"; a misprint.

And whether here the race of man will end.
 To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou saw'st
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void; 700
 Who having spilt much blood, and done much waste
 Subduing nations, and atchiev'd thereby
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride 705
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.
 The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war
 Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose
 And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd
 In sharp contest of battle found no aid 710
 Against invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal
 Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy; for the earth shall bear
 More than enough, that temp'rance may be try'd: 715
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd;
 One man except, the only son of light
 In a dark age, against example good,
 Against allurements, custom, and a world
 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn, 720
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The paths of righteousness, denouncing wrath
 On their impenitence; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd 725
 The one just man alive: by his command
 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheldst,

To save himself and houshold from amidst
 A world devote to universal wrack.
 No sooner he with them of man and beast 730
 Select for life shall in the ark be lodg'd,
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts
 Of heav'n set open on the earth shall pour
 Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp 735
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
 Above the highest hills: *then shall this mount
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift, 740
 Down the great river to the opening gulf,
 And there take root an island salt and bare,
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews clang:*
 To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought 745
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further shall ensue, behold.
 He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,
 Which now abated; for the clouds were fled,
 Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry 750
 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;
 And the clear sun on his wide watry glass
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole 755
 With soft foot tow'ards the deep, who now had stopt
 His sluces' as the heav'n his windows shut.
 The ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.

And now the tops of hills as rocks appear; 760
 With clamour thence the rapid currents drive
 Tow'ards the retreating sea their furious tide.
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark
 The ancient sire descends with all his train;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout, 765
 Grateful to heav'n, over his head beholds
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow
 Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,
 Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.
 Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad 770
 Greatly rejoic'd, and thus his joy broke forth.
 O thou who future things can'st represent
 As present, heav'nly instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that man shall live
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve. 775
 Far less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice
 For one man found so perfect and so just,
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world
 From him, and all his anger to forget. 780
 *But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in heaven,
 Distended as the brow of God appeas'd,
 Or serve they as a flow'ry verge to bind
 The fluid skirts of that same watry cloud,
 Lest it again dissolve and show'r the earth?* 785
 To whom th' arch-angel. Dexterously thou aim'st
 So willingly doth God remit his ire,
 Such grace shall one just man find in his sight,
 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,
 And makes a covenant never to destroy 790
 The earth again by flood, nor let the sea

Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world
 With man therein or beast; but when he brings
 Over the earth a cloud, will therein set
 His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look 795
 And call to mind his covenant: day and night,
 Seed time and harvest, heat and hoary frost
 Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,
 Both heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XI.

- Ver. 3. "Prevenient"—Preventing grace.
 Ver. 10. "Dimensionless"—As being of a spiritual nature.
 Ver. 60. "Peccant"—Sinning.
 Ver. 114.¹²⁸ "Leucothea"—The dawn of day.
 Ver. 139. "Eve" or Havah signifies *to live aery*
tour—Whirling about in the air.
 Ver. 159. "The bird of Jove"—The eagle.
 Ver. 180. "More orient"—More bright.
 Ver. 200.¹²⁹ "Pavilion'd"—Cover'd with tents. Gen. xxxii. 2.
 Ver. 202.¹³⁰ "In Dothan"—2 Kings vi. 13, etc.

¹²⁸Orig., "123"; a misprint.

¹²⁹Orig., "198"; a misprint.

¹³⁰Orig., "200"; a misprint.

- Ver. 225. The “zodiac” is, a broad circle on the celestial globe, which marks out the yearly course of the sun.
- Ver. 302. “In memory”—For myself. A “monument”—For my posterity [Ver. 303].
- Ver. 376. “Rustic”—Rough, unadorn’d. “Of grassy sord”—Of green turf.
- Ver. 390.¹³¹ “Effused”—Poured out.
- Ver. 422. “A lazar-house”—An hospital.
- Ver. 424. “Spasm”—The cramp.
- Ver. 428. “Demoniac phrenzy”—Those turn’d lunatics by one evangelist, are frequently term’d *demoniacs*, or possess of the devil by another.
- Ver. 429. “Atrophy” and “marasmus” are a kind of consumption.
- Ver. 447. “Obtruded”—Forced upon us.
- Ver. 483. “Obtuse”—Blunted, dull.
- Ver. 507. “Fusil”—Melted, cast.
- Ver. 516. “A bevy”—A company.
- Ver. 525. “Hymen”—The heathen god of marriage.
- Ver. 528. “Attached”—Seized, got possession of.
- Ver. 551. “Appetence”—Desire, appetite.
- Ver. 572. “Emprise”—Enterprize.
- Ver. 586. “The city gates”—The antient place of judicature.
- Ver. 609. “Ill mated”—Ill pair’d, misjoin’d.
- Ver. 671. “Depopulation”—Dispeopling of the earth.
- Ver. 681. “Dispensed”—Distributed, dealt out in parcels.
- Ver. 706. “Hostile deeds”—Acts of enmity.
- Ver. 730. “With them of man and beast select for life”—With those men and beasts whom God had set apart, to preserve them.
- Ver. 739. “Pushed by the horned flood”—A river oppos’d in its course by an island or mountain, divides, and seems to push as with horns.

¹³¹Orig., “391”; a misprint.

- Ver. 741. “To the opening gulph”—The sea opening wider and wider.
- Ver. 743. “Orcs”—A large kind of sea-fish. “Clang,” is properly the noise made by the flight of large flocks of birds.
- Ver. 748. A ship is said to “hull,” when her sails are taken in, and she floats to and fro.
- Ver. 755. “Tripping”—Running swiftly along.

PARADISE LOST.**BOOK XII.****The Argument.**

The angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,
 Though bent on speed; so here the arch-angel paus'd
 Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,
 If Adam ought perhaps might interpose;
 Then with transition sweet new speech resumes. 5

Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
 And man as from a second stock proceed.
 Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive
 Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine
 Must needs impair and weary human sense: 10

Henceforth what is to come I will relate,
 Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

 This second source of men, while yet but few,
 And while the dread of judgment past remains
 Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
 Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,
 Lab'ring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
 Corn wine and oil; and from the herd or flock,
 Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,
 Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd, and dwell 20
 Long time in peace by families and tribes
 Under paternal rule: till one shall rise
 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content
 With fair equality, fraternal state,
 Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd 25
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
 Concord and law of nature from the earth.
 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous: 30
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be stil'd
 Before the Lord, as in despite of heaven.
 He with a crew, whom like ambition joins
 Marching from Eden tow'ards the west, shall find
 The plain wherein a black bituminous gurge 35
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell:
 Of brick, and of that stuff they cast to build
 A city, and tow'r, whose top may reach to heaven;
 And get themselves a name, lest far dispers'd
 In foreign land their memory be lost. 40
 But God who oft descends to visit men
 Comes down to see their city ere the tower

Obstruct heav'n tow'rs, and in derision sets
 Upon their tongues a various spi'rit to rase
 Quite out their native language, and instead 45
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud
 Among the builders; each to other calls
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
 As mock'd they storm'd; thus was the building left 50
 Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.
 Where to thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.
 O execrable son so to aspire
 Above his brethren, to himself assuming
 Authority usurp'd, from God not given: 55
 He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl
 Dominion absolute; that right we hold
 By his donation; but man over men
 He made not lord; such title to himself
 Reserving, human left from human free. 60
 To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st
 That son, who on the quiet state of men
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
 Rational liberty; yet know withal
 Since thy original lapse, true liberty 65
 Is lost, which always with right reason dwells
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,
 Immediately inordinate desires
 And upstart passions catch the government 70
 From reason, and to servitude reduce
 Man till then free. Therefore since he permits
 Within himself unworthy pow'rs to reign
 Over free reason, God in judgment just

Subjects him from without to violent lords; 75
 Who oft as undeservedly intrall
 His outward freedom: tyranny must be,
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.
 Thus will this latter, as the former world,
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last 80
 Wearied with their iniquities withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways:
 And one peculiar nation to select 85
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,
 A nation from one faithful man to spring:
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
 Bred up in idol worship; O that men
 (Can'st thou believe?) should be so stupid grown, 90
 While yet the patriarch liv'd who scap'd the flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in wood and stone
 For gods! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes
 To call by vision from his father's house, 95
 His kindred and false gods, into a land
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
 A mighty nation, and upon him shower
 His benediction so, that in his seed
 All nations shall be blest; he strait obeys, 100
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes:
 I see him, but thou can'st not, with what faith
 He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil
 Ur of Chaldea, passing now the ford
 To Haran, after him a cumbrous train 105

Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude;
 Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.
 Canaan he now attains, I see his tents
 Pitch'd about Sechem, and the neigh'bring plain 110
 Of Moreh; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his progeny of all that land.
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed; by that seed
 Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise 115
 The serpent's head; whereof to thee anon
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
 A son, and of his son a grand-child leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown. 120
 The grand-child with twelve sons increas'd departs
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd
 Egypt, divided by the river Nile;
 See where it flows, disgorging at sev'n mouths
 Into the sea: to sojourn in that land 125
 He comes invited by a younger son
 In time of dearth, a son whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that realm
 Of Pharaoh: where he dies, and leaves his race
 Growing into a nation, and now grown 130
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant males:
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call 135
 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim
 His people from inthralment, they return

With glory' and spoil back to their promis'd land.
 But first the lawless tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard, 140
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire.
 To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd;
 Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill
 With loth'd intrusion, and fill all the land;
 His cattel must of rot and murrain die; 145
 Botches and blanes must all his flesh imboss,
 And all his people; thunder mix'd with hail,
 Hail mix'd with fire must rend th' Egyptian sky,
 And wheel on th' earth, devouring where it rolls;
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain, 150
 A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born 155
 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds
 The river-dragon tam'd at length submits
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice
 More harden'd after thaw, till in his rage 160
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea
 Swallows him with his host, but lets them pass
 As on dry land between two crystal walls;
 God present in his angel, then shall go
 Before them in a cloud, and pill'ar of fire, 165
 By day a cloud, by night a pill'ar of fire,
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues.
 Moses once more his potent rod extends

Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys; 170
 On their imbattel'd ranks the waves return,
 And overwhelm their war: the race elect
 Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance
 Through the wild desert, not the readiest way,
 Lest entring on the Canaanite alarm'd 175
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude; for life
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on. 180
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose grey top
 Shall tremble, he descending will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets sound,
 Ordain them laws; part such as appertain
 To civil justice, part religious rites 185
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destin'd seed to bruise
 The serpent, by what means he shall atchieve
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God
 To mortal ear is dreadful; they beseech 190
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease; he grants what they besought
 Instructed that to God is no access
 Without mediator, whose high office now
 Moses in figure bears to introduce 195
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,
 And all the prophets in their age the times
 Of great Messiah sung. Thus laws and rites
 Establish'd, (such delight hath God in men
 Obedient to his will,) at length they come, 200
 Conducted by his angel to the land

Promis'd to Abraham and his seed: the rest
 Were long to tell, how many battels fought,
 How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won,
 Or how the sun shall in mid heav'n stand still 205
 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn.

Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from heaven,
 Inlightner of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern
 Just Abraham and his seed: now first I find 210
 Mine eyes true opening, and my heart much eas'd,
 Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts what would become
 Of me and all mankind: but now I see
 His day, in whom all nations shall be blest.
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those 215
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth
 So many and so various laws are giv'n;
 So many laws argue so many sins
 Among them; how can God with such reside?

To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but¹³² that sin 220
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;
 And therefore was law given them to evince
 Their natural pravity, that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak, 225
 The blood of bulls and¹³³ goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for man.
 So law appears imperfect, and but given
 With purpose to resign them in full time
 Up to a better covenant, disciplin'd 230
 From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,
 From imposition of strict laws to free
 Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear

¹³²Orig., "bnt"; a misprint.

¹³³Orig., "aud"; a misprint.

To filial, works of law to works of faith.
 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God 235
 Highly belov'd, being but the minister
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead;
 But Joshua whom the Gentiles Jesus call,
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell
 The adversary serpent, and bring back 240
 Through the world's wilderness long wander'd man
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.
 Mean while they in their earthly Canaan plac'd
 Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins
 National interrupt their public peace, 245
 Provoking God to raise them enemies;
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
 By judges first, then under kings; of whom
 The second, both for piety renown'd
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive 250
 Irrevocable, that his regal¹³⁴ throne
 For ever shall endure; the like shall sing
 All prophecy, that of the royal stock
 Of David (so I name this King) shall rise
 A son, the woman's seed to thee foretold, 255
 Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust
 All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings
 The last, for of his reign shall be no end.
 But first a long succession must ensue,
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd, 260
 The clouded ark of God, till then in tents
 Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple' inshrine.
 Such follow him as shall be register'd
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll,
 Whose foul idolatries, and other faults 265

¹³⁴Orig., "legal"; a misprint.

Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense
 God, as to leave them, and expose their land,
 Their city', his temple, and his holy ark
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st 270
 Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.
 There in captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of seventy years, then brings them back,
 Remembring mercy, and his covenant sworn
 To David, stablish'd as the days of heaven. 275
 Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
 Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
 They first re-edify, and for a while
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown¹³⁵
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow; 280
 But first among the priests dissension springs,
 Men who attend the altar, and should most
 Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings
 Upon the temple' itself: at last they seize
 The scepter, and regard not David's sons, 285
 Then lose it to a stranger that the true
 Anointed King Messiah might be born
 Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a star
 Unseen before in heav'n, proclaims him come.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire 290
 The pow'r of the Most High; he shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the heav'ns.
 He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears, 295
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.
 O prophet of glad tidings, finisher

¹³⁵Orig., "groan"; a misprint.

Of utmost hope! Now clear I understand
 What oft my steddier thoughts have search'd in vain;
 Why our great expectation should be call'd 300
 The seed of woman; Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of heav'n, yet from my loins
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God Most High; so God with man unites.
 Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise 305
 Expect with mortal pain: say where and when
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victor's heel?
 To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight,
 As of a du'el: not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil 310
 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome
 Satan, whose fall from heav'n, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound:
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works 315
 In thee and in thy seed: nor can this be,
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd
 On penalty of¹³⁶ death, and suffering death,
 So only can high justice rest appaid.¹³⁷ 320
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil
 Both by obedience and by love, though love 325
 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment
 He shall endure by coming in the flesh
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,

¹³⁶Orig., "to"; a misprint

¹³⁷JW changes the order of this line by moving it up two lines in relation to the order given in Milton. Milton's order is:

On penalty of death, and suffering death,
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:
 So only can high justice rest appaid.
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil ...

Judg'd, and to death condemn'd, nail'd to the cross 330
 By his own nation, slain for bringing life;
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies,
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucify'd
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust 335
 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,
 But soon revives; death over him no power
 Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise,
 Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems, 340
 His death for man, as many as offer'd life
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 By faith not void of works: this God-like act
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act 345
 Shall bruise¹³⁸ the head of Satan, crush his strength
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times to' appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life
 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge 350
 To teach all nations, them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd. 355
 All nations they shall teach; for from that day
 Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons
 Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world;
 So in his seed all nations shall be blest. 360
 Then to the heav'n of heav'ns he, shall ascend

¹³⁸Orig., "brnise"; a misprint.

With victory, triumphing, and resume
 His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in heav'n; and thence shall come,
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe, 365
 With glory' and pow'r to judge both quick and dead,
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss.
 So spake th' arch-angel Michael, then paus'd
 As at the world's great period; and our sire 370
 Replete with joy and wonder thus reply'd.
 O goodness infinite, goodness immense!
 That all this good of evil shall produce!
 But say, if our Deliverer up to heaven
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 375
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
 The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide
 His people, who defend? Will they not deal
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?
 Be sure they will, said th' angel: but from heaven 380
 He to his own a Comforter will send,
 His Spi'rit within them, and the law of faith
 Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,
 To guide them in all truth, and also arm
 With spiritual armour, able to resist 385
 Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,
 What man can do against them, not afraid,
 Though to the death, against such cruelties
 With inward consolations recompens'd,
 And oft supported so as shall amaze 390
 Their proudest persecutors: for the Spirit
 Pour'd first on his apostles whom he sends
 To evangelize the nations, then on all

Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts indue
 To speak all tongues, and do all miracles, 395
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from heav'n: at length
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run,
 Their doctrine and their story written left, 400
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of heaven
 To their own vile advantages shall turn
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth 405
 With superstitions and traditions taint.
 Then shall they seek to' avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular pow'r, though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating 410
 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and given
 To all believers; and from that pretence,
 Spiritual laws by carnal pow'r shall force
 On every conscience; laws which none shall find
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spi'rit within 415
 Shall on the heart ingrave. What will they then
 But force the Spi'rit of grace itself, and bind
 His consort liberty? What, but unbuild
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith not another's? For on earth 420
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 infallible! Yet many will presume:
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere

Of spi'rit and truth; the rest, far greater part, 425
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfy'd; truth shall retire
 Bestuck with sland'rous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found: so shall the world go on,
 Under her own weight groaning, till the day 430
 Appear of respiration to the just,
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid
 The woman's seed, obscurely then foretold,
 Now ampler known thy Saviour and thy Lord, 435
 Last in the clouds from heav'n to be reveal'd
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
 Satan with his perverted world, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,
 New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date 440
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love,
 To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.
 He ended; and thus Adam last reply'd.
 *How soon hath thy prediction, seer blest,
 Measur'd this transient world, the race of time, 445
 Till time stand fix'd? Beyond is all abyss,
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain; 450
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire.
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe
 His providence, and on him sole depend,* 455
 Merciful over all his works, with good

Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
 By simply¹³⁹ meek; that suffering for truth's sake 460
 Is fortitude to highest victory;
 Taught this by his example whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.
 To whom thus also th' angel last reply'd.
 *This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum 465
 Of wisdom; hope no high'er, though all the stars
 Thou knew'st by name, and all th' ethereal pow'rs,
 All secrets of the deep, all nature's works,
 Or works of God in heav'n, air, earth, or sea,
 And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst, 470
 And all the rule, one empire; only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath 475
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A paradise within thee happier far.*
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation: for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence; and see the guards, 480
 By me incamp'd on yonder hill, expect
 Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round;
 We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve;
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd 485
 Portending good, and all her spi'rits compos'd
 To meek submission: thou at season fit
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,

¹³⁹Orig., "simple"; a misprint.

Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,
 The great deliverance by her seed to come 490
 (For by the woman's seed) on all mankind:
 That ye may live, which will be many days,
 Both in one faith unanimous though sad,
 With grief for evils past, yet much more cheer'd
 With meditation on the happy¹⁴⁰ end. 495
 He ended, and they both descend the hill;
 Descended, Adam to the bow'r where Eve
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak'd;
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd. 500
 Whence thou returnest, and whither went'st, I know;
 For God is also' in sleep, and dreams advise,
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
 Presaging, since with sorrow' and heart's distress
 Wearied I fell asleep: but now lead on; 505
 In me is no delay; with thee to go,
 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,
 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me
 Art all things under heav'n, all places thou,
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence. 510
 This further consolation yet secure
 I carry hence; though all by me is lost,
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,
 By me the promis'd seed shall all restore.
 So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard 515
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not; for now¹⁴¹ too nigh
 Th' arch angel stood, and from the other hill
 To their fix'd station, all in bright array
 The cherubim descended; on the ground
 Gliding meteorous, as evening mist 520
 Ris'n from a river o'er the marish glides,
 And gathers ground fast at the lab'rer's heel

¹⁴⁰Ori., "haypy"; a misprint.

¹⁴¹Ori., "oow"; a misprint.

Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd
The brandish'd sword of God, before them blaz'd
And 'gan to parch that temp'rate clime; whereat 525
In either hand the hast'ning angel caught
Our ling'ring parents, and to th' eastern gate
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
To the subjected plain; then disappear'd.
They looking back, all th' eastern side beheld 530
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
Wav'd over by that flaming brand, the gate
With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms:
Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon;
The world was all before them, where to choose 535
Their place of rest, and providence their guide.

NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XII.

- Ver. 35. "A gurge"—A bubbling spring. "Bitumen" is a kind of pitchy substance. This spring was black, like the mouth of hell.
- Ver. 44. "A various spirit"—A spirit varying the sounds, by which they would express their thoughts.
- Ver. 65. "Liberty" is the *twin* sister of "reason," and cannot exist *divided* from her.
- Ver. 131. "Sequent"—Following.
- Ver. 144. "Intrusion"—Thrusting in.
- Ver. 157. "The river-dragon"—*Pharoah*, so called in allusion to the *crocodile*, which abounds in Egypt. The allusion is taken from Ezek. 29:3.¹⁴²
- Ver. 181. "Grey"—Cover'd with clouds and smoke.
- Ver. 238. "Joshua" is the same name as¹⁴³ "Jesus," i.e. Saviour.
- Ver. 253. "All prophecy"—That is, all prophets.

¹⁴²Orig., "Ezek. 29. 1.;" a misprint.

¹⁴³Orig., "which"; a mistake.

- Ver. 261. “Clouded”—Covered with the cloud.
Ver. 266.¹⁴⁴ “The popular sum”—The sins of the people.
Ver. 305. “His capital bruise”—The bruise upon his head.
Ver. 320. “Appaid”—Satisfied.
Ver. 352. “Profluent¹⁴⁵ stream”—Running water.

¹⁴⁴Orig., “366”; a misprint.

¹⁴⁵Orig., “Proflent”; a misprint.

APPENDIX

Milton, *Paradise Lost*

[full text, with John Wesley's major deletions in red font]

BOOK I.

1 Of Man's First Disobedience, and the Fruit
2 Of that Forbidden Tree, whose mortal tast
3 Brought Death into the World, and all our woe,
4 With loss of Eden, till one greater Man
5 Restore us, and regain the blissful Seat,
6 Sing Heav'nly Muse, **that on the secret top**
7 **Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire**
8 **That Shepherd, who first taught the chosen Seed,**
9 **In the Beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth**
10 **Rose out of Chaos: Or if Sion Hill**
11 **Delight thee more, and Siloa's Brook that flow'd**
12 **Fast by the Oracle of God; I thence**
13 **Invoke thy aid to my adventurous Song,**
14 **That with no middle flight intends to soar**
15 **Above th' Aonian Mount, while it pursues**
16 **Things unattempted yet in Prose or Rhime.**
17 **And chiefly Thou O Spirit, that dost prefer**
18 Before all Temples th' upright heart and pure,
19 Instruct me, for Thou know'st; Thou from the first
20 Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread
21 Dove-like satst brooding on the vast Abyss
22 And mad'st it pregnant: What in me is dark
23 Illumin, what is low raise and support;
24 That to the highth of this great-Argument
25 I may assert Eternal Providence,
26 And justifie the wayes of God to men.

27 Say first, for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view
28 Nor the deep Tract of Hell, say first what cause
29 Mov'd our Grand Parents in that happy State,
30 Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off
31 From thir Creator, and transgress his Will
32 For one restraint, Lords of the World besides?
33 Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?
34 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile
35 Stird up with Envy and Revenge, deceiv'd
36 The Mother of Mankind, what time his Pride
37 Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his Host
38 Of Rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring
39 To set himself in Glory above his Peers,
40 He trusted to have equal'd the most High,

41 If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim
42 Against the Throne and Monarchy of God
43 Rais'd impious War in Heav'n and Battel proud
44 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
45 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' Ethereal Skie
46 With hideous ruine and combustion down
47 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
48 In Adamantine Chains and penal Fire,
49 Who durst defie th' Omnipotent to Arms.
50 Nine times the Space that measures Day and Night
51 To mortal men, he with his horrid crew
52 Lay vanquisht, rowling in the fiery Gulfe
53 Confounded though immortal: But his doom
54 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
55 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain
56 Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes
57 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay
58 Mixt with obdurate pride and stedfast hate:
59 At once as far as Angels kenn he views
60 The dismal Situation waste and wilde,
61 A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round
62 As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
63 No light, but rather darkness visible
64 Serv'd onely to discover sights of woe,
65 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
66 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes
67 That comes to all; but torture without end
68 Still urges, and a fiery Deluge, fed
69 With ever-burning Sulphur unconsum'd:
70 Such place Eternal Justice had prepar'd
71 For those rebellious, here thir Prison ordain'd
72 In utter darkness, and thir portion set
73 As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n
74 As from the Center thrice to th' utmost Pole.
75 O how unlike the place from whence they fell!
76 There the companions of his fall, o'rewhelm'd
77 With Floods and Whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
78 He soon discerns, and weltring by his side
79 One next himself in power, and next in crime,
80 Long after known in Palestine, and nam'd
81 Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,
82 And thence in Heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words
83 Breaking the horrid silence thus began.

84 If thou beest he; But O how fall'n! how chang'd
85 From him, who in the happy Realms of Light
86 Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst out-shine
87 Myriads though bright: If he whom mutual league,
88 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope

89 And hazard in the Glorious Enterprize,
90 Joynd with me once, now misery hath joynd
91 In equal ruin: into what Pit thou seest
92 From what highth fall'n, so much the stronger prov'd
93 He with his Thunder: and till then who knew
94 The force of those dire Arms? yet not for those,
95 Nor what the Potent Victor in his rage
96 Can else inflict, do I repent or change,
97 Though chang'd in outward lustre; that fixt mind
98 And high disdain, from sence of injur'd merit,
99 That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,
100 And to the fierce contention brought along
101 Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd
102 That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,
103 His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd
104 In dubious Battel on the Plains of Heav'n,
105 And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?
106 All is not lost; the unconquerable Will,
107 **And study of revenge, immortal hate,**
108 **And courage never to submit or yield:**
109 **And what is else not to be overcome?**
110 That Glory never shall his wrath or might
111 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
112 With suppliant knee, and deifie his power,
113 Who from the terrour of this Arm so late
114 Doubted his Empire, that were low indeed,
115 That were an ignominy and shame beneath
116 This downfall; since by Fate the strength of Gods
117 And this Empyrean substance cannot fail,
118 Since through experience of this great event
119 In Arms not worse, in foresight much advanc't,
120 We may with more successful hope resolve
121 To wage by force or guile eternal Warr
122 Irreconcilable, to our grand Foe,
123 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy
124 Sole reigning holds the Tyranny of Heav'n.

125 So spake th' Apostate Angel, though in pain,
126 Vaunting aloud, but rackt with deep despare:
127 And him thus answer'd soon his bold Compeer.

128 O Prince, O Chief of many Throned Powers,
129 That led th' imbattelld Seraphim to Warr
130 Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds
131 Fearless, endanger'd Heav'ns perpetual King;
132 And put to proof his high Supremacy,
133 Whether upheld by strength, or Chance, or Fate,
134 Too well I see and rue the dire event,
135 That with sad overthrow and soul defeat

136 Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty Host
137 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
138 As far as Gods and Heav'nly Essences
139 Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains
140 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,
141 Though all our Glory extinct, and happy state
142 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
143 But what if he our Conquerour, (whom I now
144 Of force believe Almighty, since no less
145 Then such could hav orepow'rd such force as ours)
146 Have left us this our spirit and strength intire
147 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
148 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,
149 Or do him mightier service as his thralls
150 By right of Warr, what e're his business be
151 Here in the heart of Hell to work in Fire,
152 Or do his Errands in the gloomy Deep;
153 What can it then avail though yet we feel
154 Strength undiminisht, or eternal being
155 To undergo eternal punishment?
156 Whereto with speedy words th' Arch-fiend reply'd.

157 Fall'n Cherube, to be weak is miserable
158 Doing or Suffering: but of this be sure,
159 To do ought good never will be our task,
160 But ever to do ill our sole delight,
161 As being the contrary to his high will
162 Whom we resist. If then his Providence
163 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
164 Our labour must be to pervert that end,
165 And out of good still to find means of evil;
166 Which oft times may succeed, so as perhaps
167 Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb
168 His inmost counsels from thir destined aim.
169 But see the angry Victor hath recall'd
170 His Ministers of vengeance and pursuit
171 Back to the Gates of Heav'n: the Sulphurous Hail
172 Shot after us in storm, oreblown hath laid
173 The fiery Surge, that from the Precipice
174 Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling, and the Thunder,
175 Wing'd with red Lightning and impetuous rage,
176 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now
177 To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.
178 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,
179 Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe.
180 Seest thou yon dreary Plain, forlorn and wilde,
181 The seat of desolation, voyd of light,
182 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
183 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend

184 From off the tossing of these fiery waves,
185 There rest, if any rest can harbour there,
186 And reassembling our afflicted Powers,
187 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
188 Our Enemy, our own loss how repair,
189 **How overcome this dire Calamity,**
190 What reinforcement we may gain from Hope,
191 If not what resolution from despare.

192 Thus Satan talking to his nearest Mate
193 With Head up-lift above the wave, and Eyes
194 That sparkling blaz'd, his other Parts besides
195 Prone on the Flood, extended long and large
196 Lay floating many a rood, **in bulk as huge**
197 **As whom the Fables name of monstrous size,**
198 **Titanian, or Earth-born, that warr'd on Jove,**
199 **Briareos or Typhon, whom the Den**
200 **By ancient Tarsus held, or that Sea-beast**
201 **Leviathan, which God of all his works**
202 **Created hugest that swim th' Ocean stream:**
203 **Him haply slumbring on the Norway foam**
204 **The Pilot of some small night-founder'd Skiff,**
205 **Deeming some Island, oft, as Sea-men tell,**
206 **With fixed Anchor in his skaly rind**
207 **Moors by his side under the Lee, while Night**
208 **Invests the Sea, and wished Morn delays:**
209 **So stretcht out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay**
210 **Chain'd on the burning Lake, nor ever thence**
211 **Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will**
212 **And high permission of all-ruling Heaven**
213 **Left him at large to his own dark designs,**
214 **That with reiterated crimes he might**
215 **Heap on himself damnation, while he sought**
216 **Evil to others, and enrag'd might see**
217 **How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth**
218 **Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn**
219 **On Man by him seduc't, but on himself**
220 **Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd.**
221 Forthwith upright he rears from off the Pool
222 His mighty Stature; on each hand the flames
223 Drivn backward slope thir pointing spires, and rowld
224 In billows, leave i'th' midst a horrid Vale.
225 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight
226 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky Air
227 That felt unusual weight, till on dry Land
228 He lights, if it were Land that ever burn'd
229 With solid, as the Lake with liquid fire;
230 **And such appear'd in hue, as when the force**
231 **Of subterranean wind transports a Hill**

232 Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side
233 Of thundring Ætna, whose combustible
234 And fewel'd entrals thence conceiving Fire,
235 Sublim'd with Mineral fury, aid the Winds,
236 And leave a singed bottom all involv'd
237 With stench and smoak: Such resting found the sole
238 Of unblest feet. Him followed his next Mate.
239 Both glorying to have scap't the Stygian flood
240 As Gods, and by thir own recover'd strength,
241 Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

242 Is this the Region, this the Soil, the Clime,
243 Said then the lost Arch-Angel, this the seat
244 That we must change for Heav'n, this mournful gloom
245 For that celestial light? Be it so, since he
246 Who now is Sovran can dispose and bid
247 What shall be right: fardest from him is best
248 Whom reason hath equald, force hath made supream
249 Above his equals. Farewel happy Fields
250 Where Joy for ever dwells: Hail horrors, hail
251 Infernal world, and thou profoundest Hell
252 Receive thy new Possessor: One who brings
253 A mind not to be chang'd by Place or Time.
254 The mind is its own place, and in it self
255 Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.
256 What matter where, if I be still the same,
257 And what I should be, all but less then he
258 Whom Thunder hath made greater? Here at least
259 We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built
260 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence:
261 Here we may reign secure, and in my choyce
262 To reign is worth ambition though in Hell:
263 Better to reign in Hell, then serve in Heav'n.
264 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
265 Th' associates and copartners of our loss
266 Lye thus astonisht on th' oblivious Pool,
267 And call them not to share with us thir part
268 In this unhappy Mansion, or once more
269 With rallied Arms to try what may be yet
270 Regaind in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell?

271 So Satan spake, and him Beelzebub
272 Thus answer'd. Leader of those Armies bright,
273 Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foyld,
274 If once they hear that voyce, thir liveliest pledge
275 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft
276 In worst extreams, and on the perilous edge
277 Of battel when it rag'd, in all assaults
278 Thir surest signal, they will soon resume

279 New courage and revive, though now they lye
280 Groveling and prostrate on yon Lake of Fire,
281 As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,
282 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth.

283 He scarce had ceas't when the superiour Fiend
284 Was moving toward the shoar; his ponderous shield
285 Ethereal temper, massy, large and round,
286 Behind him cast; the broad circumference
287 Hung on his shoulders like the Moon, whose Orb
288 Through Optic Glass the Tuscan Artist views
289 **At Ev'ning from the top of Fesole,**
290 **Or in Valdarno, to descry new Lands,**
291 **Rivers or Mountains in her spotty Globe.**
292 His Spear, to equal which the tallest Pine
293 Hewn on Norwegian hills, **to be the Mast**
294 **Of some great Ammiral,** were but a wand,
295 He walkt with to support uneasie steps
296 Over the burning Marle, not like those steps
297 On Heavens Azure, and the torrid Clime
298 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with Fire;
299 Nathless he so endur'd, till on the Beach
300 Of that inflamed Sea, he stood and call'd
301 His Legions, Angel Forms, who lay intrans't
302 Thick as Autumnal Leaves that strow the Brooks
303 In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades
304 High overarch't imbowr; **or scatterd sedge**
305 **Afloat, when with fierce Winds Orion arm'd**
306 **Hath vext the Red-Sea Coast, whose waves orethrew**
307 **Busiris and his Memphian Chivalry,**
308 **While with perfidious hatred they pursu'd**
309 **The Sojourners of Goshen, who beheld**
310 **From the safe shore thir floating Carkases**
311 **And broken Chariot Wheels,** so thick bestrown
312 Abject and lost lay these, covering the Flood,
313 Under amazement of thir hideous change.
314 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep
315 Of Hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,
316 Warriors, the Flowr of Heav'n, once yours, now lost,
317 If such astonishment as this can sieze
318 Eternal spirits; or have ye chos'n this place
319 After the toyl of Battel to repose
320 Your wearied vertue, for the ease you find
321 To slumber here, as in the Vales of Heav'n?
322 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
323 To adore the Conquerour? who now beholds
324 Cherube and Seraph rowling in the Flood
325 With scatter'd Arms and Ensigns, till anon
326 His swift pursuers from Heav'n Gates discern

327 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
328 Thus drooping, or with linked Thunderbolts
329 Transfix us to the bottom of this Gulfe.
330 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n.

331 They heard, and were abasht, and up they sprung
332 Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch
333 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,
334 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.
335 Nor did they not perceave the evil plight
336 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;
337 Yet to thir Generals Voyce they soon obeyd
338 Innumerable. As when the potent Rod
339 Of Amrams Son in Egypts evill day
340 Wav'd round the Coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud
341 Of Locusts, warping on the Eastern Wind,
342 That ore the Realm of impious Pharaoh hung
343 Like Night, and darken'd all the Land of Nile:
344 So numberless were those bad Angels seen
345 Hovering on wing under the Cope of Hell
346 'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding Fires;
347 Till, as a signal giv'n, th' uplifted Spear
348 Of thir great Sultan waving to direct
349 Thir course, in even ballance down they light
350 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the Plain;
351 A multitude, like which the populous North
352 Pour'd never from her frozen loyns, to pass
353 Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous Sons
354 Came like a Deluge on the South, and spread
355 Beneath Gibraltar to the Lybian sands.
356 Forthwith from every Squadron and each Band
357 The Heads and Leaders thither hast where stood
358 Thir great Commander; Godlike shapes and forms
359 Excelling human, Princely Dignities,
360 And Powers that earst in Heaven sat on Thrones;
361 Though of thir Names in heav'nly Records now
362 Be no memorial blotted out and ras'd
363 By thir Rebellion, from the Books of Life.
364 Nor had they yet among the Sons of Eve
365 Got them new Names, till wandring ore the Earth,
366 Through Gods high sufferance for the tryal of man,
367 By falsities and lyes the greatest part
368 Of Mankind they corrupted to forsake
369 God thir Creator, and th' invisible
370 Glory of him that made them, to transform
371 Oft to the Image of a Brute, adorn'd
372 With gay Religions full of Pomp and Gold,
373 And Devils to adore for Deities:
374 Then were they known to men by various Names,

375 And various Idols through the Heathen World.
 376 Say, Muse, thir Names then known, who first, who last,
 377 Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery Couch,
 378 At thir great Emperors call, as next in worth
 379 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,
 380 While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof?
 381 The chief were those who from the Pit of Hell
 382 Roaming to seek thir prey on earth, durst fix
 383 Thir Seats long after next the Seat of God,
 384 Thir Altars by his Altar, Gods ador'd
 385 Among the Nations round, and durst abide
 386 Jehovah thundring out of Sion, thron'd
 387 Between the Cherubim; yea, often plac'd
 388 Within his Sanctuary it self thir Shrines,
 389 Abominations; and with cursed things
 390 His holy Rites, and solemn Feasts profan'd,
 391 **And with thir darkness durst affront his light.**
 392 First Moloch, horrid King besmear'd with blood
 393 Of human sacrifice, and parents tears,
 394 Though for the noyse of Drums and Timbrels loud
 395 Thir childrens cries unheard, that past through fire
 396 To his grim Idol. Him the Ammonite
 397 Worshipt in Rabba and her watry Plain,
 398 **In Argob and in Basan, to the stream**
 399 **Of utmost Arnon. Nor content with such**
 400 **Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart**
 401 **Of Solomon he led by fraud to build**
 402 **His Temple right against the Temple of God**
 403 **On that opprobrious Hill, and made his Grove**
 404 **The pleasant Vally of Hinnom, Tophet thence**
 405 **And black Gehenna call'd, the Type of Hell.**
 406 Next Chemos, th' obscene dread of Moabs Sons,
 407 **From Aroar to Nebo, and the wild.**
 408 **Of Southmost Abarim; in Hesebon**
 409 **And Horonaim, Seons Realm, beyond**
 410 **The flowry Dale of Sibma clad with Vines,**
 411 **And Eleale to th' Asphaltick Pool.**
 412 Peor his other Name, when he entic'd
 413 Israel in Sittim on thir march from Nile
 414 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 415 **Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd**
 416 **Even to that Hill of scandal, by the Grove**
 417 **Of Moloch homicide, lust hard by hate;**
 418 **Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.**
 419 With these came they, who from the bordring flood
 420 Of old Euphrates to the Brook that parts
 421 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general Names
 422 Of Baalim and Ashtaroth, those male,
 423 These Feminine. For Spirits when they please

424 Can either Sex assume, or both; so soft
425 And uncompounded is thir Essence pure,
426 Not ti'd or manacl'd with joynt or limb,
427 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
428 Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they choose
429 Dilated or condens't, bright or obscure,
430 Can execute thir aerie purposes,
431 And works of love or enmity fulfill.
432 For those the Race of Israel oft forsook
433 Thir living strength, and unfrequented left
434 His righteous Altar, bowing lowly down
435 To bestial Gods; for which thir heads as low
436 Bow'd down in Battel, sunk before the Spear
437 Of despicable foes. With these in troop
438 Came Astoreth, whom the Phoenicians call'd
439 Astarte, Queen of Heav'n, with crescent Horns;
440 To whose bright Image nightly by the Moon
441 Sidonian Virgins paid thir Vows and Songs,
442 In Sion also not unsung, where stood
443 Her Temple on th' offensive Mountain, built
444 By that uxorious King, whose heart though large,
445 Beguil'd by fair Idolatresses, fell
446 To Idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,
447 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allur'd
448 The Syrian Damsels to lament his fate
449 In amorous dittyes all a Summers day,
450 While smooth Adonis from his native Rock
451 Ran purple to the Sea, suppos'd with blood
452 Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the Love-tale
453 Infected Sions daughters with like heat,
454 Whose wanton passions in the sacred Porch
455 Ezekiel saw, when by the Vision led
456 His eye survey'd the dark Idolatries
457 Of alienated Judah. Next came one
458 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the Captive Ark
459 Maim'd his brute Image, head and hands lopt off
460 In his own Temple, on the grunsel edge,
461 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his Worshipers:
462 Dagon his Name, Sea Monster, upward Man
463 And downward Fish: yet had his Temple high
464 Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the Coast
465 Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon
466 And Accaron and Gaza 's frontier bounds.
467 Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful Seat
468 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile Banks
469 Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.
470 He also against the house of God was bold:
471 A Leper once he lost and gain'd a King,
472 Ahaz his sottish Conquerour, whom he drew

473 Gods Altar to disparage and displace
474 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
475 His odious offrings, and adore the Gods
476 Whom he had vanquisht. After these appear'd
477 A crew who under Names of old Renown,
478 Osiris, Isis, Orus and thir Train
479 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd
480 Fanatic Egypt and her Priests, to seek
481 Thir wandring Gods disguis'd in brutish forms
482 Rather than human. Nor did Israel scape
483 Th' infection when thir borrow'd Gold compos'd
484 The Calf in Oreb: and the Rebel King
485 Doubl'd that sin in Bethel and in Dan,
486 Lik'ning his Maker to the Grazed Ox,
487 Jehovah, who in one Night when he pass'd
488 From Egypt marching, equal'd with one stroke
489 Both her first born and all her bleating Gods.

490 Bellal came last, then whom a Spirit more lewd
491 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love
492 Vice for it self: To him no Temple stood
493 Or Altar smoak'd; yet who more oft than hee
494 In Temples and at Altars, when the Priest
495 Turns Atheist, as did Ely's Sons, who fill'd
496 With lust and violence the house of God.
497 In Courts and Palaces he also Reigns
498 And in luxurious Cities, where the noyse
499 Of riot ascends above thir loftiest Towrs,
500 And injury and outrage: And when Night
501 Darkens the Streets, then wander forth the Sons
502 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.
503 Witness the Streets of Sodom, and that night
504 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door
505 Expos'd a Matron to avoid worse rape.
506 These were the prime in order and in might;
507 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,
508 Th' Ionian Gods, of Javans Issue held
509 Gods, yet confest later than Heav'n and Earth
510 Thir boasted Parents; Titan Heav'ns first born
511 With his enormous brood, and birthright seisd
512 By younger Saturn, he from mightier Jove
513 His own and Rhea's Son like measure found;
514 So Jove usurping reign'd: these first in Crete
515 And Ida known, thence on the Snowy top
516 Of cold Olympus rul'd the middle Air
517 Thir highest Heav'n; or on the Delphian Cliff,
518 Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds
519 Of Doric Land; or who with Saturn old
520 Fled over Adria to th' Hesperian Fields,

521 **And ore the Celtic roam'd the utmost Isles.**
522 All these and more came flocking; but with looks
523 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd
524 Obscure some glimps of joy, to have found thir chief
525 Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost
526 In loss it self; which on his count'nance cast
527 Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride
528 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
529 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd
530 Thir fanting courage, and dispel'd thir fears.
531 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound
532 Of Trumpets loud and Clarions be upheard
533 His mighty Standard; that proud honour claim'd
534 Azazel as his right, a Cherube tall:
535 Who forthwith from the glittering Staff unfurld
536 Th' Imperial Ensign, which full high advanc't
537 Shon like a Meteor streaming to the Wind
538 **With Gemms and Golden lustre rich imblaz'd,**
539 Seraphic arms and Trophies: all the while
540 Sonorous mettal blowing Martial sounds:
541 At which the universal Host upsent
542 A shout that tore Hells Concave, and beyond
543 Frighted the Reign of Chaos and old Night.
544 All in a moment through the gloom were seen
545 Ten thousand Banners rise into the Air
546 With Orient Colours waving: with them rose
547 A Forrest huge of Spears: and thronging Helms
548 Appear'd, and serried Shields in thick array
549 Of depth immeasurable: Anon they move
550 **In perfect Phalanx to the Dorian mood**
551 **Of** Flutes and soft Recorders; such as rais'd
552 To hight of noblest temper Hero's old
553 Arming to Battel, and in stead of rage
554 Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd
555 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat,
556 Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage
557 With solemn touches, troubl'd thoughts, and chase
558 Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain
559 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they
560 Breathing united force with fixed thought
561 Mov'd on in silence to soft Pipes that charm'd
562 Thir painful steps o're the burnt soyle; and now
563 Advanc't in view, they stand, a horrid Front
564 Of dreadful length and dazling Arms, in guise
565 Of Warriors old with order'd Spear and Shield,
566 Awaiting what command thir mighty Chief
567 Had to impose: He through the armed Files
568 Darts his experienc't eye, and soon traverse
569 The whole Battalion views, thir order due,

570 Thir visages and stature as of Gods,
 571 Thir number last he summs. And now his heart
 572 Distends with pride, and hardning in his strength
 573 Glories: For never since created man,
 574 Met such imbodyed force, as nam'd with these
 575 Could merit more then that small infantry
 576 Warr'd on by Cranes though all the Giant brood
 577 Of Phlegra with th' Heroic Race were joyn'd
 578 That fought at Theb's and Ilium, on each side
 579 Mixt with auxiliar Gods; and what resounds
 580 In Fable or Romance of Uthers Son
 581 Begirt with British and Armoric Knights;
 582 And all who since, Baptiz'd or Infidel
 583 Jousted in Aspramont or Montalban,
 584 Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond,
 585 Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore
 586 When Charlemain with all his Peerage fell
 587 By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond
 588 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd
 589 Thir dread commander: he above the rest
 590 In shape and gesture proudly eminent
 591 Stood like a Towr; his form had yet not lost
 592 All her Original brightness, nor appear'd
 593 Less then Arch Angel ruind, and th' excess
 594 Of Glory obscur'd: As when the Sun new ris'n
 595 Looks through the Horizontal misty Air
 596 Shorn of his Beams, or from behind the Moon
 597 In dim Eclips disastrous twilight sheds
 598 On half the Nations, and with fear of change
 599 Perplexes Monarchs. Dark'n'd so, yet shon
 600 Above them all th' Arch Angel: but his face
 601 Deep scars of Thunder had intrencht, and care
 602 Sat on his faded cheek, but under Browes
 603 Of dauntless courage, and considerate Pride
 604 Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast
 605 Signs of remorse and passion to behold
 606 The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
 607 (Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd
 608 For ever now to have thir lot in pain,
 609 Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc't
 610 Of Heav'n, and from Eternal Splendors flung
 611 For his revolt, yet faithfull how they stood,
 612 Thir Glory witherd. As when Heavens Fire
 613 Hath scath'd the Forrest Oaks, or Mountain Pines,
 614 With singed top thir stately growth though bare
 615 Stands on the blasted Heath. He now prepar'd
 616 To speak; whereat thir doubl'd Ranks they bend
 617 From wing to wing, and half enclose him round
 618 With all his Peers: attention held them mute.

619 Thrice he assayd, and thrice in spight of scorn,
620 Tears such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last
621 Words interwove with sighs found out thir way.

622 O Myriads of immortal Spirits, O Powers
623 Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife
624 Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
625 As this place testifies, and this dire change
626 Hateful to utter: but what power of mind
627 Foreseeing or presaging, from the Depth
628 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,
629 How such united force of Gods, how such
630 As stood like these, could ever know repulse?
631 For who can yet beleeve, though after loss,
632 That all these puissant Legions, whose exile
633 Hath emptied Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend
634 Self-rai'd, and repossess thir native seat?
635 For mee be witness all the Host of Heav'n,
636 If counsels different, or danger shun'd
637 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns
638 Monarch in Heav'n, till then as one secure
639 Sat on his Throne, upheld by old repute,
640 Consent or custome, and his Regal State
641 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,
642 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
643 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own
644 So as not either to provoke, or dread
645 New warr, provok't; our better part remains
646 To work in close design, by fraud or guile
647 What force effected not: that he no less
648 At length from us may find, who overcomes
649 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.
650 Space may produce new Worlds; whereof so rife
651 There went a fame in Heav'n that he ere long
652 Intended to create, and therein plant
653 A generation, whom his choice regard
654 Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven:
655 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps
656 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere:
657 For this Infernal Pit shall never hold
658 Cælestial Spirits in Bondage, nor th' Abyss
659 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts
660 Full Counsel must mature: Peace is despaird,
661 For who can think Submission? Warr then, Warr
662 Open or understood must be resolv'd.

663 He spake: and to confirm his words, out-flew
664 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
665 Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze

666 Far round illumin'd hell: highly they rag'd
667 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped Arms
668 Clash'd on thir sounding Shields the din of war,
669 Hurling defiance toward the Vault of Heav'n.

670 There stood a Hill not farwhose griesly top
671 Belch'd fire and rowling smoak; the rest entire
672 Shon with a glossie scurff, undoubted sign
673 That in his womb was hid metallic Ore,
674 The work of Sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed
675 A numerous Brigad hasten'd. **As when Bands**
676 **Of Pioners with Spade and Pickax arm'd**
677 **Forerun the Royal Camp, to trench a Field,**
678 **Or cast a Rampart.** Mammon led them on,
679 Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell
680 From heav'n, for ev'n in heav'n his looks and thoughts
681 Were always downward bent, admiring more
682 The riches of Heav'ns pavement, trod'n Gold,
683 Then aught divine or holy else enjoy'd
684 In vision beatific: by him first
685 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,
686 Ransack'd the Center, and with impious hands
687 Riff'd the bowels of thir mother Earth
688 For Treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
689 Op'nd into the Hill a spacious wound
690 And dig'd out ribs of Gold. Let none admire
691 That riches grow in Hell; that soyle may best
692 Deserve the precious bane. **And here let those**
693 **Who boast in mortal things, and wond'ring tell**
694 **Of Babel, and the works of Memphian Kings**
695 **Learn how thir greatest Monuments of Fame,**
696 **And Strength and Art are easily out-done**
697 **By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour**
698 **What in an age they with incessant toyle**
699 **And hands innumerable scarce perform.**
700 **Nigh on the Plain** in many cells prepar'd,
701 That underneath had veins of liquid fire
702 Sluc'd from the Lake, a second multitude
703 With wond'rous Art found out the massie Ore,
704 Severing each kind, and scum'd the Bullion dross:
705 A third as soon had form'd within the ground
706 A various mould, and from the boyling cells
707 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook,
708 **As in an Organ from one blast of wind**
709 **To many a row of Pipes the sound-board breaths.**
710 Anon out of the earth a Fabrick huge
711 Rose like an Exhalation, with the sound
712 Of Dulcet Symphonies and voices sweet,
713 Built like a Temple, **where Pilasters round**

714 Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid
 715 With Golden Architrave; nor did there want
 716 Cornice or Freeze, with bossy Sculptures grav'n,
 717 The Roof was fretted Gold. Not Babilon,
 718 Nor great Alcairo such magnificence
 719 Equal'd in all thir glories, to inshrine
 720 Belus or Serapis thir Gods, or seat
 721 Thir Kings, when Ægypt with Assyria strove
 722 In wealth and luxurie. Th' ascending pile
 723 Stood fixt her stately highth, and strait the dores
 724 Op'ning thir brazen foulds discover wide
 725 Within, her ample spaces, o're the smooth
 726 And level pavement: from the arched roof
 727 Pendant by suttile Magic many a row
 728 Of Starry Lamps and blazing Cressets fed
 729 With Naphtha and Asphaltus yeilded light
 730 As from a sky. The hasty multitude
 731 Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise
 732 And some the Architect: his hand was known
 733 In Heav'n by many a Towred structure high,
 734 Where Scepter'd Angels held thir residence,
 735 And sat as Princes, whom the supreme King
 736 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,
 737 Each in his Hierarchie, the Orders bright.
 738 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd
 739 In ancient Greece; and in Ausonian land
 740 Men call'd him Mulciber; and how he fell
 741 From Heav'n, they fabl'd, thrown by angry Jove
 742 Sheer o're the Chrystal Battlements; from Morn
 743 To Noon he fell, from Noon to dewy Eve,
 744 A Summers day; and with the setting Sun
 745 Dropt from the Zenith like a falling Star,
 746 On Lemnos th' Ægæan Ile: thus they relate,
 747 Erring; for he with this rebellious rout
 748 Fell long before; nor aught avail'd him now
 749 To have built in Heav'n high Towrs; nor did he scape
 750 By all his Engins, but was headlong sent
 751 With his industrious crew to build in hell.
 752 Mean while the winged Haralds by command
 753 Of Sovran power, with awful Ceremony
 754 And Trumpets sound throughout the Host proclaim
 755 A solemn Councel forthwith to be held
 756 At Pandæmonium, the high Capital
 757 Of Satan and his Peers: thir summons call'd
 758 From every Band and squared Regiment
 759 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon
 760 With hunderds and with thousands trooping came
 761 Attended: all access was throng'd, the Gates
 762 And Porches wide, but chief the spacious Hall

763 (Though like a cover'd field, where Champions bold
764 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldans chair
765 Defi'd the best of Panim chivalry
766 To mortal combat or carreer with Lance)
767 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,
768 Brusht with the hiss of russling wings. As Bees
769 In spring time, when the Sun with Taurus rides,
770 Pour forth thir populous youth about the Hive
771 In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers
772 Flie to and fro, or on the smoothed Plank,
773 The suburb of thir Straw-built Cittadel,
774 New rub'd with Baum, expatiate and confer
775 Thir State affairs. So thick the aerie crowd
776 Swarm'd and were straitn'd; till the Signal giv'n.
777 Behold a wonder! they but now who seemd
778 In bigness to surpass Earths Giant Sons
779 Now less then smallest Dwarfs, in narrow room
780 Throng numberless, like that Pigmean Race
781 Beyond the Indian Mount, or Faerie Elves,
782 Whose midnight Revels, by a Forrest side
783 Or Fountain some belated Peasant sees,
784 Or dreams he sees, while over-head the Moon
785 Sits Arbitress, and neerer to the Earth
786 Wheels her pale course, they on thir mirth and dance
787 Intent, with jocond Music charm his ear;
788 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.
789 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
790 Reduc'd thir shapes immense, and were at large,
791 Though without number still amidst the Hall
792 Of that infernal Court. But far within
793 And in thir own dimensions like themselves
794 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim
795 In close recess and secret conclave sat
796 A thousand Demy-Gods on golden seat's,
797 Frequent and full. After short silence then
798 And summons read, the great consult began.

BOOK II.

1 High on a Throne of Royal State, which far
2 Outshon the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,
3 Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand
4 Shows on her Kings Barbaric Pearl and Gold,
5 Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd
6 To that bad eminence; and from despair
7 Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
8 Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
9 Vain Warr with Heav'n, and by success untaught

10 His proud imaginations thus displaid.

11 Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n,
12 For since no deep within her gulf can hold
13 Immortal vigor, though opprest and fall'n,
14 I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent
15 Celestial vertues rising, will appear
16 More glorious and more dread then from no fall,
17 **And trust themselves to fear no second fate:**
18 Mee though just right, and the fixt Laws of Heav'n
19 Did first create your Leader, next free choice,
20 With what besides, in Counsel or in Fight,
21 Hath bin achievd of merit, yet this loss
22 Thus farr at least recover'd, hath much more
23 Establisht in a safe unenvied Throne
24 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
25 In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw
26 Envy from each inferior; but who here
27 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
28 Formost to stand against the Thunderers aim
29 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
30 Of endless pain? where there is then no good
31 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there
32 From Faction; for none sure will claim in Hell
33 Precedence, none, whose portion is so small
34 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
35 Will covet more. With this advantage then
36 To union, and firm Faith, and firm accord,
37 More then can be in Heav'n, we now return
38 To claim our just inheritance of old,
39 **Surer to prosper then prosperity**
40 **Could have assur'd us; and by what best way,**
41 Whether of open Warr or covert guile,
42 We now debate; who can advise, may speak.

43 He ceas'd, and next him Moloc, Scepter'd King
44 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit
45 That fought in Heav'n; now fiercer by despair:
46 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
47 Equal in strength, and rather then be less
48 Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost
49 Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse
50 He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake.

51 My sentence is for open Warr: Of Wiles,
52 More unexpert, I boast not: them let those
53 Contrive who need, or when they need, not now
54 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
55 Millions that stand in Arms, and longing wait

56 The Signal to ascend, sit lingring here
57 Heav'ns fugitives, and for thir dwelling place
58 Accept this dark opprobrious Den of shame,
59 The Prison of his Tyranny who Reigns
60 By our delay? no, let us rather choose
61 Arm'd with Hell flames and fury all at once
62 O're Heav'ns high Towrs to force resistless way,
63 Turning our Tortures into horrid Arms
64 Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise
65 Of his Almighty Engin he shall hear
66 Infernal Thunder, and for Lightning see
67 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
68 Among his Angels; and his Throne it self
69 Mixt with Tartarean Sulphur, and strange fire,
70 His own invented Torments. But perhaps
71 The way seems difficult and steep to scale
72 With upright wing against a higher foe.
73 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench
74 Of that forgetful Lake benumm not still,
75 That in our proper motion we ascend
76 Up to our native seat: descent and fall
77 To us is adverse. Who but felt of late
78 When the fierce Foe hung on our brok'n Rear
79 Insulting, and pursu'd us through the Deep,
80 With what compulsion and laborious flight
81 We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easie then;
82 Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke
83 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
84 To our destruction: if there be in Hell
85 Fear to be worse destroy'd: what can be worse
86 Then to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd
87 In this abhorred deep to utter woe;
88 Where pain of unextinguishable fire
89 Must exercise us without hope of end
90 The Vassals of his anger, when the Scourge
91 Inexorably, and the torturing hour
92 Calls us to Penance? More destroy'd then thus
93 We should be quite abolisht and expire.
94 What fear we then? what doubt we to incense
95 His utmost ire? which to the highth enrag'd,
96 Will either quite consume us, and reduce
97 To nothing this essential, happier farr
98 Then miserable to have eternal being:
99 Or if our substance be indeed Divine,
100 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst
101 On this side nothing; and by proof we feel
102 Our power sufficient to disturb his Heav'n,
103 And with perpetual inrodes to Allarme,
104 Though inaccessible, his fatal Throne:

105 Which if not Victory is yet Revenge.
106 He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
107 Desperate revenge, and Battel dangerous
108 To less then Gods. On th' other side up rose
109 Belial, in act more graceful and humane;
110 A fairer person lost not Heav'n; he seemd
111 For dignity compos'd and high exploit:
112 But all was false and hollow; though his Tongue
113 Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear
114 The better reason, to perplex and dash
115 Maturest Counsels: for his thoughts were low;
116 To vice industrious, but to Nobler deeds
117 Timorous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the ear,
118 And with perswasive accent thus began.

119 I should be much for open Warr, O Peers,
120 As not behind in hate; if what was urg'd
121 Main reason to perswade immediate Warr,
122 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
123 Ominous conjecture on the whole success:
124 When he who most excels in fact of Arms,
125 In what he counsels and in what excels
126 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
127 And utter dissolution, as the scope
128 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
129 First, what Revenge? the Towrs of Heav'n are fill'd
130 With Armed watch, that render all access
131 Impregnable; oft on the bordering Deep
132 Encamp thir Legions, or with obscure wing
133 Scout farr and wide into the Realm of night,
134 Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way
135 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise
136 With blackest Insurrection, to confound
137 Heav'ns purest Light, yet our great Enemy
138 All incorruptible would on his Throne
139 Sit unpolluted, and th' Ethereal mould
140 Incapable of stain would soon expel
141 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire
142 Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope
143 Is flat despair: we must exasperate
144 Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,
145 And that must end us, that must be our cure,
146 To be no more; sad cure; for who would loose,
147 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
148 Those thoughts that wander through Eternity,
149 To perish rather, swallowd up and lost
150 In the wide womb of uncreated night,
151 Devoid of sense and motion? and who knows,

152 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
153 Can give it, or will ever? how he can
154 Is doubtful; that he never will is sure.
155 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,
156 Belike through impotence, or unaware,
157 To give his Enemies thir wish, and end
158 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
159 To punish endless? wherefore cease we then?
160 Say they who counsel Warr, we are decreed,
161 Reserv'd and destin'd to Eternal woe;
162 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
163 What can we suffer worse? is this then worst,
164 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in Arms?
165 What when we fled amain, pursu'd and strook
166 With Heav'ns afflicting Thunder, and besought
167 The Deep to shelter us? this Hell then seem'd
168 A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay
169 Chain'd on the burning Lake? that sure was worse.
170 What if the breath that kindl'd those grim fires
171 Awak'd should blow them into sevenfold rage
172 And plunge us in the flames? or from above
173 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
174 His red right hand to plague us? what if all
175 Her stores were open'd, and this Firmament
176 Of Hell should spout her Cataracts of Fire,
177 Impendent horrors, threatning hideous fall
178 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
179 Designing or exhorting glorious warr,
180 Caught in a fierie Tempest shall be hurl'd
181 Each on his rock transfixt, the sport and prey
182 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk
183 Under yon boyling Ocean, wrapt in Chains;
184 There to converse with everlasting groans,
185 Unrespited, unpitied, unrepreevd,
186 Ages of hopeless end; this would be worse.
187 Warr therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
188 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
189 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
190 Views all things at one view? he from heav'ns highth
191 All these our motions vain, sees and derides;
192 Not more Almighty to resist our might
193 Then wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
194 Shall we then live thus vile, the Race of Heav'n
195 Thus traml'd, thus expell'd to suffer here
196 Chains and these Torments? better these then worse
197 By my advice; since fate inevitable
198 Subdues us, and Omnipotent Decree,
199 The Victors will. To suffer, as to doe,
200 Our strength is equal, nor the Law unjust

201 That so ordains: this was at first resolv'd,
202 If we were wise, against so great a foe
203 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
204 I laugh, when those who at the Spear are bold
205 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear
206 What yet they know must follow, to endure
207 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,
208 The sentence of thir Conquerour: This is now
209 Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,
210 Our Supream Foe in time may much remit
211 His anger, and perhaps thus farr remov'd
212 Not mind us not offending, satisfi'd
213 With what is punish't; whence these raging fires
214 Will slack'n, if his breath stir not thir flames.
215 Our purer essence then will overcome
216 Thir noxious vapour, or enur'd not feel,
217 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conformd
218 In temper and in nature, will receive
219 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain;
220 This horror will grow milde, this darkness light,
221 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
222 Of future dayes may bring, what chance, what change
223 Worth waiting, since our present lot appeers
224 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
225 If we procure not to our selves more woe.

226 Thus Belial with words cloath'd in reasons garb
227 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloath,
228 Not peace: and after him thus Mammon spake.

229 Either to disinthrone the King of Heav'n
230 We warr, if warr be best, or to regain
231 Our own right lost: him to unthroned we then
232 May hope when everlasting Fate shall yeild
233 To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife:
234 The former vain to hope argues as vain
235 The latter: for what place can be for us
236 Within Heav'ns bound, unless Heav'ns Lord supream
237 We overpower? Suppose he should relent
238 And publish Grace to all, on promise made
239 Of new Subjection; with what eyes could we
240 Stand in his presence humble, and receive
241 Strict Laws impos'd, to celebrate his Throne
242 With warbl'd Hymns, and to his Godhead sing
243 Forc't Halleluiahs; while he Lordly sits
244 Our envied Sovran; and his Altar breathes
245 Ambrosial Odours and Ambrosial Flowers,
246 Our servile offerings. This must be our task
247 In Heav'n this our delight; how wearisom

248 Eternity so spent in worship paid
249 To whom we hate. Let us not then pursue
250 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd
251 Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state
252 Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek
253 Our own good from our selves, and from our own
254 Live to our selves, though in this vast recess,
255 Free, and to none accountable, preferring
256 Hard liberty before the easie yoke
257 Of servile Pomp. Our greatness will appeer
258 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
259 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse
260 We can create, and in what place so e're
261 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain
262 Through labour and indurance. This deep world
263 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
264 Thick clouds and dark doth Heav'ns all-ruling Sire
265 Choose to reside, his Glory unobscur'd,
266 And with the Majesty of darkness round
267 Covers his Throne; from whence deep thunders roar
268 Must'ring thir rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell?
269 As he our darkness, cannot we his Light
270 Imitate when we please? This Desart soile
271 Wants not her hidden lustre, Gemms and Gold;
272 Nor want we skill or Art, from whence to raise
273 Magnificence; and what can Heav'n shew more?
274 Our torments also may in length of time
275 Become our Elements, these piercing Fires
276 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd
277 Into thir temper; which must needs remove
278 The sensible of pain. All things invite
279 To peaceful Counsels, and the settl'd State
280 Of order, how in safety best we may
281 Compose our present evils, with regard
282 Of what we are and were, dismissing quite
283 All thoughts of warr: ye have what I advise.

284 He scarce had finisht, when such murmur filld
285 Th' Assembly, as when hollow Rocks retain
286 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long
287 Had rous'd the Sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
288 Sea-faring men orewatcht, whose Bark by chance
289 Or Pinnace anchors in a craggy Bay
290 After the Tempest: Such applause was heard
291 As Mammon ended, and his Sentence pleas'd,
292 Advising peace: for such another Field
293 They dreaded worse then Hell: so much the fear
294 Of Thunder and the Sword of Michael
295 Wrought still within them; and no less desire

296 To found this nether Empire, which might rise
 297 By pollicy, and long process of time,
 298 In emulation opposite to Heav'n.
 299 Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, then whom,
 300 Satan except, none higher sat, with grave
 301 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd
 302 A Pillar of State; deep on his Front engraven
 303 Deliberation sat and public care;
 304 And Princely counsel in his face yet shon,
 305 Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood
 306 With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear
 307 The weight of mightiest Monarchies; his look
 308 Drew audience and attention still as Night
 309 Or Summers Noon-tide air, while thus he spake.

310 Thrones and Imperial Powers, off-spring of heav'n
 311 Ethereal Vertues; or these Titles now
 312 Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd
 313 Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote
 314 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
 315 A growing Empire; doubtless; while we dream,
 316 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd
 317 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
 318 Beyond his Potent arm, **to live exempt**
 319 **From Heav'ns high jurisdiction, in new League**
 320 **Banded against his Throne, but to remaine**
 321 **In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,**
 322 **Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd**
 323 **His captive multitude:** For he, be sure
 324 In heighth or depth, still first and last will Reign
 325 Sole King, and of his Kingdom loose no part
 326 **By our revolt, but over Hell extend**
 327 **His Empire, and with Iron Scepter rule**
 328 **Us here, as with his Golden those in Heav'n.**
 329 What sit we then projecting peace and Warr?
 330 Warr hath determin'd us, and foild with loss
 331 Irreparable; tearms of peace yet none
 332 Voutsaf't or sought; for what peace will be giv'n
 333 To us enslav'd, but custody severe,
 334 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment
 335 Inflicted? and what peace can we return,
 336 But to our power hostility and hate,
 337 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,
 338 Yet ever plotting how the Conqueror least
 339 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoyce
 340 In doing what we most in suffering feel?
 341 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 342 With dangerous expedition to invade
 343 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or Siege,

344 Or ambush from the Deep. What if we find
345 Some easier enterprize? There is a place
346 (if ancient and prophetic fame in Heav'n
347 Err not) another World, the happy seat
348 Of some new Race call'd Man, about this time
349 To be created like to us, though less
350 In power and excellence, but favour'd more
351 Of him who rules above; so was his will
352 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an Oath,
353 That shook Heav'ns whol circumference, confirm'd.
354 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
355 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,
356 Or substance, how endu'd, and what thir Power,
357 And where thir weakness, how attempted best,
358 By force or suttlety: Though Heav'n be shut,
359 And Heav'ns high Arbitrator sit secure
360 In his own strength, this place may lye expos'd
361 The utmost border of his Kingdom, left
362 To thir defence who hold it: here perhaps
363 Som advantagious act may be achiev'd
364 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire
365 To waste his whole Creation, or possess
366 All as our own, and drive as we were driven,
367 The punie habitants, or if not drive,
368 Seduce them to our Party, that thir God
369 May prove thir foe, and with repenting hand
370 Abolish his own works. This would surpass
371 Common revenge, and interrupt his joy
372 In our Confusion, and our Joy upraise
373 In his disturbance; when his darling Sons
374 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse
375 Thir frail Original, and faded bliss,
376 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
377 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
378 Hatching vain Empires. Thus Beelzebub
379 Pleaded his devilish Counsel, first devis'd
380 By Satan, and in part propos'd: for whence,
381 But from the Author of all ill could Spring
382 So deep a malice, to confound the race
383 Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell
384 To mingle and involve, done all to spite
385 The great Creatour? But thir spite still serves
386 His glory to augment. The bold design
387 Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy
388 Sparkl'd in all thir eyes; with full assent
389 They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.

390 Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
391 Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,

392 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep
393 Will once more lift us up, in spite of Fate,
394 Neerer our ancient Seat; perhaps in view
395 Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring Arms
396 And opportune excursion we may chance
397 Re-enter Heav'n; or else in some milde Zone
398 Dwell not unvisited of Heav'ns fair Light
399 Secure, and at the brightning Orient beam
400 Purge off this gloom; the soft delicious Air,
401 To heal the scarr of these corrosive Fires
402 Shall breathe her balme. But first whom shall we send
403 In search of this new world, whom shall we find
404 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandring feet
405 The dark unbottom'd infinite Abyss
406 And through the palpable obscure find out
407 His uncouth way, or spread his aerie flight
408 Upborn with indefatigable wings
409 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
410 The happy Ile; what strength, what art can then
411 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe
412 Through the strict Senteries and Stations thick
413 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need
414 All circumspection, and we now no less
415 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send,
416 The weight of all and our last hope relies.

417 This said, he sat; and expectation held
418 His look suspence, awaiting who appeer'd
419 To second, or oppose, or undertake
420 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute,
421 Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each
422 In others count'nance read his own dismay
423 Astonisht: none among the choice and prime
424 Of those Heav'n-warring Champions could be found
425 So hardie as to proffer or accept
426 Alone the dreadful voyage; till at last
427 Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd
428 Above his fellows, with Monarchal pride
429 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

430 O Progeny of Heav'n, Empyreal Thrones,
431 With reason hath deep silence and demurr
432 Seis'd us, though undismaid: long is the way
433 And hard that out of Hell leads up to light;
434 Our prison strong, this huge convex of Fire,
435 Outrageous to devour, immures us round
436 Ninefold, and gates of burning Adamant
437 Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.
438 These past, if any pass, the void profound

439 Of unessential Night receives him next
440 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being
441 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.
442 If thence he scape into whatever world,
443 Or unknown Region, what remains him less
444 Then unknown dangers and as hard escape.
445 But I should ill become this Throne, O Peers,
446 And this Imperial Sov'ranty, adorn'd
447 With splendor, arm'd with power, if aught propos'd
448 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
449 Of difficulty or danger could deterr
450 Mee from attempting. Wherefore do I assume
451 These Royalties, and not refuse to Reign,
452 Refusing to accept as great a share
453 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
454 To him who Reigns, and so much to him due
455 Of hazard more, as he above the rest
456 High honourd sits? Go therefore mighty Powers,
457 Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home,
458 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
459 The present misery, and render Hell
460 More tollerable; if there be cure or charm
461 To respite or deceive, or slack the pain
462 Of this ill Mansion: intermit no watch
463 Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad
464 Through all the Coasts of dark destruction seek
465 Deliverance for us all: this enterprize
466 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
467 The Monarch, and prevented all reply,
468 Prudent, least from his resolution rais'd
469 Others among the chief might offer now
470 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they feard;
471 And so refus'd might in opinion stand
472 His Rivals, winning cheap the high repute
473 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
474 Dreaded not more th' adventure then his voice
475 Forbidding; and at once with him they rose;
476 Thir rising all at once was as the sound
477 Of Thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend
478 With awful reverence prone; and as a God
479 Extoll him equal to the highest in Heav'n:
480 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,
481 That for the general safety he despis'd
482 His own: for neither do the Spirits damn'd
483 Loose all her virtue; least bad men should boast
484 Thir specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,
485 Or clos ambition varnisht o're with zeal.
486 Thus they thir doubtful consultations dark
487 Ended rejoicing in thir matchless Chief:

488 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds
489 Ascending, while the North wind sleeps, o'rspread
490 Heav'ns chearful face, the lowring Element
491 Scowls ore the dark'nd lantskip Snow, or showre;
492 If chance the radiant Sun with farewell sweet
493 Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,
494 The birds thir notes renew, and bleating herds
495 Attest thir joy, that hill and valley rings.
496 O shame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd
497 Firm concord holds, men onely disagree
498 Of Creatures rational, though under hope
499 Of heavenly Grace: and God proclaiming peace,
500 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife
501 Among themselves, and levie cruel warres,
502 Wasting the Earth, each other to destroy:
503 As if (which might induce us to accord)
504 Man had not hellish foes anow besides,
505 That day and night for his destruction waite.

506 The Stygian Counsel thus dissolv'd; and forth
507 In order came the grand infernal Peers,
508 Midst came thir mighty Paramount, and seemd
509 Alone th' Antagonist of Heav'n, nor less
510 Than Hells dread Emperour with pomp Supream,
511 And God-like imitated State; him round
512 A Globe of fierie Seraphim inclos'd
513 With bright imblazonrie, and horrent Arms.
514 Then of thir Session ended they bid cry
515 With Trumpets regal sound the great result:
516 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim
517 Put to thir mouths the sounding Alchymie
518 By Haralds voice explain'd: the hollow Abyss
519 Heard farr and wide, and all the host of Hell
520 With deafning shout, return'd them loud acclaim.
521 Thence more at ease thir minds and somewhat rais'd
522 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers
523 Disband, and wandring, each his several way
524 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
525 Leads him perplext, where he may likeliest find
526 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
527 The irksom hours, till this great Chief return.
528 Part on the Plain, or in the Air sublime
529 Upon the wing, or in swift Race contend,
530 As at th' Olympian Games or Pythian fields;
531 Part curb thir fierie Steeds, or shun the Goal
532 With rapid wheels, or fronted Brigads form.
533 As when to warn proud Cities warr appears
534 Wag'd in the troubl'd Skie, and Armies rush
535 To Battel in the Clouds, before each Van

536 Prick forth the Aerie Knights, and couch thir Spears
537 Till thickest Legions close; with feats of Arms
538 From either end of Heav'n the welkin burns.
539 Others with vast Typhoean rage more fell
540 Rend up both Rocks and Hills, and ride the Air
541 In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wilde uproar.
542 As when Alcides from Oechalia Crown'd
543 With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore
544 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian Pines,
545 And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw
546 Into th' Euboic Sea. Others more milde,
547 Retreated in a silent valley, sing
548 With notes Angelical to many a Harp
549 Thir own Heroic deeds and hapless fall
550 By doom of Battel; and complain that Fate
551 Free Vertue should enthrall to Force or Chance.
552 Thir Song was partial, but the harmony
553 (What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?)
554 Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment
555 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
556 (For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Sense,)
557 Others apart sat on a Hill retir'd,
558 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
559 Of Providence, Foreknowledge, Will and Fate,
560 Fixt Fate, free will, foreknowledg absolute,
561 And found no end, in wandring mazes lost.
562 Of good and evil much they argu'd then,
563 Of happiness and final misery,
564 Passion and Apathie, and glory and shame,
565 Vain wisdom all, and false Philosophie:
566 Yet with a pleasing sorcerie could charm
567 Pain for a while or anguish, and excite
568 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured brest
569 With stubborn patience as with triple steel.
570 Another part in Squadrons and gross Bands,
571 On bold adventure to discover wide
572 That dismal world, if any Clime perhaps
573 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
574 Four ways thir flying March, along the Banks
575 Of four infernal Rivers that disgorge
576 Into the burning Lake thir baleful streams;
577 Abhorred Styx the flood of deadly hate,
578 Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep;
579 Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
580 Heard on the rufol stream; fierce Phlegeton
581 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
582 Farr off from these a slow and silent stream,
583 Lethe the River of Oblivion rouses
584 Her watrie Labyrinth, whereof who drinks,

585 Forthwith his former state and being forgets,
586 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
587 Beyond this flood a frozen Continent
588 Lies dark and wilde, beat with perpetual storms
589 Of Whirlwind and dire Hail, which on firm land
590 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems
591 Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,
592 A gulf profound as that Serbonian Bog
593 Betwixt Damia and mount Casius old,
594 Where Armies whole have sunk: the parching Air
595 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of Fire.
596 Thither by harpy-footed Furies hail'd,
597 At certain revolutions all the damn'd
598 Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change
599 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
600 From Beds of raging Fire to starve in Ice
601 Thir soft Ethereal warmth, and there to pine
602 Immovable, infixt, and frozen round,
603 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
604 They ferry over this Lethean Sound
605 Both to and fro, thir sorrow to augment,
606 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
607 The tempting stream, with one small drop to loose
608 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
609 All in one moment, and so neer the brink;
610 But Fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt
611 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards
612 The Ford, and of it self the water flies
613 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
614 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on
615 In confus'd march forlorn, th' adventrous Bands
616 With shuddring horror pale, and eyes agast
617 View'd first thir lamentable lot, and found
618 No rest: through many a dark and drearie Vaile
619 They pass'd, and many a Region dolorous,
620 O're many a Frozen, many a fierie Alpe,
621 Rocks, Caves, Lakes, Fens, Bogs, Dens, and shades of
622 death,
622 A Universe of death, which God by curse
623 Created evil, for evil only good,
624 Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds,
625 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
626 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
627 Than Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,
628 Gorgons and Hydra's, and Chimera's dire.

629 Mean while the Adversary of God and Man,
630 Satan with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,
631 Puts on swift wings, and towards the Gates of Hell

632 Explores his solitary flight; som times
 633 He scours the right hand coast, som times the left,
 634 Now shaves with level wing the Deep, then soares
 635 Up to the fiery Concave touring high.
 636 As when farr off at Sea a Fleet descri'd
 637 Hangs in the Clouds, by Æquinoctial Winds
 638 Close sailing from Bengala, or the Iles
 639 Of Ternate and Tidore, whence Merchants bring
 640 Thir spicie Drugs: they on the Trading Flood
 641 Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape
 642 Ply stemming nightly toward the Pole. So seem'd
 643 Farr off the flying Fiend: at last appeer
 644 Hell bounds high reaching to the horrid Roof,
 645 And thrice threefold the Gates; three folds were Brass,
 646 Three Iron, three of Adamantine Rock,
 647 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,
 648 Yet unconsum'd. Before the Gates there sat
 649 On either side a formidable shape;
 650 The one seem'd Woman to the waste, and fair,
 651 But ended foul in many a scaly fould
 652 Voluminous and vast, a Serpent arm'd
 653 With mortal sting: about her middle round
 654 A cry of Hell Hounds never ceasing bark'd
 655 With wide Cerberian mouths full loud, and rung
 656 A hideous Peal: yet, when they list, would creep,
 657 If aught disturb'd thir noyse, into her woomb,
 658 And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd,
 659 Within unseen. Farr less abhorrd than these
 660 Vex'd Scylla bathing in the Sea that parts
 661 Calabria from the hoarce Trinacrian shore:
 662 Nor uglier follow the Night-Hag, when call'd
 663 In secret, riding through the Air she comes
 664 Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance
 665 With Lapland Witches, while the labouring Moon
 666 Eclipses at thir charms. The other shape,
 667 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none
 668 Distinguishable in member, joynt, or limb,
 669 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 670 For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night,
 671 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,
 672 And shook a dreadful Dart; what seem'd his head
 673 The likeness of a Kingly Crown had on.
 674 Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 675 The Monster moving onward came as fast
 676 With horrid strides, Hell trembled as he strode.
 677 Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,
 678 Admir'd, not fear'd; God and his Son except,
 679 Created thing naught valu'd he nor shun'd;
 680 And with disdainful look thus first began.

681 Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,
 682 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance
 683 Thy miscreated Front athwart my way
 684 To yonder Gates? through them I mean to pass,
 685 That be assur'd, without leave askt of thee:
 686 Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,
 687 Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav'n.

688 To whom the Goblin full of wrauth reply'd,
 689 Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou hee,
 690 Who first broke peace in Heav'n and Faith, till then
 691 Unbrok'n, and in proud rebellious Arms
 692 Drew after him the third part of Heav'ns Sons
 693 Conjur'd against the highest, for which both Thou
 694 And they outcast from God, are here condemn'd
 695 To waste Eternal dayes in woe and pain?
 696 And reck'n'st thou thy self with Spirits of Heav'n,
 697 Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn
 698 Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,
 699 Thy King and Lord? Back to thy punishment,
 700 False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,
 701 Least with a whip of Scorpions I pursue
 702 Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this Dart
 703 Strange horror seise thee, and pangs unfelt before.

704 So spake the grieslie terrour, and in shape,
 705 So speaking and so threatning, grew tenfold
 706 More dreadful and deform: on th' other side
 707 Incenst with indignation Satan stood
 708 Unterrifi'd, **and like a Comet burn'd,**
 709 **That fires the length of Ophiucus huge**
 710 **In th' Artick Sky, and from his horrid hair**
 711 **Shakes Pestilence and Warr.** Each at the Head
 712 Level'd his deadly aime; thir fatall hands
 713 No second stroke intend, and such a frown
 714 Each cast at th' other, as when two black Clouds
 715 With Heav'ns Artillery fraught, come rattling on
 716 **Over the Caspian, then stand front to front**
 717 Hov'ring a space, till Winds the signal blow
 718 To joyn thir dark Encounter in mid air:
 719 So frownd the mighty Combatants, that Hell
 720 Grew darker at thir frown, so matcht they stood;
 721 For never but once more was either like
 722 To meet so great a foe: and now great deeds
 723 Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,
 724 Had not the Snakie Sorceress that sat
 725 Fast by Hell Gate, and kept the fatal Key,
 726 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

727 O Father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,
728 Against thy only Son? What fury O Son,
729 Possesses thee to bend that mortal Dart
730 Against thy Fathers head? and know'st for whom;
731 For him who sits above and laughs the while
732 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute
733 What e're his wrath, which he calls Justice, bids,
734 His wrath which one day will destroy ye both.

735 She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest
736 Forbore, then these to her Satan return'd:

737 So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
738 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand
739 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds
740 What it intends; till first I know of thee,
741 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why
742 In this infernal Vaile first met thou call'st
743 Me Father, and that Fantasm call'st my Son?
744 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
745 Sight more detestable then him and thee.

746 T' whom thus the Portress of Hell Gate reply'd;
747 Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem
748 Now in thine eye so foul, once deemd so fair
749 In Heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight
750 Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd
751 In bold conspiracy against Heav'ns King,
752 All on a sudden miserable pain
753 Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzie swumm
754 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast
755 Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,
756 Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,
757 Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddess arm'd
758 Out of thy head I sprung: amazement seis'd
759 All th' Host of Heav'n; back they recoild affraid
760 At first, and call'd me Sin, and for a Sign
761 Portentous held me; but familiar grown,
762 I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won
763 The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft
764 Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing
765 Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st
766 With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd
767 A growing burden. Mean while Warr arose,
768 And fields were fought in Heav'n; wherein remaind
769 (For what could else) to our Almighty Foe
770 Cleer Victory, to our part loss and rout
771 Through all the Empyrean: down they fell
772 **Driv'n headlong from the Pitch of Heaven, down**

773 Into this Deep, and in the general fall
 774 I also; at which time this powerful Key
 775 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep
 776 These Gates for ever shut, which none can pass
 777 Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat
 778 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb
 779 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown
 780 Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.
 781 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest
 782 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
 783 Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
 784 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 785 Transform'd: but he my inbredemie
 786 Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal Dart
 787 Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out Death;
 788 Hell trembl'd at the hideous Name, and sigh'd
 789 From all her Caves, and back resounded Death.
 790 I fled, but he pursu'd (though more, it seems,
 791 Inflam'd with lust then rage) and swifter far,
 792 Mee overtook his mother all dismaid,
 793 And in embraces forcible and foule
 794 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot
 795 These yelling Monsters that with ceaseless cry
 796 Surround me, as thou sawst, hourly conceiv'd
 797 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
 798 To me, for when they list into the womb
 799 That bred them they return, and howle and gnaw
 800 My Bowels, thir repast; then bursting forth
 801 A fresh with conscious terrours vex me round,
 802 That rest or intermission none I find.
 803 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 804 Grim Death my Son and foe, who sets them on,
 805 And me his Parent would full soon devour
 806 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 807 His end with mine involvd; **and knows that I**
 808 **Should prove a bitter Morsel, and his bane,**
 809 **When ever that shall be;** so Fate pronounc'd.
 810 But thou O Father, I forewarn thee, shun
 811 His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope
 812 To be invulnerable in those bright Arms,
 813 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
 814 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

815 She finish'd, and the suttle Fiend his lore
 816 Soon learnd, now milder, and thus answerd smooth.
 817 Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy Sire,
 818 And my fair Son here showst me, the dear pledge
 819 Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, **and joys**
 820 **Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change**

821 **Befalln us unforeseen, unthought of,** know
 822 I come no enemie, but to set free
 823 From out this dark and dismal house of pain,
 824 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly Host
 825 Of Spirits that in our just pretenses arm'd
 826 Fell with us from on high: from them I go
 827 This uncouth errand sole, and one for all
 828 My self expose, with lonely steps to tread
 829 Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 830 To search with wandring quest a place foretold
 831 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now
 832 Created vast and round, a place of bliss
 833 In the Pourlieues of Heav'n, and therein plac't
 834 A race of upstart Creatures, to supply
 835 Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,
 836 Least Heav'n surcharg'd with potent multitude
 837 Might hap to move new broiles: Be this or aught
 838 Then this more secret now design'd, I haste
 839 To know, and this once known, shall soon return,
 840 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death
 841 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
 842 Wing silently the buxom Air, imbalm'd
 843 With odours; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 844 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.
 845 He ceas'd, for both seemd highly pleas'd, and Death
 846 Grinn'd horrible a gastly smile, to hear
 847 His famine should be fill'd, **and blest his mawe**
 848 **Destin'd to that good hour:** no less rejoyc'd
 849 His mother bad, and thus bespake her Sire.

 850 The key of this infernal Pit by due.
 851 And by command of Heav'ns all-powerful King
 852 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock
 853 These Adamantine Gates; against all force
 854 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,
 855 Fearless to be o'rmatcht by living might.
 856 But what ow I to his commands above
 857 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down
 858 **Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,**
 859 To sit in hateful Office here confin'd,
 860 Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nlie-born,
 861 **Here in perpetual agonie and pain,**
 862 **With terrors and with clamors compass't round**
 863 **Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed:**
 864 Thou art my Father, thou my Author, thou
 865 My being gav'st me; whom should I obey
 866 But thee, whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon
 867 To that new world of light and bliss, among
 868 The Gods who live at ease, where I shall Reign

869 At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems
 870 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.

 871 Thus saying, from her side the fatal Key,
 872 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;
 873 And towards the Gate rouling her bestial train,
 874 Forthwith the huge Porcullis high up drew,
 875 Which but her self not all the Stygian powers
 876 Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns
 877 Th' intricate wards, and every Bolt and Bar
 878 Of massie Iron or sollid Rock with ease
 879 Unfast'ns: on a sudden op'n flie
 880 With impetuous recoile and jarring sound
 881 Th' infernal dores, and on thir hinges grate
 882 Harsh Thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 883 Of Erebus. She op'nd, but to shut
 884 Excel'd her power; the Gates wide op'n stood,
 885 That with extended wings a Bannerd Host
 886 Under spread Ensigns marching might pass through
 887 With Horse and Chariots rankt in loose array;
 888 So wide they stood, and like a Furnace mouth
 889 Cast forth redounding smoak and ruddy flame.
 890 Before thir eyes in sudden view appear
 891 The secrets of the hoarie deep, a dark
 892 Illimitable Ocean without bound,
 893 Without dimension, where length, breadth, & highth,
 894 And time and place are lost; where eldest Night
 895 And Chaos, Ancestors of Nature, hold
 896 Eternal Anarchie, amidst the noise
 897 Of endless Warrs, **and by confusion stand.**
 898 **For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four Champions fierce**
 899 **Strive here for Maistrie, and to Battel bring**
 900 **Thir embryon Atoms; they around the flag**
 901 **Of each his Faction, in thir several Clanns,**
 902 **Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,**
 903 **Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the Sands**
 904 **Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,**
 905 **Levied to side with warring Winds, and poise**
 906 **Thir lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,**
 907 **Hee rules a moment; Chaos Umpire sits,**
 908 **And by decision more imbroiles the fray**
 909 **By which he Reigns: next him high Arbiter**
 910 **Chance governs all.** Into this wilde Abyss,
 911 The Womb of nature and perhaps her Grave,
 912 Of neither Sea, nor Shore, nor Air, nor Fire,
 913 But all these in thir pregnant causes mixt
 914 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,
 915 Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain
 916 His dark materials to create more Worlds,

917 Into this wild Abyss the warie fiend
 918 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,
 919 Pondering his Voyage; for no narrow frith
 920 He had to cross. Nor was his eare less peal'd
 921 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare
 922 Great things with small) then when Bellona storms,
 923 With all her battering Engines bent to rase
 924 Som Capital City; or less then if this frame
 925 Of Heav'n were falling, and these Elements
 926 In mutinie had from her Axle torn
 927 The stedfast Earth. At last his Sail-broad Vannes
 928 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoak
 929 Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a League
 930 As in a cloudy Chair ascending rides
 931 Audacious, but that seat soon failing, meets
 932 A vast vacuities: all unawares
 933 Fluttring his pennons vain plumb down he drops
 934 Ten thousand fadom deep, and to this hour
 935 Down had been falling, had not by ill chance
 936 The strong rebuff of som tumultuous cloud
 937 Instinct with Fire and Nitre hurried him
 938 As many miles aloft: that furie stay'd,
 939 Quencht in a Boggie Syrtis, neither Sea,
 940 Nor good dry Land: nigh founderd on he fares,
 941 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 942 Half flying; behoves him now both Oare and Saile.
 943 As when a Gryfon through the Wilderness
 944 With winged course ore Hill or moarie Dale,
 945 Pursues the Arimaspien, who by stelth
 946 Had from his wakeful custody purloind
 947 The guarded Gold: So eagerly the fiend
 948 Ore bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,
 949 With head, hands, wings or feet pursues his way,
 950 And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies:
 951 At length a universal hubbub wilde
 952 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd
 953 Born through the hollow dark assaults his eare
 954 With loudest vehemence: thither he plyes,
 955 Undaunted to meet there what ever power
 956 Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss
 957 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask
 958 Which way the neerest coast of darkness lyes
 959 Bordering on light; when strait behold the Throne
 960 Of Chaos, and his dark Pavilion spread
 961 Wide on the wasteful Deep; with him Enthron'd
 962 Sat Sable-vested Night, eldest of things,
 963 The Consort of his Reign; and by them stood
 964 Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded name
 965 Of Demogorgon; Rumor next and Chance,

966 And Tumult and Confusion all imbroild,
967 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

968 T' whom Satan turning boldly, thus. Ye Powers
969 And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,
970 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no Spy,
971 With purpose to explore or to disturb
972 The secrets of your Realm, but by constraint
973 Wandering this darksome Desart, as my way,
974 Lies through your spacious Empire up to light,
975 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek
976 What readiest path leads where your gloomie bounds
977 Confine with Heav'n; or if som other place
978 From your Dominion won, th' Ethereal King
979 Possesses lately, thither to arrive
980 I travel this profound, direct my course;
981 Directed no mean recompence it brings
982 To your behoof, if I that Region lost,
983 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce
984 To her original darkness and your sway
985 (Which is my present journey) and once more
986 Erect the Standard there of ancient Night;
987 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.

988 Thus Satan; and him thus the Anarch old
989 With faultring speech and visage incompos'd
990 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,
991 That mighty leading Angel, who of late
992 Made head against Heav'ns King, though overthrown.
993 I saw and heard, for such a numerous Host
994 Fled not in silence through the frighted deep
995 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,
996 Confusion worse confounded; and Heav'n Gates
997 Poured out by millions her victorious Bands
998 Pursuing. I upon my Frontieres here
999 Keep residence; if all I can will serve,
1000 That little which is left so to defend,
1001 Encroacht on still through our intestine broiles
1002 Weakning the Scepter of old Night: first Hell
1003 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath;
1004 Now lately Heaven and Earth, another World
1005 Hung ore my Realm, link'd in a golden Chain
1006 To that side Heav'n from whence your Legions fell:
1007 If that way be your walk, you have not farr;
1008 So much the neerer danger; go and speed;
1009 Havock and spoil and ruin are my gain.

1010 He ceas'd; and Satan staid not to reply,
1011 But glad that now his Sea should find a shore,

1012 With fresh alacritie and force renew'd
1013 Springs upward like a Pyramid of fire
1014 Into the wilde expanse, and through the shock
1015 Of fighting Elements, on all sides round
1016 Environ'd wins his way; **harder beset**
1017 **And more endanger'd, then when Argo pass'd**
1018 **Through Bosphorus betwixt the justling Rocks:**
1019 **Or when Ulysses on the Larbord shunnd**
1020 **Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steard.**
1021 **So he with difficulty and labour hard**
1022 **Mov'd on, with difficulty and labour hee;**
1023 But hee once past, soon after when man fell,
1024 Strange alteration! Sin and Death amain
1025 Following his track, such was the will of Heav'n,
1026 Pav'd after him a broad and beat'n way
1027 **Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling Gulf**
1028 **Tamely endur'd a Bridge of wondrous length**
1029 **From Hell continu'd reaching th' utmost Orbe**
1030 **Of this frail World; by which the Spirits perverse**
1031 **With easie intercourse pass to and fro**
1032 **To tempt or punish mortals, except whom**
1033 **God and good Angels guard by special grace.**
1034 But now at last the sacred influence
1035 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heav'n
1036 Shoots farr into the bosom of dim Night
1037 A glimmering dawn; here Nature first begins
1038 Her fardest verge, and Chaos to retire
1039 As from her outmost works a brok'd foe
1040 With tumult less and with less hostile din,
1041 That Satan with less toil, and now with ease
1042 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light
1043 **And like a weather-beaten Vessel holds**
1044 **Gladly the Port, though Shrouds and Tackle torn;**
1045 Or in the emptier waste, resembling Air,
1046 Weighs his spread wings, at leasure to behold
1047 Farr off th' Empyrean Heav'n, extended wide
1048 **In circuit, undetermind square or round,**
1049 With Opal Towrs and Battlements adorn'd
1050 Of living Sapphire, once his native Seat:
1051 And fast by hanging in a golden Chain
1052 This pendant world, in bigness as a Starr
1053 Of smallest Magnitude close by the Moon,
1054 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,
1055 Accurst, and in a cursed hour he hies.

BOOK III.

1 Hail holy Light, ofspring of Heav'n first-born,

2 Or of th' Eternal Coeternal beam
3 May I express thee unblam'd? since God is light,
4 And never but in unapproached light
5 Dwelt from Eternitie, dwelt then in thee,
6 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
7 Or hear'st thou rather pure Ethereal stream,
8 Whose Fountain who shall tell? before the Sun,
9 Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice
10 Of God, as with a Mantle didst invest
11 The rising world of water dark and deep,
12 Won from the void and formless infinite.
13 Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
14 Escap't the Stygian Pool, though long detain'd
15 In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight
16 Through utter and through middle darkness borne
17 With other notes then to th' Orphean Lyre
18 I sung of Chaos and Eternal Night,
19 Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down
20 The dark descent, and up to reascend,
21 Though hard and rare: thee I revisit safe,
22 And feel thy sovran vital Lamp; but thou
23 Revisit'st not these eyes, that rowle in vain
24 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
25 So thick a drop serene hath quencht thir Orbs,
26 Or dim suffusion veild. Yet not the more
27 Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt
28 Cleer Spring, or shadie Grove, or Sunnie Hill,
29 Smit with the love of sacred Song; but chief
30 Thee Sion and the flowrie Brooks beneath
31 That wash thy hallowd feet, and warbling flow,
32 Nightly I visit: **nor somtimes forget**
33 **Those other two equal'd with me in Fate,**
34 **So were I equal'd with them in renown,**
35 **Blind Thamyris and blind Mæonides,**
36 **And Tiresias and Phineus Prophets old.**
37 **Then feed on thoughts, that voluntarie move**
38 **Harmonious numbers;** as the wakeful Bird
39 Sings darkling, and in shadiest Covert hid
40 Tunes her nocturnal Note. Thus with the Year
41 Seasons return, but not to me returns
42 Day, or the sweet approach of Ev'n or Morn,
43 Or sight of vernal bloom, or Summers Rose,
44 Or flocks, or heards, or human face divine;
45 But cloud in stead, and ever-during dark
46 Surrounds me, from the chearful wayes of men
47 Cut off, and for the Book of knowledg fair
48 Presented with a Universal blanc
49 Of Natures works to mee expung'd and ras'd,
50 And wisdome at one entrance quite shut out.

51 So much the rather thou Celestial light
52 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
53 Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
54 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
55 Of things invisible to mortal sight.

56 Now had the Almighty Father from above,
57 From the pure Empyrean where he sits
58 High Thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye,
59 His own works and thir works at once to view:
60 About him all the Sanctities of Heaven
61 Stood thick as Starrs, and from his sight receiv'd
62 Beatitude past utterance; on his right
63 The radiant image of his Glory sat,
64 His onely Son; On Earth he first beheld
65 Our two first Parents, yet the onely two
66 Of mankind, in the happie Garden plac't,
67 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
68 Uninterrupted joy, unrivald love
69 In blissful solitude; he then survey'd
70 Hell and the Gulf between, and Satan there
71 Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night
72 In the dun Air sublime, and ready now
73 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet
74 On the bare outside of this World, that seem'd
75 Firm land imbosom'd without Firmament,
76 Uncertain which, in Ocean or in Air.
77 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
78 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
79 Thus to his onely Son foreseeing spake.

80 Onely begotten Son, seest thou what rage
81 Transports our adversarie, whom no bounds
82 Prescrib'd, no barrs of Hell, nor all the chains
83 Heapt on him there, nor yet the main Abyss
84 Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems
85 On desparate reveng, that shall redound
86 Upon his own rebellious head. And now
87 Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way
88 Not farr off Heav'n, in the Precincts of light,
89 Directly towards the new created World,
90 And Man there plac't, with purpose to assay
91 If him by force he can destroy, or worse,
92 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert
93 For man will hark'n to his glozing lyes,
94 And easily transgress the sole Command,
95 Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall,
96 Hee and his faithless Progenie: whose fault?
97 Whose but his own? ingrate, he had of mee

98 All he could have; I made him just and right,
99 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
100 Such I created all th' Ethereal Powers
101 And Spirits, both them who stood and them who faild;
102 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.
103 Not free, what proof could they have givn sincere
104 Of true allegiance, constant Faith or Love,
105 Where onely what they needs must do, appeard,
106 Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
107 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
108 When Will and Reason (Reason also is choice)
109 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoild,
110 Made passive both, had servd necessitie,
111 Not mee. They therefore as to right belongd,
112 So were created, nor can justly accuse
113 Thir maker, or thir making, or thir Fate,
114 As if predestination over-rul'd
115 Thir will, dispos'd by absolute Decree
116 Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed
117 Thir own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,
118 Foreknowledge had no influence on thir fault,
119 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.
120 So without least impulse or shadow of Fate,
121 Or aught by me immutablie foreseen,
122 They trespass, Authors to themselves in all
123 Both what they judge and what they choose; for so
124 I formd them free, and free they must remain,
125 Till they enthrall themselves: I else must change
126 Thir nature, and revoke the high Decree
127 Unchangeable, Eternal, which ordain'd
128 Thir freedom, they themselves ordain'd thir fall.
129 The first sort by thir own suggestion fell,
130 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: Man falls deceiv'd
131 By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,
132 The other none: in Mercy and Justice both,
133 Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glorie excel,
134 But Mercy first and last shall brightest shine.

135 Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
136 All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect
137 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd:
138 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
139 Most glorious, in him all his Father shon
140 Substantially express'd, and in his face
141 Divine compassion visibly appeerd,
142 Love without end, and without measure Grace,
143 Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

144 O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd

145 Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace;
146 For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extoil
147 Thy praises; with th' innumerable sound
148 Of Hymns and sacred Songs, wherewith thy Throne
149 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.
150 For should Man finally be lost, should Man
151 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest Son
152 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though joynd
153 With his own folly? that be from thee farr,
154 That farr be from thee, Father, who art Judg
155 Of all things made, and judgest onely right.
156 Or shall the Adversarie thus obtain
157 His end, and frustrate thine, shall he fulfill
158 His malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,
159 Or proud return though to his heavier doom,
160 Yet with revenge accomplish't and to Hell
161 Draw after him the whole Race of mankind,
162 By him corrupted? or wilt thou thy self
163 Abolish thy Creation, and unmake,
164 For him, what for thy glorie thou hast made?
165 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both
166 Be questiond and blasphem'd without defence.

167 To whom the great Creatour thus reply'd.
168 O Son, in whom my Soul hath chief delight,
169 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone
170 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,
171 All hast thou spok'n as my thoughts are, all
172 As my Eternal purpose hath decreed:
173 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,
174 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me
175 Freely voutsaft; once more I will renew
176 His lapsed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd
177 By sin to foul exorbitant desires;
178 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
179 On even ground against his mortal foe,
180 By me upheld, that he may know how frail
181 His fall'n condition is, and to me ow
182 All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.
183 **Some I have chosen of peculiar grace**
184 **Elect above the rest; so is my will:**
185 **The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warnd**
186 **Thir sinful state, and to appease betimes**
187 **Th' incensed Deitie, while offerd grace**
188 **Invites; for I will cleer thir senses dark,**
189 **What may suffice, and soft'n stonie hearts**
190 **To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.**
191 **To Prayer, repentance, and obedience due,**
192 **Though but endevord with sincere intent,**

193 Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
194 And I will place within them as a guide
195 My Umpire Conscience, whom if they will hear,
196 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,
197 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.
198 This my long sufferance and my day of grace
199 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;
200 But hard be hard'nd, blind be blinded more,
201 **That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;**
202 And none but such from mercy I exclude.
203 But yet all is not don; Man disobeying,
204 Disloyal breaks his fealtie, and sinns
205 Against the high Supremacie of Heav'n,
206 Affecting God-head, and so loosing all,
207 To expiate his Treason hath naught left,
208 But to destruction sacred and devote,
209 He with his whole posteritie must dye,
210 Dye hee or Justice must; unless for him
211 Som other able, and as willing, pay
212 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
213 Say Heav'nly powers, where shall we find such love,
214 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem
215 Mans mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save,
216 Dwels in all Heaven charitie so deare?

217 He ask'd, but all the Heav'nly Quire stood mute,
218 And silence was in Heav'n: on mans behalf
219 Patron or Intercessor none appeerd,
220 Much less that durst upon his own head draw
221 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
222 And now without redemption all mankind
223 Must have bin lost, **adjudg'd to Death and Hell**
224 **By doom severe,** had not the Son of God,
225 In whom the fulness dwels of love divine,
226 His dearest mediation thus renewd.

227 Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace;
228 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
229 The speediest of thy winged messengers,
230 To visit all thy creatures, and to all
231 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought,
232 Happie for man, so coming; he her aide
233 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost;
234 Attonement for himself or offering meet,
235 Indebted and undon, hath none to bring:
236 Behold mee then, mee for him, life for life
237 I offer, on mee let thine anger fall;
238 Account mee man; I for his sake will leave
239 Thy bosom, and this glorie next to thee

240 Freely put off, and for him lastly dye
241 Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage;
242 Under his gloomie power I shall not long
243 Lie vanquisht; thou hast givn me to possess
244 Life in my self for ever, by thee I live,
245 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due
246 All that of me can die, yet that debt paid,
247 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsom grave
248 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted Soule
249 For ever with corruption there to dwell;
250 But I shall rise Victorious, and subdue
251 My vanquisher, spoild of his vanted spoile;
252 **Death his deaths wound shall then receive, and stoop**
253 **Inglorious, of his mortall sting disarm'd.**
254 I through the ample Air in Triumph high
255 Shall lead Hell Captive maugre Hell, and show
256 The powers of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
257 Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,
258 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my Foes,
259 Death last, and with his Carcass glut the Grave:
260 Then with the multitude of my redeemd
261 Shall enter Heaven long absent, and returne,
262 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
263 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,
264 And reconcilment; wrauth shall be no more
265 Thenceforth, but in thy presence Joy entire.

266 His words here ended, but his meek aspect
267 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love
268 To mortal men, above which only shon
269 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice
270 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will
271 Of his great Father. Admiration seis'd
272 All Heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend
273 Wondring; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd:

274 O thou in Heav'n and Earth the only peace
275 Found out for mankind under wrauth, O thou
276 My sole complacence! well thou know'st how dear,
277 To me are all my works, nor Man the least
278 Though last created, that for him I spare
279 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
280 By loosing thee a while, the whole Race lost.
281 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeem,
282 Thir Nature also to thy Nature joyn;
283 And be thy self Man among men on Earth,
284 Made flesh, when time shall be, of Virgin seed,
285 By wondrous birth: Be thou in Adams room
286 The Head of all mankind, though Adams Son.

287 As in him perish all men, so in thee
 288 As from a second root shall be restor'd,
 289 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 290 His crime makes guiltie all his Sons, thy merit
 291 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 292 Thir own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 293 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 294 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,
 295 Shall satisfie for Man, be judg'd and die,
 296 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 297 His Brethren, ransomd with his own dear life.
 298 **So Heav'nly love shall outdoo Hellish hate**
 299 **Giving to death, and dying to redeeme,**
 300 **So dearly to redeem what Hellish hate**
 301 **So easily destroy'd, and still destroyes**
 302 **In those who, when they may, accept not grace.**
 303 Nor shalt thou by descending to assume
 304 Mans Nature, less'n or degrade thine owne.
 305 Because thou hast, though Thron'd in highest bliss
 306 Equal to God, and equally enjoying
 307 God-like fruition, quitted all to save
 308 A World from utter loss, **and hast been found**
 309 **By Merit more then Birthright Son of God,**
 310 **Found worthiest to be so by being Good,**
 311 **Farr more then Great or High;** because in thee
 312 Love hath abounded more then Glory abounds,
 313 Therefore thy Humiliation shall exalt
 314 With thee thy Manhood also to this Throne,
 315 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt Reign
 316 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,
 317 **Anointed universal King, all Power**
 318 **I give thee, reign for ever, and assume**
 319 **Thy Merits; under thee as Head Supream**
 320 **Thrones, Princedom, Powers, Dominions I reduce:**
 321 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide
 322 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell;
 323 When thou attended gloriously from Heav'n
 324 Shalt in the Sky appeer, **and from thee send**
 325 **The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaime**
 326 **Thy dread Tribunal: forthwith from all Windes**
 327 **The living, and forthwith the cited dead**
 328 **Of all past Ages to the general Doom**
 329 **Shall hast'n, such a peal shall rouse thir sleep.**
 330 **Then all thy Saints assembl'd, thou shalt judge**
 331 Bad men and Angels, they arraignd shall sink
 332 Beneath thy Sentence; Hell her numbers full,
 333 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while
 334 The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring
 335 New Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,

336 And after all thir tribulations long
337 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,
338 With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.
339 Then thou thy regal Scepter shalt lay by,
340 For regal Scepter then no more shall need,
341 God shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,
342 Adore him, who to compass all this dies,
343 Adore the Son, and honour him as mee.

344 No sooner had th' Almighty ceas't, but all
345 The multitude of Angels with a shout
346 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet
347 As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung
348 With Jubilee, and loud Hosanna's filld
349 Th' eternal Regions: lowly reverent
350 Towards either Throne they bow, and to the ground
351 With solemn adoration down they cast
352 Thir Crowns inwove with Amarant and Gold,
353 Immortal Amarant, a Flour which once
354 In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life
355 Began to bloom, but soon for mans offence
356 To Heav'n remov'd where first it grew, there grows,
357 And flours aloft shading the Fount of Life,
358 And where the river of Bliss through midst of Heavn
359 Rowls o're Elisian Flours her Amber stream;
360 With these that never fade the Spirits elect
361 Bind thir resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams,
362 Now in loose Garlands thick thrown off, the bright
363 Pavement that like a Sea of Jasper shon
364 Impurpl'd with Celestial Roses smil'd.
365 Then Crown'd again thir gold'n Harps they took,
366 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by thir side
367 Like Quivers hung, and with Præamble sweet
368 Of charming symphonie they introduce
369 Thir sacred Song, and waken raptures high;
370 No voice exempt, no voice but well could joine
371 Melodious part, such concord is in Heav'n.

372 Thee Father first they sung Omnipotent,
373 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,
374 Eternal King; thee Author of all being,
375 Fountain of Light, thy self invisible
376 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st
377 Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st
378 The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud
379 Drawn round about thee like a radiant Shrine,
380 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appeer,
381 Yet dazle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim
382 Approach not, but with both wings veil thir eyes,

383 Thee next they sang of all Creation first,
 384 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,
 385 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud
 386 Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines,
 387 Whom else no Creature can behold; on thee
 388 Impresst the effulgence of his Glorie abides,
 389 Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.
 390 Hee Heav'n of Heavens and all the Powers therein
 391 By thee created, and by thee threw down
 392 Th' aspiring Dominations: thou that day
 393 Thy Fathers dreadful Thunder didst not spare,
 394 Nor stop thy flaming Chariot wheels, that shook
 395 Heav'ns everlasting Frame, while o're the necks
 396 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarraid.
 397 Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaime
 398 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Fathers might,
 399 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
 400 Not so on Man; him through thir malice fall'n,
 401 Father of Mercie and Grace, thou didst not doome
 402 So strictly, but much more to pitie encline:
 403 No sooner did thy dear and onely Son
 404 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man
 405 So strictly, but much more to pitie enclin'd,
 406 He to appease thy wrauth, and end the strife
 407 Of Mercy and Justice in thy face discern'd,
 408 Regardless of the Bliss wherein hee sat
 409 Second to thee, offerd himself to die
 410 For mans offence. O unexampl'd love,
 411 Love no where to be found less then Divine!
 412 Hail Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy Name
 413 Shall be the copious matter of my Song
 414 Henceforth, and never shall my Harp thy praise
 415 Forget, nor from thy Fathers praise disjoine.

416 Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry Sphear,
 417 Thir happie hours in joy and hymning spent.
 418 Mean while upon the firm opacous Globe
 419 Of this round World, whose first convex divides
 420 The luminous inferior Orbs, enclos'd
 421 From Chaos and th' inroad of Darkness old,
 422 Satan alighted walks: a Globe farr off
 423 It seem'd, now seems a boundless Continent
 424 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
 425 Starless expos'd, and ever-threatning storms
 426 Of Chaos blustering round, inclement skie;
 427 Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n
 428 Though distant farr som small reflection gains
 429 Of glimmering air less vext with tempest loud:
 430 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.

431 As when a Vultur on Imaus bred,
432 Whose snowie ridge the roving Tartar bounds,
433 Dislodging from a Region scarce of prey
434 To gorge the flesh of Lambs or yeanling Kids
435 On Hills where Flocks are fed, flies toward the Springs
436 Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams;
437 But in his way lights on the barren Plains
438 Of Sericana, where Chineses drive
439 With Sails and Wind thir canie Waggons light:
440 So on this windie Sea of Land, the Fiend
441 Walk'd up and down alone bent on his prey,
442 Alone, for other Creature in this place
443 Living or liveless to be found was none,
444 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth
445 Up hither like Aereal vapours flew
446 Of all things transitorie and vain, when Sin
447 With vanity had filld the works of men:
448 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things
449 Built thir fond hopes of Glorie or lasting fame,
450 Or happiness in this or th' other life;
451 All who have thir reward on Earth, the fruits
452 Of painful Superstition and blind Zeal,
453 Naught seeking but the praise of men, here find
454 Fit retribution, emptie as thir deeds;
455 All th' unaccomplisht works of Natures hand,
456 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixt,
457 Dissolvd on Earth, fleet hither, and in vain,
458 Till final dissolution, wander here,
459 Not in the neighbouring Moon, as some have dreamd;
460 Those argent Fields more likely habitants,
461 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold
462 Betwixt th' Angelical and Human kinde:
463 Hither of ill-joynd Sons and Daughters born
464 First from the ancient World those Giants came
465 With many a vain exploit, though then renownd:
466 The builders next of Babel on the Plain
467 Of Sennaar, and still with vain designe
468 New Babels, had they wherewithall, would build:
469 Others came single; he who to be deemd
470 A God, leap'd fondly into Ætna flames,
471 Empedocles, and hee who to enjoy
472 Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the Sea,
473 Cleombrotus, and many more too long,
474 Embryo's and Idiots, Eremites and Friers
475 White, Black and Grey, with all thir trumperie.
476 Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so farr to seek
477 In Golgotha him dead, who lives in Heav'n;
478 And they who to be sure of Paradise
479 Dying put on the weeds of Dominic,

480 Or in Franciscan think to pass disguis'd;
481 They pass the Planets seven, and pass the fixt,
482 And that Crystalline Sphear whose ballance weighs
483 The Trepidation talkt, and that first mov'd;
484 And now Saint Peter at Heav'ns Wicket seems
485 To wait them with his Keys, and now at foot
486 Of Heav'ns ascent they lift thir Feet, when loe
487 A violent cross wind from either Coast
488 Blows them transverse ten thousand Leagues awry
489 Into the devious Air; then might ye see
490 Cowles, Hoods and Habits with thir wearers tost
491 And flutterd into Raggs, then Reliques, Beads,
492 Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,
493 The sport of Winds: all these upwhirld aloft
494 Fly o're the backside of the World farr off
495 Into a Limbo large and broad, since calld
496 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown
497 Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrod;
498 All this dark Globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,
499 And long he wanderd, till at last a gleame
500 Of dawning light turnd thither-ward in haste
501 His travell'd steps; farr distant he descries
502 Ascending by degrees magnificent
503 Up to the wall of Heaven a Structure high,
504 At top whereof, but farr more rich appeerd
505 The work as of a Kingly Palace Gate
506 With Frontispice of Diamond and Gold
507 Imbellisht, thick with sparkling orient Gemmes
508 The Portal shon, inimitable on Earth
509 By Model, or by shading Pencil drawn.
510 The Stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw
511 Angels ascending and descending, bands
512 Of Guardians bright, when he from Esau fled
513 To Padan-Aram in the field of Luz,
514 Dreaming by night under the open Skie,
515 And waking cri'd, This is the Gate of Heav'n
516 Each Stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood
517 There alwayes, but drawn up to Heav'n somtimes
518 Viewless, and underneath a bright Sea flow'd
519 Of Jasper, or of liquid Pearle, whereon
520 Who after came from Earth, sayling arriv'd,
521 Wafted by Angels, or flew o're the Lake
522 Rapt in a Chariot drawn by fiery Steeds.
523 The Stairs were then let down, whether to dare
524 The Fiend by easie ascent, or aggravate
525 His sad exclusion from the dores of Bliss.

526 Direct against which op'nd from beneath,
527 Just o're the blissful seat of Paradise,

528 A passage down to th' Earth, a passage wide,
529 Wider by farr then that of after-times
530 Over Mount Sion, and, though that were large,
531 Over the Promis'd Land to God so dear,
532 By which, to visit oft those happy Tribes,
533 On high behests his Angels to and fro
534 Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard
535 From Paneas the fount of Jordans flood
536 To Beersaba, where the Holy Land
537 Borders on Ægypt and the Arabian shoare;
538 So wide the op'ning seemd, where bounds were set
539 To darkness, such as bound the Ocean wave.
540 Satan from hence now on the lower stair
541 That scal'd by steps of Gold to Heav'n Gate
542 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
543 Of all this World at once. As when a Scout
544 Through dark and desart wayes with peril gone
545 All night; at last by break of chearful dawne
546 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing Hill,
547 Which to his eye discovers unaware
548 The goodly prospect of some forein land
549 First-seen, or some renown'd Metropolis
550 With glistering Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd,
551 Which now the Rising Sun guilds with his beams.
552 Such wonder seis'd, though after Heaven seen,
553 The Spirit maligne, but much more envy seis'd
554 At sight of all this World beheld so faire.
555 Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood
556 So high above the circling Canopie
557 Of Nights extended shade; from Eastern Point
558 Of Libra to the fleecie Starr that bears
559 Andromeda farr off Atlantic Seas
560 Beyond th' Horizon; then from Pole to Pole
561 He views in bredth, and without longer pause
562 Down right into the Worlds first Region throws
563 His flight precipitant, and windes with ease
564 Through the pure marble Air his oblique way
565 Amongst innumerable Starrs, that shon
566 Stars distant, but nigh hand seemd other Worlds,
567 Or other Worlds they seemd, or happy Iles,
568 Like those Hesperian Gardens fam'd of old,
569 Fortunate Fields, and Groves and flourie Vales,
570 Thrice happy Iles, but who dwelt happy there
571 He stayd not to enquire: above them all
572 The golden Sun in splendor likest Heaven
573 Allur'd his eye: Thither his course he bends
574 Through the calm Firmament; but up or downe
575 By center, or eccentric, hard to tell,
576 Or Longitude, where the great Luminarie

577 Alooff the vulgar Constellations thick,
 578 That from his Lordly eye keep distance due,
 579 Dispenses Light from farr; they as they move
 580 Thir Starry dance in numbers that compute
 581 Days, months, & years, towards his all-cheering Lamp
 582 Turn swift thir various motions, or are turnd
 583 By his Magnetic beam, that gently warms
 584 The Univers, and to each inward part
 585 With gentle penetration, though unseen,
 586 Shoots invisible vertue even to the deep:
 587 So wondrously was set his Station bright.
 588 There lands the Fiend, **a spot like which perhaps**
 589 **Astronomer in the Sun's lucent Orbe**
 590 **Through his glaz'd Optic Tube yet never saw.**
 591 The place he found beyond expression bright,
 592 Compar'd with aught on Earth, **Medal or Stone;**
 593 Not all parts like, but all alike informd
 594 With radiant light, as glowing Iron with fire;
 595 If mettal, part seemd Gold, part Silver cleer;
 596 If stone, Carbuncle most or Chrysolite,
 597 **Rubie or Topaz, to the Twelve that shon**
 598 **In Aarons Brest-plate, and a stone besides**
 599 **Imagind rather oft then elsewhere seen,**
 600 **That stone, or like to that which here below**
 601 **Philosophers in vain so long have sought,**
 602 **In vain, though by thir powerful Art they binde**
 603 **Volatil Hermes, and call up unbound**
 604 **In various shapes old Proteus from the Sea,**
 605 **Draind through a Limbec to his Native forme.**
 606 **What wonder then if fields and regions here**
 607 **Breathe forth Elixir pure, and Rivers run**
 608 **Potable Gold, when with one vertuous touch**
 609 **Th' Arch-chimic Sun so farr from us remote**
 610 **Produces with Terrestrial Humor mixt**
 611 **Here in the dark so many precious things**
 612 **Of colour glorious and effect so rare?**
 613 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
 614 Undazl'd, farr and wide his eye commands,
 615 For sight no obstacle found here, **nor shade,**
 616 **But all Sun-shine, as when his Beams at Noon**
 617 **Culminate from th' Æquator, as they now**
 618 **Shot upward still direct, whence no way round**
 619 **Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the Aire,**
 620 No where so cleer, sharp'nd his visual ray
 621 To objects distant farr, whereby he soon
 622 Saw within kenn a glorious Angel stand,
 623 The same whom John saw also in the Sun:
 624 His back was turnd, but not his brightness hid;
 625 Of beaming sunnie Raies, a golden tiar

626 Circl'd his Head, nor less his Locks behind
627 Illustrious on his Shoulders fledge with wings
628 Lay waving round; on som great charge imploy'd
629 He seemd, or fixt in cogitation deep.
630 Glad was the Spirit impure as now in hope
631 To find who might direct his wandring flight
632 To Paradise the happie seat of Man,
633 **His journies end and our beginning woe.**
634 But first he casts to change his proper shape,
635 Which else might work him danger or delay:
636 And now a stripling Cherube he appeers,
637 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
638 Youth smil'd Celestial, and to every Limb
639 Sutable grace diffus'd, so well he feignd,
640 Under a Coronet his flowing haire
641 In curles on either cheek plaid, wings he wore
642 Of many a colourd plume sprinkl'd with Gold,
643 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
644 Before his decent steps a Silver wand.
645 He drew not nigh unheard, the Angel bright,
646 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turnd,
647 Admonisht by his ear, and strait was known
648 Th' Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the seav'n
649 Who in Gods presence, neerest to his Throne
650 Stand ready at command, and are his Eyes
651 That run through all the Heav'ns, or down to th' Earth
652 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
653 O're Sea and Land: him Satan thus accostes;

654 Uriel, for thou of those seav'n Spirits that stand
655 In sight of God's high Throne, gloriously bright,
656 The first art wont his great authentic will
657 Interpreter through highest Heav'n to bring,
658 Where all his Sons thy Embassie attend;
659 And here art likeliest by supream decree
660 Like honour to obtain, and as his Eye
661 To visit oft this new Creation round;
662 Unspeakable desire to see, and know
663 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,
664 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
665 All these his works so wondrous he ordaind,
666 Hath brought me from the Quires of Cherubim
667 Alone thus wandring. Brightest Seraph tell
668 In which of all these shining Orbes hath Man
669 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
670 But all these shining Orbes his choice to dwell;
671 That I may find him, and with secret gaze,
672 Or open admiration him behold
673 On whom the great Creator hath bestowd

674 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces powrd;
675 That both in him and all things, as is meet,
676 The Universal Maker we may praise;
677 Who justly hath drivn out his Rebell Foes
678 To deepest Hell, and to repair that loss
679 Created this new happie Race of Men
680 To serve him better: wise are all his wayes.

681 So spake the false dissembler unperceivd;
682 For neither Man nor Angel can discern
683 Hypocrisie, the onely evil that walks
684 Invisible, except to God alone,
685 By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth:
686 And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
687 At wisdoms Gate, and to simplicitie
688 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
689 Where no ill seems: Which now for once beguil'd
690 Uriel, though Regent of the Sun, and held
691 The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n;
692 Who to the fraudulent Impostor foule
693 In his uprightness answer thus returnd.
694 Fair Angel, thy desire which tends to know
695 The works of God, thereby to glorifie
696 The great Work-Maister, leads to no excess
697 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
698 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
699 From thy Empyrean Mansion thus alone,
700 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps
701 Contented with report hear onely in heav'n:
702 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
703 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
704 Had in remembrance alwayes with delight;
705 But what created mind can comprehend
706 Thir number, or the wisdom infinite
707 That brought them forth, but hid thir causes deep.
708 I saw when at his Word the formless Mass,
709 This worlds material mould, came to a heap:
710 Confusion heard his voice, and wilde uproar
711 Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;
712 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
713 Light shon, and order from disorder sprung:
714 Swift to thir several Quarters hasted then
715 The cumbrous Elements, Earth, Flood, Aire, Fire,
716 And this Ethereal quintessence of Heav'n
717 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
718 That rowld orbicular, and turnd to Starrs
719 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move;
720 Each had his place appointed, each his course,
721 The rest in circuit walles this Universe.

722 Look downward on that Globe whose hither side
 723 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines;
 724 That place is Earth the seat of Man, that light
 725 His day, which else as th' other Hemisphere
 726 Night would invade, but there the neighbouring Moon
 727 (So call that opposite fair Starr) her aide
 728 Timely interposes, and her monthly round
 729 Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n;
 730 With borrowd light her countenance triform
 731 Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' Earth,
 732 And in her pale dominion checks the night.
 733 That spot to which I point is Paradise,
 734 Adams abode, those loftie shades his Bowre.
 735 Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.

736 Thus said, he turnd, and Satan bowing low,
 737 As to superior Spirits is wont in Heaven,
 738 Where honour due and reverence none neglects,
 739 Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,
 740 **Down from th' Ecliptic, sped with hop'd success,**
 741 Throws his steep flight in many an Aerie wheele,
 742 Nor staid, till on Niphates top he lights.

BOOK IV.

1 O for that warning voice, which he who saw
 2 Th' Apocalyps, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
 3 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
 4 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,
 5 Wo to the inhabitants on Earth! that now,
 6 While time was, our first-Parents had bin warnd
 7 The coming of thir secret foe, **and scap'd**
 8 **Haply so scap'd his mortal snare;** for now
 9 Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,
 10 The Tempter ere th' Accuser of man-kind,
 11 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss
 12 Of that first Battel, and his flight to Hell:
 13 Yet not rejoycing in his speed, though bold,
 14 **Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,**
 15 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth
 16 Now rowling, boiles in his tumultuous brest,
 17 And like a devillish Engine back recoiles
 18 Upon himself; horror and doubt distract
 19 His troubl'd thoughts, and from the bottom stirr
 20 The Hell within him, for within him Hell
 21 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
 22 One step no more then from himself can fly
 23 By change of place: Now conscience wakes despair

24 That slumberd, wakes the bitter memorie
25 Of what he was, what is, and what must be
26 Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
27 Sometimes towards Eden which now in his view
28 Lay pleasant, his grievd look he fixes sad,
29 Sometimes towards Heav'n and the full-blazing Sun,
30 Which now sat high in his Meridian Towre:
31 Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

32 O thou that with surpassing Glory crown'd,
33 Look'st from thy sole Dominion like the God
34 Of this new World; at whose sight all the Starrs
35 Hide thir diminisht heads; to thee I call,
36 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
37 O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams
38 That bring to my remembrance from what state
39 I fell, how glorious once above thy Spheare;
40 Till Pride and worse Ambition threw me down
41 Warring in Heav'n against Heav'ns matchless King:
42 Ah wherefore! he deservd no such return
43 From me, whom he created what I was
44 In that bright eminence, and with his good
45 Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.
46 What could be less then to afford him praise,
47 The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,
48 How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
49 And wrought but malice; lifted up so high
50 I sdeind subjection, and thought one step higher
51 Would set me highest, and in a moment quit
52 The debt immense of endless gratitude,
53 So burthensome still paying, still to ow;
54 Forgetful what from him I still receivd,
55 And understood not that a grateful mind
56 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
57 Indebted and dischargd; what burden then?
58 O had his powerful Destiny ordaind
59 Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood
60 Then happie; no unbounded hope had rais'd
61 Ambition. Yet why not? som other Power
62 As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean
63 Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great
64 Fell not, but stand unshak'n, from within
65 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.
66 Hadst thou the same free Will and Power to stand?
67 Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,
68 But Heav'ns free Love dealt equally to all?
69 Be then his Love accurst, since love or hate,
70 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.
71 Nay curs'd be thou; since against his thy will

72 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.
73 Me miserable! which way shall I flie
74 Infinite wrauth, and infinite despaire?
75 Which way I flie is Hell; my self am Hell;
76 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
77 Still threatning to devour me opens wide,
78 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.
79 O then at last relent: is there no place
80 Left for Repentance, none for Pardon left?
81 None left but by submission; and that word
82 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
83 Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd
84 With other promises and other vaunts
85 Then to submit, boasting I could subdue
86 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know
87 How dearly I abide that boast so vaine,
88 Under what torments inwardly I groane;
89 While they adore me on the Throne of Hell,
90 With Diadem and Scepter high advanc'd
91 The lower still I fall, onely Supream
92 In miserie; such joy Ambition findes.
93 But say I could repent and could obtaine
94 By Act of Grace my former state; how soon
95 Would high recal high thoughts, how soon unsay
96 What feign'd submission swore: ease would recant
97 Vows made in pain, as violent and void.
98 For never can true reconcilment grow
99 Where wounds of deadly hate have peirc'd so deep:
100 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse
101 And heavier fall: so should I purchase deare
102 Short intermission bought with double smart.
103 This knows my punisher; therefore as farr
104 From granting hee, as I from begging peace:
105 All hope excluded thus, behold in stead
106 Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,
107 Mankind created, and for him this World.
108 So farwel Hope, and with Hope farwel Fear,
109 Farwel Remorse: all Good to me is lost;
110 Evil be thou my Good; by thee at least
111 Divided Empire with Heav'ns King I hold
112 By thee, and more then half perhaps will reigne;
113 As Man ere long, and this new World shall know.

114 Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face
115 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envie and despair,
116 Which marrd his borrow'd visage, and betraid
117 Him counterset, if any eye beheld.
118 For heav'nly mindes from such distempers foule
119 Are ever cleer. Whereof hee soon aware,

120 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calme,
 121 Artificer of fraud; and was the first
 122 That practis'd falshood under saintly-shew,
 123 Deep malice to conceale, couch't with revenge:
 124 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
 125 Uriel once warn'd; whose eye pursu'd him down
 126 The way he went, and on th' Assyrian mount
 127 Saw him disfigur'd, more then could befall
 128 Spirit of happie sort: his gestures fierce
 129 He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,
 130 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen.
 131 So on he fares, and to the border comes,
 132 Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,
 133 Now nearer, Crowns with her enclosure green,
 134 As with a rural mound the champain head
 135 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairie sides
 136 With thicket overgrown, gottesque and wilde,
 137 Access deni'd; and over head up grew
 138 Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,
 139 Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm,
 140 A Silvan Scene, and as the ranks ascend
 141 Shade above shade, a woodie Theatre
 142 Of stateliest view. Yet higher then thir tops
 143 The verdurous wall of paradise up sprung:
 144 Which to our general Sire gave prospect large
 145 Into his neather Empire neighbouring round.
 146 And higher then that Wall a circling row
 147 Of goodliest Trees loaden with fairest Fruit,
 148 Blossoms and Fruits at once of golden hue
 149 Apperd, with gay enameld colours mixt:
 150 On which the Sun more glad impress'd his beams
 151 Then n fair Evening Cloud, or humid Bow,
 152 When God hath showrd the earth; so lovely seemd
 153 That antskip: And of pure now purer aire
 154 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
 155 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
 156 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales
 157 Fanning thir odoriferous wings dispense
 158 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 159 Those balmie spoiles. As when to them who saile
 160 Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past
 161 Mozambic, off at Sea North-East windes blow
 162 Sabeian Odours from the spicie shoare
 163 Of Arabie the blest, with such delay
 164 Well pleas'd they slack thir course, and many a League
 165 Chear'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles.
 166 So entertaind those odorous sweets the Fiend
 167 Who came thir bane, though with them better pleas'd
 168 Then Asmodeus with the fishie fume,

169 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the Spouse
170 Of Tobits Son, and with a vengeance sent
171 From Media post to Ægypt, there fast bound.

172 Now to th' ascent of that steep savage Hill
173 Satan had journied on, pensive and slow;
174 But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,
175 As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth
176 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplext
177 All path of Man or Beast that past that way:
178 One Gate there only was, and that look'd East
179 On th' other side: which when th' arch-fellon saw
180 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt,
181 At one slight bound high over leap'd all bound
182 Of Hill or highest Wall, and sheer within
183 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling Wolf,
184 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
185 Watching where Shepherds pen thir Flocks at eve
186 In hurdl'd Cotes amid the field secure,
187 Leaps o're the fence with ease into the Fould:
188 Or as a Thief bent to unhoord the cash
189 Of some rich Burgher, whose substantial dores,
190 Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault,
191 In at the window climbs, or o're the tiles;
192 So clomb this first grand Thief into Gods Fould:
193 So since into his Church lewd Hirelings climbe.
194 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life
195 The middle Tree and highest there that grew,
196 Sat like a Cormorant; yet not true Life
197 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising Death
198 To them who liv'd; nor on the vertue thought
199 Of that life-giving Plant, but only us'd
200 For prospect, what well us'd had bin the pledge
201 Of immortality. So little knows
202 Any, but God alone, to value right
203 The good before him, but perverts best things
204 To worst abuse, or to thir meanest use.
205 Beneath him with new wonder now he views
206 To all delight of human sense expos'd
207 In narrow room Natures whole wealth, yea more,
208 A Heav'n on Earth, for blissful Paradise
209 Of God the Garden was, by him in the East
210 Of Eden planted; Eden stretch'd her Line
211 From Auran Eastward to the Royal Towrs
212 Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian Kings,
213 Or where the Sons of Eden long before
214 Dwelt in Telassar: in this pleasant soile
215 His farr more pleasant Garden God ordain'd;
216 Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow

217 All Trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
218 And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,
219 High eminent, blooming Ambrosial Fruit
220 Of vegetable Gold; and next to Life
221 Our Death the Tree of knowledge grew fast by,
222 Knowledge of Good bought dear by knowing ill.

223 Southward through Eden went a River large,
224 Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggie hill
225 Pass'd underneath ingulft, for God had thrown
226 That Mountain as his Garden mould high rais'd
227 Upon the rapid current, which through veins
228 Of porous Earth with kindly thirst up drawn,
229 Rose a fresh Fountain, and with many a rill
230 Waterd the Garden; thence united fell
231 Down the steep glade, and met the neather Flood,
232 Which from his darksome passage now appeers,
233 And now divided into four main Streams,
234 Runs divers, wandring many a famous Realme
235 And Country whereof here needs no account,
236 But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
237 How from that Saphire Fount the crisped Brooks,
238 Rowling on Orient Pearl and sands of Gold,
239 With mazie error under pendant shades
240 Ran Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed
241 Flours worthy of Paradise which not nice Art
242 In Beds and curious Knots, but Nature boon
243 Powrd forth profuse on Hill and Dale and Plaine,
244 Both where the morning Sun first warmly smote
245 The open field, and where the unpierc't shade
246 Imbround the noontide Bows: Thus was this place,
247 A happy rural seat of various view;
248 Groves whose rich Trees wept odorous Gumms and Balme,
249 Others whose fruit burnisht with Golden Rinde
250 Hung amiable, **Hesperian Fables true,**
251 If true, here only, and of delicious taste:
252 Betwixt them Lawns, or level Downs, and Flocks
253 Grasing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
254 Or palmie hilloc, or the flourie lap
255 Of som irriguous Valley spred her store,
256 Flours of all hue, and without Thorn the Rose:
257 Another side, umbrageous Grots and Caves
258 Of coole recess, o're which the mantling vine
259 Layes forth her purple Grape, and gently creeps
260 Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall
261 Down the slope hills, disperst, or in a Lake,
262 That to the fringed Bank with Myrtle crownd,
263 Her chrystal mirror holds, unite thir streams.
264 The Birds thir quire apply; aires, vernal aires,

265 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune
266 The trembling leaves, while **Universal Pan**
267 **Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance**
268 **Led on th' Eternal Spring. Not that faire field**
269 **Of Enna, where Proserpin gathering flours**
270 **Her self a fairer Floure by gloomie Dis**
271 **Was gatherd, which cost Ceres all that pain**
272 **To seek her through the world; nor that sweet Grove**
273 **Of Daphne by Orontes, and th' inspir'd**
274 **Castalian Spring, might with this Paradise**
275 **Of Eden strive; nor that Nyseian Ile**
276 **Girt with the River Triton, where old Cham,**
277 **Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,**
278 **Hid Amalthea and her Florid Son**
279 **Young Bacchus from his Stepdame Rhea's eye;**
280 **Nor where Abassin Kings thir issue Guard,**
281 **Mount Amara, though this by som suppos'd**
282 **True Paradise under the Ethiop Line**
283 **By Nilus head, enclosd with shining Rock,**
284 **A whole days journy high, but wide remote**
285 **From this Assyrian Garden, where the Fiend**
286 **Saw undelighted all delight, all kind**
287 **Of living Creatures new to sight and strange:**
288 **Two of far nobler shape erect and tall,**
289 **Godlike erect, with native Honour clad**
290 **In naked Majestie seemd Lords of all,**
291 **And worthie seemd, for in thir looks Divine**
292 **The image of thir glorious Maker shon,**
293 **Truth, wisdom, Sanctitude severe and pure,**
294 **Severe but in true filial freedom plac't;**
295 **Whence true autoritie in men; though both**
296 **Not equal, as thir sex not equal seemd;**
297 **For contemplation hee and valour formd,**
298 **For softness shee and sweet attractive Grace,**
299 **Hee for God only, shee for God in him:**
300 **His fair large Front and Eye sublime declar'd**
301 **Absolute rule; and Hyacinthin Locks**
302 **Round from his parted forelock manly hung**
303 **Clustring, but not beneath his shoulders broad:**
304 **Shee as a vail down to the slender waste**
305 **Her unadorned golden tresses wore**
306 **Dissheveld, but in wanton ringlets wav'd**
307 **As the Vine curles her tendrils, which impli'd**
308 **Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,**
309 **And by her yielded, by him best receivd,**
310 **Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,**
311 **And sweet reluctant amorous delay.**
312 **Nor those mysterious parts were then conceald,**
313 **Then was not guiltie shame, dishonest shame**

314 Of natures works, honor dishonorable,
315 Sin-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind
316 With shews instead, meer shews of seeming pure,
317 And banisht from mans life his happiest life,
318 Simplicite and spotless innocence.
319 So passd they naked on, nor shund the sight
320 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill:
321 So hand in hand they passd, the lovliest pair
322 That ever since in loves imbraces met,
323 Adam the goodliest man of men since borne
324 His Sons, the fairest of her Daughters Eve.

325 Under a tuft of shade that on a green
326 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh Fountain side
327 They sat them down, and after no more toil
328 Of thir sweet Gardning labour then suffic'd
329 To recommend coole Zephyr, and made ease
330 More easie, wholsom thirst and appetite
331 More grateful, to thir Supper Fruits they fell,
332 Nectarine Fruits which the compliant boughes
333 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
334 On the soft downie Bank damaskt with flours:
335 The favourie pulp they chew, and in the rinde
336 Still as they thirsted scoop the brimming stream;
337 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles
338 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance as beseems
339 Fair couple, linkt in happie nuptial League,
340 Alone as they. About them frisking playd
341 All Beasts of th' Earth, since wilde, and of all chase
342 In Wood or Wilderness, Forrest or Den;
343 Sporting the Lion rampd, and in his paw
344 Dandl'd the Kid; Bears, Tygers, Ounces, Pards,
345 Gambold before them, th' unwieldy Elephant
346 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreathd
347 His Lithe Proboscis; close the Serpent sly
348 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
349 His breaded train, and of his fatal guile
350 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass
351 Coucht, and now fild with pasture gazing sat,
352 Or Bedward ruminating: for the Sun
353 Declin'd was hasting now with prone carreer
354 To th' Ocean Iles, and in th' ascending Scale
355 Of Heav'n the Starrs that usher Evening rose:
356 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,
357 Scarce thus at length faild speech recoverd sad.

358 O Hell! what doe mine eyes with grief behold,
359 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc't
360 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,

361 Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright
362 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue
363 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
364 In them Divine resemblance, and such grace
365 The hand that form'd them on thir shape hath pourd.
366 Ah gentle pair, yee little think how nigh
367 Your change approaches, when all these delights
368 Will vanish and deliver ye to woe;
369 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;
370 Happie, but for so happie ill secur'd
371 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n
372 Ill fenc't for Heav'n to keep out such a foe
373 As now is enterd; yet no purpos'd foe
374 To you whom I could pittie thus forlorne
375 Though I unpittied: League with you I seek,
376 And mutual amitie so streight, so close,
377 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
378 Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please
379 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such
380 Accept your Makers work; he gave it me,
381 Which I as freely give; Hell shall unfold,
382 To entertain you two, her widest Gates,
383 And send forth all her Kings; there will be room,
384 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
385 Your numerous offspring; if no better place,
386 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge
387 On you who wrong me not for him who wrongd.
388 And should I at your harmless innocence
389 Melt, as I doe, yet public reason just,
390 Honour and Empire with revenge enlarg'd,
391 By conquering this new World, compels me now
392 To do what else though damnd I should abhorre.

393 So spake the Fiend, and with necessitie,
394 The Tyrants plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.
395 Then from his loftie stand on that high Tree
396 Down he alights among the sportful Herd
397 Of those fourfooted kindes, himself now one,
398 Now other, as thir shape servd best his end
399 Neerer to view his prey, and unespied
400 To mark what of thir state he more might learn
401 By word or action markt: about them round
402 A Lion now he stalkes with fierie glare,
403 Then as a Tyger, who by chance hath spi'd
404 In some Purlieu two gentle Fawnes at play,
405 Strait couches close, then rising changes oft
406 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground
407 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both
408 Grip't in each paw: When Adam first of men

409 To first of women Eve thus moving speech,
410 Turnd him all eare to hear new utterance flow.

411 Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,
412 Dearer thy self then all; needs must the power
413 That made us, and for us this ample World
414 Be infinitely good, and of his good
415 As liberal and free as infinite,
416 That rais'd us from the dust and plac't us here
417 In all this happiness, who at his hand
418 Have nothing merited, nor can performe
419 Aught whereof hee hath need, hee who requires
420 From us no other service then to keep
421 This one, this easie charge, of all the Trees
422 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
423 So various, not to taste that onely Tree
424 Of knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life,
425 So neer grows Death to Life, what ere Death is,
426 Som dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou knowst
427 God hath pronounc't it death to taste that Tree,
428 The only sign of our obedience left
429 Among so many signes of power and rule
430 Conferd upon us, and Dominion giv'n
431 Over all other Creatures that possess
432 Earth, Aire, and Sea. Then let us not think hard
433 One easie prohibition, who enjoy
434 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
435 Unlimited of manifold delights:
436 But let us ever praise him, and extoll
437 His bountie, following our delightful task
438 To prune these growing Plants, and tend these Flours,
439 Which were it toilsom, yet with thee were sweet.

440 To whom thus Eve repli'd. O thou for whom
441 And from whom I was formd flesh of thy flesh,
442 And without whom am to no end, my Guide
443 And Head, what thou hast said is just and right.
444 For wee to him indeed all praises owe,
445 And daily thanks, I chiefly who enjoy
446 So farr the happier Lot, enjoying thee
447 Præminent by so much odds, while thou
448 Like consort to thy self canst no where find.
449 That day I oft remember, when from sleep
450 I first awak't, and found my self repos'd
451 Under a shade of flours, much wondring where
452 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.
453 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound
454 Of waters issu'd from a Cave and spread
455 Into a liquid Plain, then stood unmov'd

456 Pure as th' expanse of Heav'n; I thither went
 457 With unexperienc't thought, and laid me downe
 458 On the green bank, to look into the cleer
 459 Smooth Lake, that to me seemd another Skie.
 460 As I bent down to look, just opposite,
 461 A Shape within the watry gleam appeerd
 462 Bending to look on me, I started back,
 463 It started back, but pleas'd I soon returnd,
 464 Pleas'd it returnd as soon with answering looks
 465 Of sympathie and love; there I had fixt
 466 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,
 467 Had not a voice thus warnd me, What thou seest,
 468 What there thou seest fair Creature is thy self,
 469 With thee it came and goes: but follow me,
 470 And I will bring thee where no shadow staies
 471 Thy coming, and thy soft imbraces, hee
 472 Whose image thou art, him thou shall enjoy
 473 Inseparablie thine, to him shalt beare
 474 Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call'd
 475 Mother of human Race: what could I doe,
 476 But follow strait, invisibly thus led?
 477 Till I espi'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
 478 Under a Platan, yet methought less faire,
 479 Less winning soft, less amiablie milde,
 480 Then that smooth watry image; back I turnd,
 481 Thou following cryd'st aloud, Return faire Eve,
 482 Whom fli'st thou? whom thou fli'st, of him thou art,
 483 His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent
 484 Out of my side to thee, neerest my heart
 485 Substantial Life, to have thee by my side
 486 Henceforth an individual solace dear;
 487 Part of my Soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 488 My other half: with that thy gentle hand
 489 Seisd mine, I yielded, and from that time see
 490 How beauty is excelld by manly grace
 491 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

 492 So spake our general Mother, and with eyes
 493 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,
 494 And meek surrender, half imbracing leand
 495 On our first Father, half her swelling Breast
 496 Naked met his under the flowing Gold
 497 Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight
 498 Both of her Beauty and submissive Charms
 499 Smil'd with superior Love, **as Jupiter**
 500 **On Juno smiles, when he impregns the Clouds**
 501 **That shed May Flowers;** and press'd her Matron lip
 502 With kisses pure: aside the Devil turnd
 503 For envie, yet with jealous leer maligne

504 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plained.

505 Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two
506 Imparadis't in one anothers arms
507 The happier Eden, shall enjoy thir fill
508 Of bliss on bliss, while I to Hell am thrust,
509 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,
510 Among our other torments not the least,
511 Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines;
512 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
513 From thir own mouths; all is not thirs it seems:
514 One fatal Tree there stands of Knowledge call'd,
515 Forbidden them to taste: Knowledge forbid'n?
516 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should thir Lord
517 Envie them that? can it be sin to know,
518 Can it be death? and do they onely stand
519 By Ignorance, is that thir happie state,
520 The proof of thir obedience and thir faith?
521 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
522 Thir ruine! Hence I will excite thir minds
523 With more desire to know, and to reject
524 Envious commands, invented with designe
525 To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt
526 Equal with Gods; aspiring to be such,
527 They taste and die: what likelier can ensue?
528 But first with narrow search I must walk round
529 This Garden, **and no corner leave unspi'd;**
530 **A chance but** chance may lead where I may meet
531 Some wandring Spirit of Heav'n, **by Fountain side,**
532 **Or in thick shade retir'd,** from him to draw
533 What further would be learnt. Live while ye may,
534 Yet happie pair; enjoy, till I return,
535 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

536 So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
537 But with sly circumspection, and began
538 Through wood, through waste, o're hill, o're dale his roam.
539 Mean while **in utmost Longitude, where Heav'n**
540 **With Earth and Ocean meets,** the setting Sun
541 **Slowly descended, and** with right aspect
542 Against the eastern Gate of Paradise
543 Leveld his evening Rayes: it was a Rock
544 Of Alabaster, pil'd up to the Clouds,
545 Conspicuous farr, winding with one ascent
546 Accessible from Earth, one entrance high;
547 The rest was craggie cliff, that overhung
548 Still as it rose, impossible to climbe.
549 Betwixt these rockie Pillars Gabriel sat
550 Chief of th' Angelic Guards, awaiting night;

551 About him exercis'd Heroic Games
552 Th' unarmed Youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand
553 Celestial Armourie, Shields, Helmes, and Speares,
554 Hung high with Diamond flaming, and with Gold.
555 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the Eeven
556 On a Sun beam, swift as a shooting Starr
557 In Autumn thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd
558 Impress the Air, and shews the Mariner
559 From what point of his Compass to beware
560 Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste.

561 Gabriel, to thee thy course by Lot hath giv'n
562 Charge and strict watch that to this happie Place
563 No evil thing approach or enter in;
564 This day at highth of Noon came to my Spheare
565 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know
566 More of th' Almightyes works, and chiefly Man
567 Gods latest Image: I describ'd his way
568 Bent all on speed, and markt his Aerie Gate;
569 But in the Mount that lies from Eden North,
570 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks
571 Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:
572 Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade
573 Lost sight of him; one of the banisht crew
574 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise
575 New troubles; him thy care must be to find.

576 To whom the winged Warriour thus returnd:
577 Uriel, no wonder if thy perfet sight,
578 Amid the Suns bright circle where thou sitst,
579 See farr and wide: in at this Gate none pass
580 The vigilance here plac't, but such as come
581 Well known from Heav'n; and since Meridian hour
582 No Creature thence: if Spirit of other sort,
583 So minded, have oreleapt these earthie bounds
584 On purpose, hard thou knowst it to exclude
585 Spiritual substance with corporeal barr.
586 But if within the circuit of these walks,
587 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
588 Thou tellst, by morrow dawning I shall know.

589 So promis'd hee, and Uriel to his charge
590 Returnd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd
591 Bore him slope downward to the Sun now fall'n
592 Beneath th' Azores; whither the prime Orb,
593 Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd
594 Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth
595 By shorter flight to th' East, had left him there
596 Arraying with reflected Purple and Gold

597 The Clouds that on his Western Throne attend:
598 Now came still Eevning on, and Twilight gray
599 Had in her sober Liverie all things clad;
600 Silence accompanied, for Beast and Bird,
601 They to thir grassie Couch, these to thir Nests
602 Were slunk, all but the wakeful Nightingale;
603 She all night long her amorous descant sung;
604 Silence was pleas'd: now glow'd the Firmament
605 With living Saphirs: Hesperus that led
606 The starrie Host, rode brightest, till the Moon
607 Rising in clouded Majestie, at length
608 Apparent Queen unvaild her peerless light,
609 And o're the dark her Silver Mantle threw.

610 When Adam thus to Eve: Fair Consort, th' hour
611 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest
612 Mind us of like repose, since God hath set
613 Labour and rest, as day and night to men
614 Successive, and the timely dew of sleep
615 Now falling with soft slumbrous weight inclines
616 Our eye-lids; other Creatures all day long
617 Rove idle unimploid, and less need rest;
618 Man hath his daily work of body or mind
619 Appointed, which declares his Dignitie,
620 And the regard of Heav'n on all his waies;
621 While other Animals unactive range,
622 And of thir doings God takes no account.
623 To morrow ere fresh Morning streak the East
624 With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,
625 And at our pleasant labour, to reform
626 Yon flourie Arbors, yonder Allies green,
627 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,
628 That mock our scant manuring, and require
629 More hands then ours to lop thir wanton growth:
630 Those Blossoms also, and those dropping Gumms,
631 That lie bestrowne unsightly and unsmooth,
632 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease;
633 Mean while, as Nature wills, Night bids us rest.

634 To whom thus Eve with perfet beauty adornd.
635 My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst
636 Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains,
637 God is thy Law, thou mine: to know no more
638 Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise.
639 With thee conversing I forget all time,
640 All seasons and thir change, all please alike.
641 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
642 With charm of earliest Birds; pleasant the Sun
643 When first on this delightful Land he spreads

644 His orient Beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flour,
645 Glistring with dew; fragrant the fertil earth
646 After soft showers; and sweet the coming on
647 Of grateful Eevning milde, then silent Night
648 With this her solemn Bird and this fair Moon,
649 And these the Gemms of Heav'n, her starrie train:
650 But neither breath of Morn when she ascends
651 With charm of earliest Birds, nor rising Sun
652 On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, floure,
653 Glistring with dew, nor fragrance after showers,
654 Nor grateful Eevning mild, nor silent Night
655 With this her solemn Bird, nor walk by Moon,
656 Or glittering Starr-light without thee is sweet.
657 But wherfore all night long shine these, for whom
658 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

659 To whom our general Ancestor repli'd.
660 Daughter of God and Man, accomplisht Eve,
661 Those have thir course to finish, round the Earth,
662 By morrow Eevning, and from Land to Land
663 In order, though to Nations yet unborn,
664 Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise;
665 Least total darkness should by Night regaine
666 Her old possession, and extinguish life
667 In Nature and all things, which these soft fires
668 Not only enlighten, but with kindly heate
669 Of various influence foment and warme,
670 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down
671 Thir stellar vertue on all kinds that grow
672 On Earth, made hereby apter to receive
673 Perfection from the Suns more potent Ray.
674 These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,
675 Shine not in vain, nor think, though men were none,
676 That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise;
677 Millions of spiritual Creatures walk the Earth
678 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:
679 All these with ceasless praise his works behold
680 Both day and night: how often from the steep
681 Of echoing Hill or Thicket have we heard
682 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
683 Sole, or responsive each to others note
684 Singing thir great Creator: oft in bands
685 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk
686 With Heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds
687 In full harmonic number joind, thir songs
688 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

689 Thus talking hand in hand alone they pass'd
690 On to thir blissful Bower; it was a place

691 Chos'n by the sovran Planter, when he fram'd
692 All things to mans delightful use; the rooffe
693 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
694 Laurel and Mirtle, and what higher grew
695 Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side
696 Acanthus, and each odorous bushie shrub
697 Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flour,
698 Iris all hues, Roses, and Gessamin
699 Rear'd high thir flourisht heads between, and wrought
700 Mosaic; underfoot the Violet,
701 Crocus, and Hyacinth with rich inlay
702 Broiderd the ground, more colour'd then with stone
703 Of costliest Emblem: other Creature here
704 Beast, Bird, Insect, or Worm durst enter none;
705 Such was thir awe of Man. In shadie Bower
706 More sacred and sequesterd, though but feignd,
707 Pan or Silvanus never slept, nor Nymph,
708 Nor Faunus haunted. Here in close recess
709 With Flowers, Garlands, and sweet-smelling Herbs
710 Espoused Eve deckt first her nuptial Bed,
711 And heav'nly Quires the Hymenæan sung,
712 What day the genial Angel to our Sire
713 Brought her in naked beauty more adorn'd,
714 More lovely then Pandora, whom the Gods
715 Endowd with all thir gifts, and O too like
716 In sad event, when to the unwiser Son
717 Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnar'd
718 Mankind with her faire looks, to be aveng'd
719 On him who had stole Joves authentic fire.

720 Thus at thir shadie Lodge arriv'd, both stood
721 Both turnd, and under op'n Skie ador'd
722 The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth and Heav'n
723 Which they beheld, the Moons resplendent Globe
724 And starrie Pole: Thou also mad'st the Night,
725 Maker Omnipotent, and thou the Day,
726 Which we in our appointed work imployd
727 Have finisht happie in our mutual help
728 And mutual love, the Crown of all our bliss
729 Ordaind by thee, and this delicious place
730 For us too large, where thy abundance wants
731 Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.
732 But thou hast promis'd from us two a Race
733 To fill the Earth, who shall with us extoll
734 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,
735 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

736 This said unanimous, and other Rites
737 Observing none, but adoration pure

738 Which God likes best, into thir inmost bowre
739 Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off
740 These troublesom disguises which wee wear,
741 **Strait side by side were laid, nor turnd I weene**
742 **Adam from his fair Spouse, nor Eve the Rites**
743 **Mysterious of connubial Love refus'd:**
744 **Whatever Hypocrites austerely talk**
745 **Of puritie and place and innocence,**
746 **Defaming as impure what God declares**
747 **Pure, and commands to som, leaves free to all.**
748 **Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain**
749 **But our destroyer, foe to God and Man?**
750 Haile wedded Love, mysterious Law, true source
751 Of human ofspring, sole proprietie,
752 In Paradise of all things common else.
753 By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men
754 Among the bestial herds to raunge, by thee
755 Founded in Reason, Loyal, Just, and Pure,
756 Relations dear, and all the Charities
757 Of Father, Son, and Brother first were known.
758 Farr be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
759 Or think thee unbecfitting holiest place,
760 Perpetual Fountain of Domestic sweets,
761 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc't,
762 Present, or past, as Saints and Patriarchs us'd.
763 Here Love his golden shafts imploies, here lights
764 His constant Lamp, and waves his purple wings,
765 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile
766 Of Harlots, loveless, joyless, unindeard,
767 Casual fruition, nor in Court Amours
768 Mixt Dance, or wanton Mask, or Midnight Bal,
769 Or Serenate, which the starv'd Lover sings
770 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.
771 These lulld by Nightingales imbraceing slept,
772 And on thir naked limbs the flourie roof
773 Showrd Roses, which the Morn repair'd. Sleep on
774 Blest pair; and O yet happiest if ye seek
775 No happier state, and know to know no more.

776 Now had night measur'd with her shaddowie Cone
777 Half way up Hill this vast Sublunar Vault,
778 And from thir Ivorie Port the Cherubim
779 Forth issuing at th' accustomed hour stood armd
780 To thir night watches in warlike Parade,
781 When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake.

782 Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the South
783 With strictest watch; these other wheel the North,
784 Our circuit meets full West. As flame they part

785 Half wheeling to the Shield, half to the Spear.
786 From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he calld
787 That neer him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

788 Ithuriel and Zephon, with wingd speed
789 Search through this Garden, leave unsearcht no nook,
790 But chiefly where those two fair Creatures Lodge,
791 Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harme.
792 This Eevning from the Sun's decline arriv'd
793 Who tells of som infernal Spirit seen
794 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd
795 The barrs of Hell, on errand bad no doubt:
796 Such where ye find, seise fast, and hither bring.

797 So saying, on he led his radiant Files,
798 Daz'ling the Moon; these to the Bower direct
799 In search of whom they sought: him there they found
800 Squat like a Toad, close at the eare of Eve;
801 Assaying by his Devilish art to reach
802 The Organs of her Fancie, and with them forge
803 Illusions as he list, Phantasms and Dreams,
804 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint
805 Th' animal Spirits that from pure blood arise
806 Like gentle breaths from Rivers pure, thence raise
807 At least distemperd, discontented thoughts,
808 Vaine hopes, vaine aimes, inordinate desires
809 Blown up with high conceits ingendring pride.
810 Him thus intent Ithuriel with his Spear
811 Touch'd lightly; for no falshood can endure
812 Touch of Celestial temper, but returns
813 Of force to its own likeness: up he starts
814 Discoverd and surpriz'd. As when a spark
815 Lights on a heap of nitrous Powder, laid
816 Fit for the Tun som Magazin to store
817 Against a rumord Warr, the Smuttie graine
818 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the Aire:
819 So started up in his own shape the Fiend.
820 Back stept those two faire Angels half amaz'd
821 So sudden to behold the grieslie King;
822 Yet thus, unmovd with fear, accost him soon.

823 Which of those rebell Spirits adjudg'd to Hell
824 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison, and transform'd,
825 Why satst thou like an enemy in waite
826 Here watching at the head of these that sleep?

827 Know ye not then said Satan, fill'd with scorn,
828 Know ye not mee? ye knew me once no mate
829 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soare;

830 Not to know mee argues your selves unknown,
831 The lowest of your throng; or if ye know,
832 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
833 Your message, like to end as much in vain?
834 To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn.

835 Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,
836 Or undiminisht brightness, to be known
837 As when thou stoodst in Heav'n upright and pure;
838 That Glorie then, when thou no more wast good,
839 Departed from thee, and thou resembl'st now
840 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foule.
841 But come, for thou, besure, shalt give account
842 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
843 This place inviolable, and these from harm.

844 So spake the Cherube, and his grave rebuke
845 Severe in youthful beautie, added grace
846 Invincible: abasht the Devil stood,
847 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
848 Vertue in her shape how lovly, saw, and pin'd
849 His loss; but chiefly to find here observd
850 His lustre visibly impar'd; yet seemd
851 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
852 Best with the best, the Sender not the sent,
853 Or all at once; more glorie will be wonn,
854 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,
855 Will save us trial what the least can doe
856 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

857 The Fiend repli'd not, overcome with rage;
858 But like a proud Steed reind, went hautie on,
859 Chaumping his iron curb: to strive or flie
860 He held it vain; awe from above had quelld
861 His heart, not else dismai'd. Now drew they nigh
862 The western Point, where those half-rounding guards
863 Just met, and closing stood in squadron joind
864 Awaiting next command. To whom thir Chief
865 Gabriel from the Front thus calld aloud.

866 O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
867 Hasting this way, and now by glimps discerne
868 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,
869 And with them comes a third of Regal port,
870 But faded splendor wan; who by his gate
871 And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,
872 Not likely to part hence without contest;
873 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

874 He scarce had ended, when those two approachd
875 And brief related whom they brought, where found,
876 How busied, in what form and posture coucht.

877 To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake.
878 Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd
879 To thy transgressions, and disturbd the charge
880 Of others, who approve not to transgress
881 By thy example, but have power and right
882 To question thy bold entrance on this place;
883 Imploi'd it seems to violate sleep, and those
884 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss?

885 To whom thus Satan, with contemptuous brow.
886 Gabriel, thou hadst in Heav'n th' esteem of wise,
887 And such I held thee; but this question askt
888 Puts me in doubt. Lives ther who loves his pain?
889 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,
890 Though thither doomd? Thou wouldst thy self, no doubt,
891 And boldly venture to whatever place
892 Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change
893 Torment with ease, and soonest recompence
894 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought;
895 To thee no reason; who knowst only good,
896 But evil hast not tri'd: and wilt object
897 His will who bound us? let him surer barr
898 His Iron Gates, if he intends our stay
899 In that dark durance: thus much what was askt.
900 The rest is true, they found me where they say;
901 But that implies not violence or harme.

902 Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,
903 Disdainfully half smiling thus repli'd.
904 O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,
905 Since Satan fell, whom follie overthrew,
906 And now returns him from his prison scap't,
907 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
908 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither
909 Unlicenc't from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd;
910 So wise he judges it to fly from pain
911 However, and to scape his punishment.
912 So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrauth,
913 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight
914 Seavenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,
915 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain
916 Can equal anger infinite provok't.
917 But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee
918 Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them
919 Less pain, less to be fled, or thou then they

920 Less hardie to endure? courageous Chief,
921 The first in flight from pain, had'st thou alledg'd
922 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
923 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

924 To which the Fiend thus answerd frowning stern.
925 Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,
926 Insulting Angel, well thou knowst I stood
927 Thy fiercest, when in Battel to thy aide
928 Thy blasting volied Thunder made all speed
929 And seconded thy else not dreaded Spear.
930 But still thy words at random, as before,
931 Argue thy inexperience what behooves
932 From hard assaies and ill successes past
933 A faithful Leader, not to hazard all
934 Through wayes of danger by himself untri'd,
935 I therefore, I alone first undertook
936 To wing the desolate Abyss, and spie
937 This new created World, whereof in Hell
938 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
939 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers
940 To settle here on Earth, or in mid Aire;
941 Though for possession put to try once more
942 What thou and thy gay Legions dare against;
943 Whose easier business were to serve thir Lord
944 High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymne his Throne,
945 And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

946 To whom the Warriour Angel, soon repli'd.
947 To say and strait unsay, pretending first
948 Wise to flie pain, professing next the Spie,
949 Argues no Leader but a lyar trac't,
950 Satan, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,
951 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd!
952 Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?
953 Armie of Fiends, fit body to fit head;
954 Was this your discipline and faith ingag'd,
955 Your military obedience, to dissolve
956 Allegiance to th' acknowldg'd Power supream?
957 And thou sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem
958 Patron of liberty, who more then thou
959 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilly ador'd
960 Heav'ns awful Monarch? wherefore but in hope
961 To dispossess him, and thy self to reigne?
962 But mark what I arreede thee now, avant;
963 Flie thither whence thou fledst: if from this houre
964 Within these hallowd limits thou appeer,
965 Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chaind,
966 And Seale thee so, as henceforth not to scorne

967 The facil gates of hell too slightly barrd.
 968 So threatn'd hee, but Satan to no threats
 969 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage repli'd.
 970 Then when I am thy captive talk of chaines,
 971 Proud limitarie Cherube, but ere then
 972 Farr heavier load thy self expect to feel
 973 From my prevailing arme, though Heavens King
 974 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy Compeers,
 975 Us'd to the yোক, draw'st his triumphant wheels
 976 In progress through the rode of Heav'n Star-pav'd.

 977 While thus he spake, th' Angelic Squadron bright
 978 Turnd fierie red, sharpning in mooned hornes
 979 Thir Phalanx, and began to hemm him round
 980 With ported Spears, as thick as when a field
 981 Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends
 982 Her bearded Grove of ears, which way the wind
 983 Swayes them; **the careful Plowman doubting stands**
 984 **Least on the threshing floore his hopeful sheaves**
 985 **Prove chaff.** On th' other side Satan allarm'd
 986 Collecting all his might dilated stood,
 987 Like Teneriff or Atlas unremov'd:
 988 His stature reacht the Skie, and on his Crest
 989 Sat horror Plum'd; nor wanted in his graspe
 990 What seemd both Spear and Shield: now dreadful deeds
 991 Might have ensu'd, nor onely Paradise
 992 In this commotion, but the Starrie Cope
 993 Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the Elements
 994 At least had gon to rack, disturbd and torne
 995 With violence of this conflict, had not soon
 996 Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray
 997 Hung forth in Heav'n his golden Scales, yet seen
 998 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion signe,
 999 Wherein all things created first he weighd,
 1000 The pendulous round Earth with ballanc't Aire
 1001 In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
 1002 Battels and Realms: in these he put two weights
 1003 The sequel each of parting and of fight;
 1004 The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam;
 1005 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend.

 1006 Satan, I know thy strength, and thou knowst mine,
 1007 Neither our own but giv'n; what follie then
 1008 To boast what Arms can doe, since thine no more
 1009 Then Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubld now
 1010 To trample thee as mire: for proof look up,
 1011 And read thy Lot in yon celestial Sign
 1012 Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak,

1013 If thou resist. The Fiend lookt up and knew
1014 His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled
1015 Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

BOOK V.

1 Now Morn her rosie steps in th' Eastern Clime
2 Advancing, sow'd the earth with Orient Pearle,
3 When Adam wak't, so customd, for his sleep
4 Was Aerie light from pure digestion bred,
5 And temperat vapors bland, which th' only sound
6 Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora 's fan,
7 Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill Matin Song
8 Of Birds on every bough; so much the more
9 His wonder was to find unwak'nd Eve
10 With Tresses discompos'd, and glowing Cheek,
11 As through unquiet rest: he on his side
12 Leaning half-rais'd, with looks of cordial Love
13 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
14 Beautie, which whether waking or asleep,
15 Shot forth peculiar Graces; then with voice
16 Milde, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
17 Her hand soft touching, whisperd thus. Awake
18 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
19 Heav'ns last best gift, my ever new delight,
20 Awake, the morning shines, and the fresh field
21 Calls us, we lose the prime, to mark how spring
22 Our tended Plants, how blows the Citron Grove,
23 What drops the Myrrhe, and what the balmie Reed,
24 How Nature paints her colours, how the Bee
25 Sits on the Bloom extracting liquid sweet.

26 Such whispering wak'd her, but with startl'd eye
27 On Adam, whom imbracing, thus she spake.

28 O Sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
29 My Glorie, my Perfection, glad I see
30 Thy face, and Morn return'd, for I this Night,
31 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,
32 If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,
33 Works of day pass't, or morrows next designe,
34 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
35 Knew never till this irksom night; methought
36 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
37 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,
38 Why sleepest thou Eve? now is the pleasant time,
39 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
40 To the night-warbling Bird, that now awake

41 Tunes sweetest his love-labor'd song; now reignes
 42 Full Orb'd the Moon, and with more pleasing light
 43 Shadowie sets off the face of things; in vain,
 44 If none regard, Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,
 45 Whom to behold but thee, Natures desire,
 46 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 47 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
 48 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
 49 To find thee I directed then my walk;
 50 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways
 51 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree
 52 Of interdicted Knowledge: fair it seem'd,
 53 Much fairer to my Fancie then by day:
 54 And as I wondring lookt, beside it stood
 55 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heav'n
 56 By us oft seen; his dewie locks distill'd
 57 Ambrosia; on that Tree he also gaz'd;
 58 And O fair Plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,
 59 Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,
 60 Nor God, nor Man; is Knowledge so despis'd?
 61 Or envie, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 62 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 63 Longer thy offerd good, why else set here?
 64 This said he paus'd not, but with ventrous Arme
 65 He pluckt, he tasted; mee damp horror chil'd
 66 At such bold words voucht with a deed so bold:
 67 But he thus overjoy'd, O Fruit Divine,
 68 Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus cropt,
 69 Forbidd'n here, it seems, as onely fit
 70 For God's, yet able to make Gods of Men:
 71 And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more
 72 Communicated, more abundant growes,
 73 The Author not impair'd, but honourd more?
 74 Here, happie Creature, fair Angelic Eve,
 75 Partake thou also; happie though thou art,
 76 Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be:
 77 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
 78 Thy self a Goddess, not to Earth confind,
 79 But sometimes in the Air, as wee, sometimes
 80 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see
 81 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.
 82 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 83 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 84 Which he had pluckt; the pleasant savourie smell
 85 So quick'nd appetite, that I, methought,
 86 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the Clouds
 87 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 88 The Earth outstretcht immense, a prospect wide
 89 And various: wondring at my flight and change

90 To this high exaltation; suddenly
91 My Guide was gon, and I, me thought, sunk down,
92 And fell asleep; but O how glad I wak'd
93 To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her Night
94 Related, and thus Adam answerd sad.

95 Best Image of my self and dearer half,
96 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
97 Affects me equally; nor can I like
98 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;
99 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,
100 Created pure. But know that in the Soule
101 Are many lesser Faculties that serve
102 Reason as chief; among these Fancies next
103 Her office holds; of all external things,
104 Which the five watchful Senses represent,
105 She forms Imaginations, Aerie shapes,
106 Which Reason joyning or disjoyning, frames
107 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
108 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
109 Into her private Cell when Nature rests.
110 Oft in her absence mimic Fancies wakes
111 To imitate her; but misjoyning shapes,
112 Wilde work produces oft, and most in dreams,
113 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
114 Som such resemblances methinks I find
115 Of our last Eevenings talk, in this thy dream,
116 But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
117 Evil into the mind of God or Man
118 May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave
119 No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope
120 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,
121 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.
122 Be not disheart'nd then, nor cloud those looks
123 That wont to be more chearful and serene
124 Then when fair Morning first smiles on the World,
125 And let us to our fresh employments rise
126 Among the Groves, the Fountains, and the Flours
127 That open now thir choicest bosom'd smells
128 Reservd from night, and kept for thee in store.

129 So cheard he his fair Spouse, and she was cheard,
130 But silently a gentle tear let fall
131 From either eye, and wip'd them with her haire;
132 Two other precious drops that ready stood,
133 Each in thir Chrystal sluice, hee ere they fell
134 Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
135 And pious awe, that feard to have offended.

136 So all was cleard, and to the Field they haste.
137 But first from under shadie arborous roof,
138 Soon as they forth were come to open sight
139 Of day-spring, and the Sun, who scarce up risen
140 With wheels yet hov'ring o're the Ocean brim,
141 Shot paralel to the earth his dewie ray,
142 Discovering in wide Lantskip all the East
143 Of Paradise and Edens happie Plains,
144 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
145 Thir Orisons, each Morning duly paid
146 In various style, for neither various style
147 Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise
148 This Maker, in fit strains pronounc't or sung
149 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence
150 Flowd from thir lips, in Prose or numerous Verse,
151 More tuneable then needed Lute or Harp
152 To add more sweetness, and they thus began.

153 These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
154 Almighty, thine this universal Frame,
155 Thus wondrous fair; thy self how wondrous then!
156 **Unspeakable, who sitst above these Heavens**
157 To us invisible or dimly seen
158 In these thy lowest works, yet these declare
159 Thy goodness beyond thought, and Power Divine:
160 Speak yee who best can tell, ye Sons of light,
161 Angels, for yee behold him, and with songs
162 And choral symphonies, Day without Night,
163 Circle his Throne rejoycing, yee in Heav'n,
164 On Earth joyn all ye Creatures to extoll
165 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.
166 Fairest of Starrs, last in the train of Night.

167 If better thou belong not to the dawn,
168 Sure pledge of day, that crownst the smiling Morn
169 With thy bright Circlet, praise him in thy Spheare
170 While day arises, that sweet hour of Prime.
171 Thou Sun, of this great World both Eye and Soule,
172 Acknowledge him thy Greater, sound his praise
173 In thy eternal course, both when thou climbst,
174 And when high Noon hast gaind, and when thou fallst.
175 Moon, that now meetst the orient Sun, now fli'st
176 **With the fixt Starrs, fixt in thir Orb that flies,**
177 And yee five other wandring Fires that move
178 In mystic Dance not without Song, resound
179 His praise, who out of Darkness call'd up Light.
180 Aire, and ye Elements the eldest birth
181 Of Natures Womb, that in quaternion run
182 Perpetual Circle, multiform; and mix

183 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change
 184 Varie to our great Maker still new praise.
 185 Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise
 186 From Hill or steaming Lake, duskie or grey,
 187 Till the Sun paint your fleecie skirts with Gold,
 188 In honour to the Worlds great Author rise,
 189 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncolour'd skie,
 190 Or wet the thirstie Earth with falling showers,
 191 Rising or falling still advance his praise.
 192 His praise ye Winds, that from four Quarters blow,
 193 Breathe soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye Pines,
 194 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.
 195 Fountains and yee, that warble, as ye flow,
 196 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.
 197 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds,
 198 That singing up to Heaven Gate ascend,
 199 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise;
 200 Yee that in Waters glide, and yee that walk
 201 The Earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep;
 202 Witness if I be silent, Morn or Eeven,
 203 To Hill, or Valley, Fountain, or fresh shade
 204 Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.
 205 Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still
 206 To give us onely good; and if the night
 207 Have gathered aught of evil or conceald,
 208 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.

 209 So pray'd they innocent, and to thir thoughts
 210 Firm peace recoverd soon and wonted calm.
 211 On to thir mornings rural work they haste
 212 Among sweet dewes and flours; where any row
 213 Of Fruit-trees overwoodie reachd too farr
 214 Thir pamperd boughes, **and needed hands to check**
 215 **Fruitless imbraces: or they led the Vine**
 216 **To wed her Elm; she spous'd about him twines**
 217 **Her marriageable arms, and with her brings**
 218 **Her downr th' adopted Clusters, to adorn**
 219 **His barren leaves.** Them thus imploid beheld
 220 With pittie Heav'ns high King, and to him call'd
 221 Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd
 222 To travel with Tobias, and secur'd
 223 His marriage with the seaventimes-wedded Maid.

 224 Raphael, said hee, thou hear'st what stir on Earth
 225 Satan from Hell scap't through the darksom Gulf
 226 Hath raisd in Paradise, **and how disturbd**
 227 **This night the human pair, how he designs**
 228 **In them at once to ruin all mankind.**
 229 Go therefore, half this day **as friend with friend**

230 Converse with Adam, *in what Bowre or shade*
 231 *Thou find'st him from the heat of Noon retir'd,*
 232 *To respit his day-labour with repast,*
 233 *Or with repose; and* such discourse bring on,
 234 As may advise him of his happie state,
 235 Happiness in his power left free to will,
 236 Left to his own free Will, his Will though free,
 237 Yet mutable; whence warne him to beware
 238 He swerve not too secure: tell him withall
 239 His danger, and from whom, what enemy
 240 Late falln himself from Heav'n, is plotting now
 241 The fall of others from like state of bliss;
 242 *By violence, no, for that shall be withstood,*
 243 *But by deceit and lies; this let him know,*
 244 *Least wilfully transgressing he pretend*
 245 *Surprisal, unadmonisht, unforewarnd.*

246 So spake th' Eternal Father, and fulfilld
 247 All Justice: nor delaid the winged Saint
 248 After his charge receivd; but from among
 249 Thousand Celestial Ardors, where he stood
 250 Vaild with his gorgeous wings, up springing light
 251 Flew through the midst of Heav'n; th' angelic Quires
 252 On each hand parting, to his speed gave way
 253 Through all th' Empyreal road; till at the Gate
 254 Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-opend wide
 255 On golden Hinges turning, as by work
 256 Divine the sov'ran Architect had fram'd.
 257 From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,
 258 Starr interpos'd, however small he sees,
 259 Not unconform to other shining Globes,
 260 Earth and the Gard'n of God, with Cedars crown'd
 261 Above all Hills. *As when by night the Glass*
 262 *Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes*
 263 *Imagind Lands and Regions in the Moon:*
 264 *Or Pilot from amidst the Cyclades*
 265 *Delos or Samos first appeering kenns*
 266 *A cloudy spot.* Down thither prone in flight
 267 He speeds, and through the vast Ethereal Skie
 268 Sailes between worlds and worlds, with steddie wing
 269 *Now on the polar windes, then with quick Fann*
 270 *Winnows the buxom Air; till within soare*
 271 *Of Towing Eagles, to all the Fowles he seems*
 272 *A Phoenix, gaz'd by all, as that sole Bird*
 273 *When to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's*
 274 *Bright Temple, to Ægyptian Theb's he flies.*
 275 At once on th' Eastern cliff of Paradise
 276 He lights, and to his proper shape returns
 277 A Seraph wingd; six wings he wore, to shade

278 His lineaments Divine; the pair that clad
 279 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o're his brest
 280 With regal Ornament; the middle pair
 281 Girt like a Starrie Zone his waste, and round
 282 Skirted his loines and thighes with downie Gold
 283 And colours dipt in Heav'n; the third his feet
 284 Shaddowd from either heele with featherd maile
 285 Skie-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood,
 286 And shook his Plumes, that Heav'nly fragrance filld
 287 The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the Bands
 288 Of Angels under watch; and to his state,
 289 And to his message high in honour rise;
 290 For on som message high they guessd him bound.
 291 Thir glittering Tents he passd, and now is come
 292 Into the blissful field, through Groves of Myrrhe,
 293 And flouing Odours, Cassia, Nard, and Balme;
 294 A Wilderness of sweets; for Nature here
 295 Wantond as in her prime, and plaid at will
 296 Her Virgin Fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 297 Wilde above Rule or Art; enormous bliss.
 298 Him through the spicie Forrest onward com
 299 Adam discern'd, as in the dore he sat
 300 Of his coole Bowre, while now the mounted Sun
 301 Shot down direct his servid Raies to warme
 302 Earths inmost womb, more warmth then Adam needs;
 303 And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd
 304 For dinner savourie fruits, of taste to please
 305 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst
 306 Of nectarous draughts between, from milkie stream,
 307 Berrie or Grape: to whom thus Adam call'd.

308 Haste hither Eve, and worth thy sight behold
 309 Eastward among those Trees, what glorious shape
 310 Comes this way moving; seems another Morn
 311 Ris'n on mid-noon; som great behest from Heav'n
 312 To us perhaps he brings, and will voutsafe
 313 This day to be our Guest. But goe with speed,
 314 And what thy stores contain, bring forth **and poure**
 315 **Abundance, fit to honour and receive**
 316 **Our Heav'nly stranger; well we may afford**
 317 **Our givers thir own gifts, and large bestow**
 318 **From large bestowd, where Nature multiplies**
 319 **Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows**
 320 **More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.**

321 To whom thus Eve. Adam, earths hallowd mould,
 322 Of God inspir'd, **small store will serve, where store,**
 323 **All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;**
 324 **Save what by frugal storing firmness gains**

325 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes:
326 But I will haste and from each bough and break,
327 Each Plant and juciest Gourd will pluck such choice
328 To entertain our Angel guest, as hee
329 Beholding shall confess that here on Earth
330 God hath dispenst his bounties as in Heav'n.

331 So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
332 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent
333 What choice to chuse for delicacie best,
334 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix
335 Tastes, not well joynd, inelegant, but bring
336 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change,
337 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
338 Whatever Earth all-bearing Mother yields
339 In India East or West, or middle shoare
340 In Pontus or the Punic Coast, or where
341 Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kindes, in coate,
342 Rough, or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell
343 She gathers, Tribute large, and on the board
344 Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the Grape
345 She crushes, inoffensive moust, and meathes
346 From many a berrie, and from sweet kernels prest
347 She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold
348 Wants her fit vessels pure, then strews the ground
349 With Rose and Odours from the shrub unfum'd.

350 Mean while our Primitive great Sire, to meet
351 His god-like Guest, walks forth, without more train
352 Accompani'd then with his own compleat
353 Perfections, in himself was all his state,
354 More solemn then the tedious pomp that waits
355 On Princes, when thir rich Retinue long
356 Of Horses led, and Grooms besmeard with Gold
357 Dazles the croud, and sets them all agape.

358 Neerer his presence Adam though not awd,
359 Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,
360 As to a superior Nature, bowing low,
361 Thus said. Native of Heav'n, for other place
362 None can then Heav'n such glorious shape contain;
363 Since by descending from the Thrones above,
364 Those happie places thou hast deign'd a while
365 To want, and honour these, voutsafe with us
366 Two onely, who yet by sov'ran gift possess
367 This spacious ground, in yonder shadie Bowre
368 To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears
369 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
370 Be over, and the Sun more coole decline.

371 Whom thus the Angelic Vertue answerd milde.

372 Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
373 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
374 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav'n
375 To visit thee; lead on then where thy Bowre
376 Oreshades; for these mid-hours, till Eevning rise
377 I have at will. So to the Silvan Lodge
378 They came, that like Pomona's Arbour smil'd
379 With flourets deck't and fragrant smells; but Eve
380 Undeckt, save with her self more lovely fair
381 Then Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd
382 Of three that in Mount Ida naked strove,
383 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n; no vaile
384 Shee needed, Vertue-proof, no thought infirme
385 Alterd her cheek. On whom the Angel Haile
386 Bestowd, the holy salutation us'd
387 Long after to blest Marie, second Eve.

388 Haile Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful Womb
389 Shall fill the World more numerous with thy Sons
390 Then with these various fruits the Trees of God
391 Have heap'd this Table. Rais'd of grassie terf
392 Thir Table was, and mossie seats had round,
393 And on her ample Square from side to side
394 All Autumn pil'd, though Spring and Autumn here
395 Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold;
396 No fear lest Dinner coole; when thus began
397 Our Authour. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
398 These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom
399 All perfet good unmeasur'd out, descends,
400 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd
401 The Earth to yield; unsavourie food perhaps
402 To spiritual Natures; only this I know,
403 That one Celestial Father gives to all.

404 To whom the Angel. Therefore what he gives
405 (Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part
406 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found
407 No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure
408 Intelligential substances require
409 As doth your Rational; and both contain
410 Within them every lower facultie
411 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,
412 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,
413 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
414 For know, whatever was created, needs
415 To be sustaind and fed; of Elements
416 The grosser feeds the purer, Earth the Sea,
417 Earth and the Sea feed Air, the Air those Fires
418 Ethereal, and as lowest first the Moon;

419 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd
420 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd.
421 Nor doth the Moon no nourishment exhale
422 From her moist Continent to higher Orbes.
423 The Sun that light imparts to all, receives
424 From all his alimantal recompence
425 In humid exhalations, and at Even
426 **Sups with the Ocean:** though in Heav'n the Trees
427 Of life ambrosial frutage bear, and vines
428 Yield Nectar, though from off the boughs each Morn
429 We brush mellifluous Dewes, and find the ground
430 Cover'd with pearly grain: yet God hath here
431 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
432 As may compare with Heaven; **and to taste**
433 **Think not I shall be nice.** So down they sat,
434 And to thir viands fell, **nor seemingly**
435 **The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss**
436 **Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch**
437 **Of real hunger, and concoctive heate**
438 **To transubstantiate; what redounds, transpires**
439 **Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire**
440 **Of sooty coal the Empiric Alchemist**
441 **Can turn, or holds it possible to turn**
442 **Metals of drossiest Ore to perfet Gold**
443 **As from the Mine.** Mean while at Table Eve
444 Ministerd naked, and thir flowing cups
445 With pleasant liquors crown'd: O innocence
446 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,
447 Then had the Sons of God excuse to have bin
448 Enamour'd at that sight, but in those hearts
449 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
450 Was understood, the injur'd Lovers Hell.

451 Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,
452 Not burd'nd Nature, sudden mind arose
453 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass
454 Given him by this great Conference to know
455 Of things above his World, and of thir being
456 Who dwell in Heav'n, **whose excellence he saw**
457 **Transcend his own so farr, whose radiant forms**
458 **Divine effulgence, whose high Power so far**
459 **Exceeded human,** and his wary speech
460 Thus to th' Empyreal Minister he fram'd.

461 Inhabitant with God, now know I well
462 Thy favour, in this honour done to man,
463 Under whose lowly roof thou hast voutsaf't
464 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,
465 **Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,**

466 As that more willingly thou couldst not seem
467 At Heav'ns high feasts to have fed: yet what compare?

468 To whom the winged Hierarch repli'd.
469 O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom
470 All things proceed, and up to him return,
471 If not deprav'd from good, created all
472 Such to perfection, one first matter all,
473 Indu'd with various forms, various degrees
474 Of substance, and in things that live, of life;
475 But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure,
476 As neerer to him plac't or neerer tending
477 Each in thir several active Sphears assignd,
478 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds
479 Proportiond to each kind. So from the root
480 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
481 More aerie, last the bright consummate floure
482 Spirits odorous breathes: flours and thir fruit
483 Mans nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd
484 To vital Spirits aspire, to animal,
485 To intellectual, give both life and sense,
486 Fansie and understanding, whence the Soule
487 Reason receives, and reason is her being,
488 Discursive, or Intuitive; discourse
489 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
490 Differing but in degree, of kind the same.
491 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
492 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
493 To proper substance, time may come when men
494 With Angels may participate, and find
495 No inconvenient Diet, nor too light Fare:
496 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
497 Your bodies may at last turn all to Spirit,
498 Improv'd by tract of time, and wingd ascend
499 Ethereal, as wee, or may at choice
500 Here or in Heav'nly Paradises dwell;
501 If ye be found obedient, and retain
502 Unalterably firm his love entire
503 Whose progenie you are. Mean while enjoy
504 Your fill what happiness this happie state
505 Can comprehend, incapable of more.

506 To whom the Patriarch of mankind repli'd,
507 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
508 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
509 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set
510 From center to circumference, whereon
511 In contemplation of created things
512 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,

513 What meant that caution joind, if ye be found
514 Obedient? can we want obedience then
515 To him, or possibly his love desert
516 Who formd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
517 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
518 Human desires can seek or apprehend?

519 To whom the Angel. Son of Heav'n and Earth,
520 Attend: That thou art happie, owe to God;
521 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,
522 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.
523 This was that caution giv'n thee; be advis'd.
524 God made thee perfet, not immutable;
525 And good he made thee, but to persevere
526 He left it in thy power, ordaind thy will
527 By nature free, not over-rul'd by Fate
528 Inextricable, or strict necessity;
529 Our voluntarie service he requires,
530 Not our necessitated, such with him
531 Findes no acceptance, nor can find, for how
532 Can hearts, not free, be tri'd whether they serve
533 Willing or no, who will but what they must
534 **By Destinie, and can no other choose?**
535 My self and all th' Angelic Host that stand
536 In sight of God enthron'd, our happie state
537 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
538 On other surety none; freely we serve,
539 Because wee freely love, as in our will
540 To love or not; in this we stand or fall:
541 And som are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
542 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell; O fall
543 From what high state of bliss into what woe!

544 To whom our great Progenitor. Thy words
545 Attentive, and with more delighted eare,
546 Divine instructor, I have heard, then when
547 Cherubic Songs by night from neighbouring Hills
548 Aereal Music send: nor knew I not
549 To be both will and deed created free;
550 Yet that we never shall forget to love
551 Our maker, and obey him whose command
552 Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts
553 Assur'd me, and still assure: though what thou tellst
554 Hath past in Heav'n, som doubt within me move,
555 But more desire to hear, if thou consent,
556 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
557 Worthy of Sacred silence to be heard;
558 And we have yet large day, for scarce the Sun
559 Hath finisht half his journey, and scarce begins

560 His other half in the great Zone of Heav'n.
561 Thus Adam made request, and Raphael
562 After short pause assenting, thus began.
563 High matter thou injoinst me, O prime of men,
564 Sad task and hard, for how shall I relate
565 To human sense th' invisible exploits
566 Of warring Spirits; how without remorse
567 The ruin of so many glorious once
568 And perfet while they stood; how last unfould
569 The secrets of another world, perhaps
570 Not lawful to reveal? yet for thy good
571 This is dispenc't, and what surmounts the reach
572 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
573 By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,
574 As may express them best, though what if Earth
575 Be but the shaddow of Heav'n, and things therein
576 Each to other like, more then on earth is thought?
577 As yet this world was not, and Chaos wilde
578 Reignd where these Heav'ns now rowl, where Earth now
rests
579 Upon her Center pois'd, when on a day
580 (For time, though in Eternitie, appli'd
581 To motion, measures all things durable
582 By present, past, and future) on such day
583 As Heav'ns great Year brings forth, th' Emphyreal Host
584 Of Angels by Imperial summons call'd,
585 Innumerable before th' Almightyes Throne
586 Forthwith from all the ends of Heav'n appeerd
587 Under thir Hierarchs in orders bright
588 Ten thousand thousand Ensignes high advanc'd,
589 **Standards, and Gonfalons twixt Van and Reare**
590 Streame in the Aire, and for distinction serve
591 Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees;
592 Or in thir glittering Tissues bear imblaz'd
593 Holy Memorials, acts of Zeale and Love
594 Recorded eminent. Thus when in Orbes
595 Of circuit inexpressible they stood,
596 Orb within Orb, the Father infinite,
597 By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,
598 Amidst as from a flaming Mount, whose top
599 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.
600 Hear all ye Angels, Progenie of Light,
601 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,
602 Hear my Decree, which unrevok't shall stand.
603 This day **I have begot whom I declare**

604 My onely Son, and on this holy Hill
605 Him have anointed, **whom ye now behold**
606 **At my right hand;** your Head I him appoint;
607 And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow
608 All knees in Heav'n, and shall confess him Lord:
609 **Under his great Vice-gerent Reign abide**
610 **United as one individual Soule**
611 **For ever happie: him who disobeyes**
612 **Mee disobeyes, breaks union, and that day**
613 **Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls**
614 **Into utter darkness, deep ingulft, his place**
615 **Ordaind without redemption, without end.**

616 So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words
617 All seemd well pleas'd, all seem'd, but were not all
618 That day, as other solemn dayes, they spent
619 In song and dance about the sacred Hill,
620 **Mystical dance, which yonder starrie Spheare**
621 **Of Planets and of fixt in all her Wheelles**
622 **Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,**
623 **Eccentric, intervov'd, yet regular**
624 **Then most, when most irregular they seem,**
625 **And in thir motions harmonie Divine**
626 **So smooths her charming tones, that Gods own ear**
627 **Listens delighted. Eevning now approach'd**
628 **(For wee have also our Eevning and our Morn,**
629 **Wee ours for change delectable, not need)**
630 **Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn**
631 **Desirous; all in Circles as they stood,**
632 **Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd**
633 **With Angels Food, and rubied Nectar flows**
634 **In Pearl, in Diamond, and massie Gold,**
635 **Fruit of delicious Vines, the growth of Heav'n.**
636 **On flours repos'd, and with fresh flourets crownd,**
637 **They eate, they drink, and in communion sweet**
638 **Quaff immortalitie and joy, secure**
639 **Of surfet where full measure onely bounds**
640 **Excess, before th' all bounteous King, who showrd**
641 **With copious hand, rejoycing in thir joy.**

642 Now when ambrosial Night with Clouds exhal'd
643 From that high mount of God, whence light & shade
644 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had changd
645 To grateful Twilight (for Night comes not there
646 In darker veile) and roseat Dews dispos'd
647 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest,
648 Wide over all the Plain, and wider farr
649 Then all this globous Earth in Plain out spred,
650 (Such are the Courts of God) Th' Angelic throng

651 Disperst in Bands and Files thir Camp extend
 652 By living Streams among the Trees of Life,
 653 Pavilions numberless, and sudden reard,
 654 Celestial Tabernacles, where they slept
 655 Fannd with coole Winds, save those who in thir course
 656 Melodious Hymns about the sovran Throne
 657 Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd
 658 Satan, so call him now, his former name
 659 Is heard no more in Heav'n; he of the first,
 660 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in Power,
 661 In favour and præeminence, yet fraught
 662 With envie against the Son of God, **that day**
 663 **Honour by his great Father, and proclaimd**
 664 **Messiah King anointed, could not beare**
 665 **Through pride that sight, & thought himself impaird.**
 666 **Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,**
 667 Soon as midnight brought on the duskie houre
 668 **Friendliest to sleep and silence, he** resolv'd
 669 With all his Legions to dislodge, and leave
 670 Unworshipt, unobey'd the Throne supream
 671 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
 672 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

 673 Sleepst thou Companion dear, what sleep can close
 674 Thy eye-lids? and remembrest what Decree
 675 Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips
 676 Of Heav'ns Almightye. **Thou to me thy thoughts**
 677 **Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;**
 678 **Both waking we were one; how then can now**
 679 **Thy sleep dissent? new Laws thou seest impos'd;**
 680 **New Laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise**
 681 **In us who serve, new Counsels, to debate**
 682 **What doubtful may ensue, more in this place**
 683 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou
 684 Of all those Myriads which we lead the chief;
 685 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim Night
 686 Her shadowie Cloud withdraws, I am to haste,
 687 And all who under me thir Banners wave,
 688 Homeward with flying march where we possess
 689 The Quarters of the North, there to prepare
 690 Fit entertainment to receive our King
 691 The great Messiah, and his new commands,
 692 Who speedily through all the Hierarchies
 693 Intends to pass triumphant, and give Laws.

 694 So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd
 695 Bad influence into th' unwarie brest
 696 Of his Associate; hee together calls,
 697 Or several one by one, the Regent Powers,

698 Under him Regent, tells, as he was taught,
 699 That the most High commanding, now ere Night,
 700 Now ere dim Night had disincumberd Heav'n,
 701 The great Hierarchal Standard was to move;
 702 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
 703 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound
 704 Or taint integritie; but all obey'd
 705 The wonted signal, and superior voice
 706 Of thir great Potentate; for great indeed
 707 His name, and high was his degree in Heav'n;
 708 His count'nance, as the Morning Starr that guides
 709 The starrie flock, allur'd them, and with lyes
 710 Drew after him the third part of Heav'ns Host:
 711 Mean while th' Eternal eye, whose sight discernes
 712 *Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy Mount*
 713 *And from within the golden Lamps that burne*
 714 *Nightly before him, saw without thir light*
 715 *Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread*
 716 Among the sons of Morn, what multitudes
 717 Were banded to oppose his high Decree;
 718 And smiling to his onely Son thus said.

719 Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
 720 In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,
 721 Neerly it now concernes us to be sure
 722 Of our Omnipotence, *and with what Arms*
 723 *We mean to hold what anciently we claim*
 724 *Of Deitie or Empire, such a foe*
 725 Is rising, who intends to erect his Throne
 726 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North;
 727 *Nor so content, hath in his thought to try*
 728 *In battel, what our Power is, or our right.*
 729 *Let us advise, and to this hazard draw*
 730 *With speed what force is left, and all imploy*
 731 *In our defence, lest unawares we lose*
 732 *This our high place, our Sanctuarie, our Hill.*

733 To whom the Son with calm aspect and cleer
 734 Light'ning Divine, ineffable, serene,
 735 Made answer. Mightie Father, thou thy foes
 736 Justly hast in derision, and secure
 737 Laugh'st at thir vain designes and tumults vain,
 738 *Matter to mee of Glory, whom thir hate*
 739 *Illustrates, when they see all Regal Power*
 740 *Giv'n me to quell thir pride, and in event*
 741 *Know whether I be dextrous to subdue*
 742 *Thy Rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.*

743 So spake the Son, but Satan with his Powers

744 Far was advanc't on winged speed, an Host
 745 Innumerable as the Starrs of Night,
 746 Or Starrs of Morning, Dew-drops, which the Sun
 747 Impearls on every leaf and every flouer.
 748 Regions they pass'd, the mightie Regencies
 749 Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones
 750 In thir triple Degrees, Regions to which
 751 All thy Dominion, Adam, is no more
 752 Then what this Garden is to all the Earth,
 753 And all the Sea, from one entire globose
 754 Stretcht into Longitude; which having pass'd
 755 At length into the limits of the North
 756 They came, and Satan to his Royal seat
 757 High on a Hill, far blazing, as a Mount
 758 Rais'd on a Mount, with Pyramids and Towrs
 759 From Diamond Quarries hew'n, and Rocks of Gold,
 760 The Palace of great Lucifer, (so call
 761 That Structure in the Dialect of men
 762 Interpreted) **which not long after, he**
 763 **Affecting all equality with God,**
 764 **In imitation of that Mount whereon**
 765 **Messiah was declar'd in sight of Heav'n,**
 766 **The Mountain of the Congregation call'd;**
 767 **For thither he assembl'd all his Train,**
 768 **Pretending so commanded to consult**
 769 **About the great reception of thir King,**
 770 **Thither to come,** and with calumnious Art
 771 Of counterfeted truth thus held thir ears.

 772 Thrones, Dominations, Prinedomes, Vertues, Powers,
 773 If these magnific Titles yet remain
 774 Not meerly titular, since by Decree
 775 Another now hath to himself ingross't
 776 All Power, and us eclipst under the name
 777 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
 778 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,
 779 This onely to consult how we may best
 780 With what may be devis'd of honours new
 781 Receive him coming to receive from us
 782 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,
 783 **Too much to one, but double how endur'd,**
 784 **To one and to his image now proclaim'd?**
 785 But what if better counsels might erect
 786 Our minds and teach us to cast off this Yoke?
 787 Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend
 788 The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust
 789 To know ye right, or if ye know your selves
 790 Natives and Sons of Heav'n possest before
 791 By none, **and if not equal all, yet free,**

792 Equally free; for Orders and Degrees
793 Jarr not with liberty, but well consist.
794 Who can in reason then or right assume
795 Monarchie over such as live by right
796 His equals, if in power and splendor less,
797 In freedome equal? or can introduce
798 Law and Edict on us, who without law
799 Erre not, much less for this to be our Lord,
800 And look for adoration to th' abuse
801 Of those Imperial Titles which assert
802 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve?

803 Thus farr his bold discourse without controule
804 Had audience, when among the Seraphim
805 Abdiel, then whom none with more zeale ador'd
806 The Deitie, and divine commands obeid,
807 Stood up, and in a flame of zeale severe
808 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

809 O argument blasphemous, false and proud!
810 Words which no eare ever to hear in Heav'n
811 Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate
812 In place thy self so high above thy Peeres.
813 Canst thou with impious obloquie condemne
814 The just Decree of God, pronounc't and sworn,
815 That to his only Son by right endu'd
816 With Regal Scepter, every Soule in Heav'n
817 Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
818 Confess him rightful King? unjust thou saist
819 Flatly unjust, to binde with Laws the free,
820 And equal over equals to let Reigne,
821 One over all with unsucceeded power.
822 Shalt thou give Law to God, shalt thou dispute
823 With him the points of libertie, who made
824 Thee what thou art, and formd the Pow'rs of Heav'n
825 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd thir being?
826 Yet by experience taught we know how good,
827 And of our good, and of our dignitie
828 How provident he is, how farr from thought
829 To make us less, bent rather to exalt
830 Our happie state under one Head more neer
831 United. But to grant it thee unjust,
832 That equal over equals Monarch Reigne:
833 Thy self though great and glorious dost thou count,
834 Or all Angelic Nature joind in one,
835 Equal to him begotten Son, by whom
836 As by his Word the mighty Father made
837 All things, ev'n thee, and all the Spirits of Heav'n
838 By him created in thir bright degrees,

839 Crownd them with Glory, and to thir Glory nam'd
 840 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,
 841 Essential Powers, **nor by his Reign obscur'd,**
 842 **But more illustrious made, since he the Head**
 843 **One of our number thus reduc't becomes,**
 844 **His Laws our Laws; all honour to him done**
 845 **Returns our own.** Cease then this impious rage,
 846 And tempt not these; but hast'n to appease
 847 Th' incensed Father, and th' incensed Son,
 848 While Pardon may be found in time besought.

849 So spake the fervent Angel, but his zeale
 850 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,
 851 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
 852 Th' Apostat, and more haughty thus repli'd.
 853 That we were formd then saist thou? **and the work**
 854 **Of secundarie hands, by task transferd**
 855 **From Father to his Son?** strange point and new!
 856 Doctrin which we would know whence learnt: who saw
 857 When this creation was? rememberst thou
 858 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 859 We know no time when we were not as now;
 860 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd
 861 By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course
 862 Had circl'd his full Orbe, the birth mature
 863 Of this our native Heav'n, Ethereal Sons.
 864 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand
 865 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try
 866 Who is our equal: **then thou shalt behold**
 867 **Whether by supplication we intend**
 868 **Address, and to begirt th' Almighty Throne**
 869 **Beseeching or besieging.** This report,
 870 These tidings carrie to th' anointed King;
 871 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.
 872 He said, and as the sound of waters deep
 873 Hoarce murmur echo'd to his words applause
 874 Through the infinite Host, nor less for that
 875 The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone
 876 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answerd bold.

877 O alienate from God, O spirit accurst,
 878 Forsak'n of all good; I see thy fall
 879 Determind, and thy hapless crew involv'd
 880 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread
 881 Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth
 882 No more be troubl'd how to quit the yoke
 883 Of Gods Messiah; those indulgent Laws
 884 Will not be now voutsaf't, other Decrees
 885 Against thee are gon forth without recall;

886 That Golden Scepter which thou didst reject
887 Is now an Iron Rod to bruise and breake
888 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise,
889 Yet not for thy advise or threats I fly
890 These wicked Tents devoted, least the wrauth
891 Impendent, raging into sudden flame
892 Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel
893 His Thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
894 Then who created thee lamenting learne,
895 When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.

896 So spake the Seraph Abdiel faithful found,
897 Among the faithless, faithful only hee;
898 Among innumerable false, unmov'd,
899 Unshak'n, uneduc'd, untterrifi'd
900 His Loyaltie he kept, his Love, his Zeale;
901 Nor number, nor example with him wrought
902 To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind
903 Though single. From amidst them forth he passd,
904 Long way through hostile scorn, which he susteind
905 Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught;
906 And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd
907 On those proud Towrs to swift destruction doom'd.

BOOK VI.

1 All night the dreadless Angel unpursu'd
2 Through Heav'ns wide Champaign held his way, till Morn,
3 Wak't by the circling Hours, with rosie hand
4 Unbarr'd the gates of Light. There is a Cave
5 Within the Mount of God, fast by his Throne,
6 Where light and darkness in perpetual round
7 Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heav'n
8 Grateful vicissitude, like Day and Night;
9 Light issues forth, and at the other dore
10 Obsequious darkness enters, till her houre
11 To veile the Heav'n, though darkness there might well
12 Seem twilight here; and now went forth the Morn
13 Such as in highest Heav'n, **arrayd in Gold**
14 **Empyrean, from before her vanisht Night,**
15 **Shot through with orient Beams:** when all the Plain
16 Coverd with thick embatteld Squadrons bright,
17 Chariots and flaming Armes, **and fierie Steeds**
18 **Reflecting blaze on blaze,** first met his view:
19 Warr he perceav'd, warr in procinct, and found
20 Already known what he for news had thought
21 To have reported: gladly then he mixt
22 Among those friendly Powers who him receav'd

23 With joy and acclamations loud, that one
24 That of so many Myriads fall'n, yet one
25 Returnd not lost: On to the sacred hill
26 They led him high applauded, and present
27 Before the seat supream; from whence a voice
28 From midst a Golden Cloud thus milde was heard.

29 Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought
30 The better fight, who single hast maintaind
31 Against revolted multitudes the Cause
32 Of Truth, in word mightier then they in Armes;
33 And for the testimonie of Truth hast born
34 Universal reproach, far worse to beare
35 Then violence: for this was all thy care
36 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though Worlds
37 Judg'd thee perverse: the easier conquest now
38 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,
39 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
40 Then scornd thou didst depart, and to subdue
41 By force, who reason for thir Law refuse,
42 **Right reason for thir Law, and for thir King**
43 **Messiah, who by right of merit Reigns.**
44 Go Michael of Celestial Armies Prince,
45 And thou in Military prowess next
46 Gabriel, lead forth to Battel these my Sons
47 Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints
48 By Thousands and by Millions rang'd for fight;
49 Equal in number to that Godless crew
50 Rebellious, them with Fire and hostile Arms
51 Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heav'n
52 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,
53 Into thir place of punishment, the Gulf
54 Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
55 His fiery Chaos to receive thir fall.

56 So spake the Sovran voice, and Clouds began
57 To darken all the Hill, and smoak to rowl
58 In duskie wreathes, reluctant flames, the signe
59 Of wrauth awak't: nor with less dread the loud
60 Ethereal Trumpet from on high gan blow:
61 At which command the Powers Militant,
62 That stood for Heav'n, in mighty Quadrate joyn'd
63 Of Union irresistible, mov'd on
64 In silence thir bright Legions, to the sound
65 Of instrumental Harmonie that breath'd
66 Heroic Ardor to advent'rous deeds
67 Under thir God-like Leaders, in the Cause
68 Of God and his Messiah. On they move
69 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious Hill,

70 Nor streit'ning Vale, nor Wood, nor Stream divides
71 Thir perfet ranks; for high above the ground
72 Thir march was, and the passive Air upbore
73 Thir nimble tread, as when the total kind
74 Of Birds in orderly array on wing
75 Came summond over Eden to receive
76 Thir names of thee; so over many a tract
77 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a Province wide
78 Tenfold the length of this terrene: at last
79 Farr in th' Horizon to the North appeer'd
80 From skirt to skirt a fierie Region, stretcht
81 In battailous aspect, and neerer view
82 Bristl'd with upright beams innumerable
83 Of rigid Spears, and Helmets throng'd, and Shields
84 Various, with boastful Argument portraid,
85 The banded Powers of Satan hasting on
86 With furious expedition; for they weend
87 That self same day by fight, or by surprize
88 To win the Mount of God, and on his Throne
89 To set the envier of his State, the proud
90 Aspirer, but thir thoughts prov'd fond and vain
91 In the mid way: though strange to us it seemd
92 At first, that Angel should with Angel warr,
93 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
94 So oft in Festivals of joy and love
95 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire
96 Hymning th' Eternal Father: but the shout
97 Of Battel now began, and rushing sound
98 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
99 High in the midst exalted as a God
100 Th' Apostat in his Sun-bright Chariot sate
101 Idol of Majestie Divine, enclos'd
102 With Flaming Cherubim, and golden Shields;
103 Then lighted from his gorgeous Throne, for now
104 'Twixt Host and Host but narrow space was left,
105 A dreadful intervall, and Front to Front
106 Presented stood in terrible array
107 Of hideous length: before the cloudie Van,
108 On the rough edge of battel ere it joyn'd,
109 Satan with vast and haughtie strides advanc't,
110 Came trowning, armd in Adamant and Gold;
111 Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood
112 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
113 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

114 O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest
115 Should yet remain, where faith and realtie
116 Remain not; wherfore shou'd not strength and might
117 There fail where Vertue fails, or weakest prove

118 Where boldest; though to sight unconquerable?
119 His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aide,
120 I mean to try, whose Reason I have tri'd
121 Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,
122 That he who in debate of Truth hath won,
123 Should win in Arms, in both disputes alike
124 Victor; though brutish that contest and foule,
125 When Reason hath to deal with force, yet so
126 Most reason is that Reason overcome.

127 So pondering, and from his armed Peers
128 Forth stepping opposite, half way he met
129 His daring foe, at this prevention more
130 Incens't, and thus securely him defi'd.

131 Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reacht
132 The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
133 The Throne of God unguarded, and his side
134 Abandon'd at the terror of thy Power
135 Or potent tongue; fool, not to think how vain
136 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in Arms;
137 Who out of smallest things could without end
138 Have rais'd incessant Armies to defeat
139 Thy folly; or with solitarie hand
140 Reaching beyond all limit at one blow
141 Unaided could have finish't thee, and whelmd
142 Thy Legions under darkness; but thou seest
143 All are not of thy Train; there be who Faith
144 Prefer, and Pietie to God, though then
145 To thee not visible, when I alone
146 Seemd in thy World erroneous to dissent
147 From all: my Sect thou seest, now learn too late
148 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

149 Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance
150 Thus answerd. Ill for thee, but in wisht houre
151 Of my revenge, first sought for thou returnst
152 From flight, seditious Angel, to receive
153 Thy merited reward, the first assay
154 Of this right hand provok't, since first that tongue
155 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose
156 A third part of the Gods, in Synod met
157 Thir Deities to assert, who while they feel
158 Vigour Divine within them, can allow
159 Omnipotence to none. But well thou comst
160 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win
161 From me som Plume, that thy success may show
162 Destruction to the rest: this pause between
163 (Unanswerd least thou boast) to let thee know;

164 At first I thought that Libertie and Heav'n
165 To heav'nly Soules had bin all one; but now
166 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
167 Ministring Spirits, traird up in Feast and Song;
168 Such hast thou arm'd, the Minstrelsie of Heav'n,
169 Servilitie with freedom to contend,
170 As both thir deeds compar'd this day shall prove.

171 To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern repli'd.
172 Apostat, still thou errst, nor end wilt find
173 Of erring, from the path of truth remote:
174 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name
175 Of Servitude to serve whom God ordains,
176 Or Nature; God and Nature bid the same,
177 When he who rules is worthiest, and excells
178 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
179 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebelld
180 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,
181 Thy self not free, but to thy self enthrall'd;
182 Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.
183 Reign thou in Hell thy Kingdom, let mee serve
184 In Heav'n God ever blest, and his Divine
185 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd,
186 Yet Chains in Hell, not Realms expect: mean while
187 From mee returnd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
188 This greeting on thy impious Crest receive.

189 So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
190 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell
191 On the proud Crest of Satan, that no sight,
192 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his Shield
193 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
194 He back recoild; the tenth on bended knee
195 His massie Spear upstaid; as if on Earth
196 Winds under ground or waters forcing way
197 Sidelong, had push't a Mountain from his seat
198 Half sunk with all his Pines. Amazement seis'd
199 The Rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see
200 Thus foil'd thir mightiest, ours joy filld, and shout,
201 Presage of Victorie and fierce desire
202 Of Battel: whereat Michael bid sound
203 Th' Arch-Angel trumpet; through the vast of Heaven
204 It sounded, and the faithful Armies rung
205 Hosanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze
206 The adverse Legions, nor less hideous joyn'd
207 The horrid shock: now storming furie rose,
208 And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now
209 Was never, Arms on Armour clashing bray'd
210 Horrible discord, and the madding Wheelles

211 Of brazen Chariots rag'd; dire was the noise
212 Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss
213 Of fiery Darts in flaming volies flew,
214 And flying vaulted either Host with fire.
215 So under fierie Cope together rush'd
216 Both Battels maine, with ruinous assault
217 And inextinguishable rage; all Heav'n
218 Resounded, and had Earth bin then, all Earth
219 Had to her Center shook. What wonder? when
220 Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought
221 On either side, the least of whom could weild
222 These Elements, and arm him with the force
223 Of all thir Regions: how much more of Power
224 Armie against Armie numberless to raise
225 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,
226 Though not destroy, thir happie Native seat;
227 Had not th' Eternal King Omnipotent
228 From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd
229 And limited thir might; though numberd such
230 As each divided Legion might have seemd
231 A numerous Host, in strength each armed hand
232 A Legion, led in fight, yet Leader seemd
233 Each Warriour single as in Chief, expert
234 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
235 Of Battel, open when, and when to close
236 The ridges of grim Warr; no thought of flight,
237 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
238 That argu'd fear; each on himself reli'd,
239 As onely in his arm the moment lay
240 Of victorie; deeds of eternal fame
241 Were don, but infinite: for wide was spred
242 That Warr and various; sometimes on firm ground
243 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
244 Tormented all the Air; all Air seemd then
245 Conflicting Fire: long time in eeven scale
246 The Battel hung; till Satan, who that day
247 Prodigious power had shewn, **and met in Armes**
248 **No equal, raunging through the dire attack**
249 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length
250 Saw where the Sword of Michael smote, and fell'd
251 Squadrons at once, with huge two-handed sway
252 Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came down
253 Wide wasting; such destruction to withstand
254 He hasted, and oppos'd the rockie Orb
255 Of tenfold Adamant, his ample Shield
256 A vast circumference: At his approach
257 The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toile
258 Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end
259 Intestine War in Heav'n, the arch foe subdu'd

260 Or Captive drag'd in Chains, with hostile frown
261 And visage all enflam'd first thus began.

262 Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
263 Unnam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest
264 These Acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
265 Though heaviest by just measure on thy self
266 And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd
267 Heav'ns blessed peace, and into Nature brought
268 Miserie, uncreated till the crime
269 Of thy Rebellion? how hast thou instill'd
270 Thy malice into thousands, once upright
271 And faithful, now prov'd false. But think not here
272 To trouble Holy Rest; Heav'n casts thee out
273 From all her Confines. Heav'n the seat of bliss
274 Brooks not the works of violence and Warr.
275 Hence then, and evil go with thee along
276 Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,
277 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broiles,
278 Ere this avenging Sword begin thy doome,
279 Or som more sudden vengeance wing'd from God
280 Precipitate thee with augmented paine.

281 So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus
282 The Adversarie. Nor think thou with wind
283 Of airie threats to aw whom yet with deeds
284 Thou canst not. Hast thou turnd the least of these
285 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise
286 Unvanquisht, easier to transact with mee
287 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
288 To chase me hence? erre not that so shall end
289 The strife which thou call'st evil, but wee style
290 The strife of Glorie: which we mean to win,
291 Or turn this Heav'n it self into the Hell
292 Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,
293 If not to reign: mean while thy utmost force,
294 And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,
295 I flie not, but have sought thee farr and nigh.

296 They ended parle, and both addrest for fight
297 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
298 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things
299 Liken on Earth conspicuous, that may lift
300 Human imagination to such highth
301 Of Godlike Power: for likest Gods they seemd,
302 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms
303 Fit to decide the Empire of great Heav'n.
304 Now wav'd thir fierie Swords, and in the Aire
305 Made horrid Circles; two broad Suns thir Shields

306 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood
 307 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd
 308 Where erst was thickest fight, th' Angelic throng,
 309 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 310 Of such commotion, such as to set forth
 311 Great things by small, If Natures concord broke,
 312 Among the Constellations warr were sprung,
 313 Two Planets rushing from aspect maligne
 314 Of fiercest opposition in mid Skie,
 315 Should combat, and thir jarring Sphears confound.
 316 Together both with next to Almighty Arme,
 317 Uplifted imminent one stroke they aim'd
 318 That might determine, and not need repeate,
 319 As not of power, at once; nor odds appeerd
 320 In might or swift prevention; but the sword
 321 Of Michael from the Armorie of God
 322 Was giv'n him temperd so, that neither keen
 323 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 324 The sword of Satan with steep force to smite
 325 Descending, and in half cut sheere, nor staid,
 326 But with swift wheele reverse, deep entring shar'd
 327 All his right side; then Satan first knew pain,
 328 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore
 329 The griding sword with discontinuous wound
 330 Pass'd through him, but th' Ethereal substance clos'd
 331 Not long divisible, and from the gash
 332 A stream of Nectarous humor issuing flow'd
 333 Sanguin, such as Celestial Spirits may bleed,
 334 And all his Armour staid ere while so bright.
 335 Forthwith on all sides to his aide was run
 336 By Angels many and strong who interpos'd
 337 Defence, while others bore him on thir Shields
 338 Back to his Chariot; where it stood retir'd
 339 From off the files of warr; there they him laid
 340 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame
 341 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
 342 Humbl'd by such rebuke, so farr beneath
 343 His confidence to equal God in power.
 344 Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout
 345 Vital in every part, not as frail man
 346 In Entrailles, Heart or Head, Liver or Reines,
 347 Cannot but by annihilating die;
 348 Nor in thir liquid texture mortal wound
 349 Receive, no more then can the fluid Aire:
 350 All Heart they live, all Head, all Eye, all Eare,
 351 All Intellect, all Sense, and as they please,
 352 They Limb themselves, and colour, shape or size
 353 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

354 Mean while in other parts like deeds deservd
 355 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,
 356 And with fierce Ensignes pierc'd the deep array
 357 Of Moloc furious King who him defi'd,
 358 And at his Chariot wheeles to drag him bound
 359 Threatn'd, nor from the Holie One of Heav'n
 360 Refrein'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon
 361 Down clov'n to the waste, with shatterd Armes
 362 And uncouth paine fled bellowing. On each wing
 363 Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,
 364 Though huge, and in a Rock of Diamond Armd,
 365 Vanquish'd Adramelec, and Asmadai,
 366 Two potent Thrones, that to be less then Gods
 367 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learnd in thir flight,
 368 Mangl'd with gastly wounds through Plate and Maile,
 369 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy
 370 The Atheist crew, but with redoubl'd blow
 371 Ariel and Arioc, and the violence
 372 Of Ramiel scorcht and blasted overthrew.
 373 I might relate of thousands, and thir names
 374 Eternize here on Earth; but those elect
 375 Angels contented with thir fame in Heav'n
 376 Seek not the praise of men: the other sort
 377 In might though wondrous and in Acts of Warr,
 378 Nor of Renown less eager, yet by doome
 379 Canceld from Heav'n and sacred memorie,
 380 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.
 381 For strength from Truth divided and from Just,
 382 Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise
 383 And ignominie, yet to glorie aspires
 384 Vain glorious, and through infamie seeks fame:
 385 Therefore Eternal silence be thir doome.

386 And now thir Mightiest quelld, the battel swerv'd,
 387 With many an inrode gor'd; deformed rout
 388 Enter'd, and foul disorder; all the ground
 389 With shiverd armour strow'n, and on a heap
 390 Chariot and Charioter lay overturnd
 391 And fierie foaming Steeds; what stood, recoyld
 392 Orewearied, through the faint Satanic Host
 393 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,
 394 Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of paine
 395 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought
 396 By sin of disobedience, till that hour
 397 Not liable to fear or flight or paine.
 398 Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints
 399 In Cubic Phalanx firm advanc't entire,
 400 Invulnerable, impenitrably arm'd:
 401 Such high advantages thir innocence

402 Gave them above thir foes, not to have sinnd,
403 Not to have disobei'd; in fight they stood
404 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
405 By wound, though from thir place by violence mov'd.

406 Now Night her course began, and over Heav'n
407 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,
408 And silence on the odious dinn of Warr:
409 Under her Cloudie covert both retir'd,
410 Victor and Vanquisht: on the foughten field
411 Michael and his Angels prevalent
412 Encamping, plac'd in Guard thir Watches round,
413 Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part
414 Satan with his rebellious disappeerd,
415 Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest,
416 His Potentates to Councel call'd by night;
417 And in the midst thus undismai'd began.

418 O now in danger tri'd, now known in Armes
419 Not to be overpowerd, Companions deare,
420 Found worthy not of Libertie alone,
421 Too mean pretense, but what we more affect,
422 Honour, Dominion, Glorie, and renowne,
423 Who have sustaind one day in doubtful fight
424 (And if one day, why not Eternal dayes?)
425 What Heavens Lord had powerfulest to send
426 Against us from about his Throne, and judg'd
427 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,
428 But proves not so: then fallible, it seems,
429 Of future we may deem him, though till now
430 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,
431 Some disadvantage we endur'd and paine,
432 Till now not known, but known as soon contemnd,
433 Since now we find this our Empyrean form
434 Incapable of mortal injurie
435 Imperishable, and though peirc'd with wound,
436 Soon closing and by native vigour heal'd.
437 Of evil then so small as easie think
438 The remedie; perhaps more valid Armes,
439 Weapons more violent, when next we meet,
440 May serve to better us, and worse our foes,
441 Or equal what between us made the odds,
442 In Nature none: if other hidden cause
443 Left them Superiour, while we can preserve
444 Unhurt our mindes, and understanding sound,
445 Due search and consultation will disclose.

446 He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood
447 Nisroc, of Principalities the prime;

448 As one he stood escap't from cruel fight,
449 Sore toild, his riv'n Armes to havoc hewn,
450 And cloudie in aspect thus answering spake.
451 Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free
452 Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard
453 For Gods, and too unequal work we find
454 Against unequal armes to fight in paine,
455 Against unpaid, impassive; from which evil
456 Ruin must needs ensue; for what availes
457 Valour or strength, though matchless, quelld with pain
458 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands
459 Of Mightiest. Sense of pleasure we may well
460 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,
461 **But live content, which is the calmest life:**
462 But pain is perfet miserie, the worst
463 Of evils, and excessive, overturnes
464 All patience. He who therefore can invent
465 With what more forcible we may offend
466 Our yet unwounded Enemies, or arme
467 Our selves with like defence, to me deserves
468 No less then for deliverance what we owe.

469 Whereto with look compos'd Satan repli'd:
470 Not uninvented that, which thou aright
471 Believst so main to our success, I bring;
472 Which of us who beholds the bright surface
473 Of this Ethereous mould whereon we stand,
474 This continent of spacious Heav'n, adornd
475 With Plant, Fruit, Flour Ambrosial, Gemms & Gold,
476 Whose Eye so superficially surveyes:
477 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
478 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
479 Of spiritous and fierie spume, till toucht
480 With Heav'ns ray, and temperd they shoot forth
481 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light.
482 These in thir dark Nativitie the Deep
483 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame,
484 Which into hallow Engins long and round
485 Thick-rammd, at th' other bore with touch of fire
486 Dilated and infuriate shall send forth
487 From far with thundring noise among our foes
488 Such implements of mischief as shall dash
489 To pieces, and orewhelm whatever stands
490 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarmd
491 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
492 Nor long shall be our labour, yet ere dawne,
493 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;
494 Abandon fear; to strength and counsel joind
495 Think nothing hard, much less to be despaird.

496 He ended, and his words thir drooping chere
 497 Enlightn'd, and thir languisht hope reviv'd.
 498 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how hee
 499 To be th' inventer miss'd, so easie it seemd
 500 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought
 501 Impossible: yet haply of thy Race
 502 In future dayes, if Malice should abound,
 503 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 504 With dev'lish machination might devise
 505 Like instrument to plague the Sons of men
 506 For sin, on warr and mutual slaughter bent.
 507 Forthwith from Councel to the work they flew,
 508 None arguing stood, innumerable hands
 509 Were ready, in a moment up they turnd
 510 Wide the Celestial soile, and saw beneath
 511 Th' originals of Nature in thir crude
 512 Conception; Sulphurous and Nitrous Foame
 513 They found, they mingl'd, and with **suttle** Art,
 514 **Concocted and adusted they** reduc'd
 515 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd:
 516 Part hidd'n veins diggd up (nor hath this Earth
 517 Entrails unlike) of Mineral and Stone,
 518 Whereof to found thir Engins and thir Balls
 519 Of missive ruin; part incentive reed
 520 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.
 521 So all ere day-spring, under conscious Night
 522 Secret they finish'd, and in order set,
 523 With silent circumspection unespi'd.
 524 Now when fair Morn Orient in Heav'n appeerd
 525 Up rose the Victor Angels, and to Arms
 526 The matin Trumpet Sung: in Arms they stood
 527 Of Golden Panoplie, refulgent Host,
 528 Soon banded; others from the dawning Hills
 529 Lookd round, and Scouts each Coast light-armed scoure,
 530 Each quarter, to descric the distant foe,
 531 Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,
 532 In motion or in alt: him soon they met
 533 Under spred Ensignes moving nigh, in slow
 534 But firm Battalion; back with speediest Sail
 535 Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,
 536 Came flying, and in mid Aire aloud thus cri'd.

 537 Arme, Warriours, Arme for fight, the foe at hand,
 538 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
 539 This day, fear not his flight; so thick a Cloud
 540 He comes, and settl'd in his face I see
 541 Sad resolution and secure: let each
 542 His Adamantine coat gird well, and each
 543 Fit well his Helme, gripe fast his orb'd Shield,

544 Born eevn or high, for this day will pour down,
545 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling showr,
546 But ratling storm of Arrows barbd with fire.
547 So warnd he them aware themselves, and soon
548 In order, quit of all impediment;
549 Instant without disturb they took Allarm,
550 And onward move Embattelld; when behold
551 Not distant far with heavie pace the Foe
552 Approaching gross and huge; in hollow Cube
553 Training his devilish Enginrie, impal'd
554 On every side with shadding Squadrons Deep,
555 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood
556 A while, but suddenly at head appeerd
557 Satan: And thus was heard Commanding loud.

558 Vanguard, to Right and Left the Front unfould;
559 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
560 Peace and composure, and with open brest
561 Stand readie to receive them, if they like
562 Our overture, and turn not back perverse;
563 But that I doubt, however witness Heaven,
564 Heav'n witness thou anon, while we discharge
565 Freely our part; yee who appointed stand
566 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
567 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.

568 So scoffing in ambiguous words he scarce,
569 Had ended; when to Right and Left the Front
570 Divided, and to either Flank retir'd.
571 Which to our eyes discoverd new and strange,
572 A triple mounted row of Pillars laid
573 On Wheels (for like to Pillars most they seem'd
574 Or hollow'd bodies made of Oak or Firr
575 With branches lopt, in Wood or Mountain fell'd)
576 Brass, Iron, Stonie mould, had not thir mouthes
577 With hideous orifice gap't on us wide,
578 Portending hollow truce; at each behind
579 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a Reed
580 Stood waving tipt with fire; while we suspense,
581 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,
582 Not long, for sudden all at once thir Reeds
583 Put forth, and to a narrow vent appli'd
584 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,
585 But soon obscur'd with smoak, all Heav'n appeerd,
586 From those deep throated Engins belcht, whose roar
587 Emboweld with outrageous noise the Air,
588 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foule
589 Thir devilish glut, chaind Thunderbolts and Hail
590 Of Iron Globes, which on the Victor Host

591 Level'd, with such impetuous furie smote,
592 That whom they hit, none on thir feet might stand,
593 Though standing else as Rocks, but down they fell
594 By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd;
595 The sooner for thir Arms, unarm'd they might
596 Have easily as Spirits evaded swift
597 By quick contraction or remove; but now
598 Foule dissipation follow'd and forc't rout;
599 Nor serv'd it to relax thir serried files.
600 What should they do? if on they rusht, repulse
601 Repeated, and indecent overthrow
602 Doubl'd, would render them yet more despis'd;
603 And to thir foes a laughter; for in view
604 Stood rankt of Seraphim another row
605 In posture to displode thir second tire
606 Of Thunder: back defeated to return
607 They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld thir plight,
608 And to his Mates thus in derision call'd.

609 O Friends, why come not on these Victors proud?
610 Ere while they fierce were coming, and when wee,
611 To entertain them fair with open Front
612 And Brest, (what could we more?) propounded terms
613 Of composition, strait they chang'd thir minds,
614 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
615 As they would dance, yet for a dance they seemd
616 Somwhat extravagant and wilde, perhaps
617 For joy of offerd peace: but I suppose
618 If our proposals once again were heard
619 We should compel them to a quick result.

620 To whom thus Belial in like gamesom mood,
621 Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,
622 Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,
623 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,
624 And stumbl'd many, who receives them right,
625 Had need from head to foot well understand;
626 Not understood, this gift they have besides,
627 They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

628 So they among themselves in pleasant veine
629 Stood scoffing, highthn'd in thir thoughts beyond
630 All doubt of Victorie, eternal might
631 To match with thir inventions they presum'd
632 So easie, and of his Thunder made a scorn,
633 And all his Host derided, while they stood
634 A while in trouble; but they stood not long,
635 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
636 Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.

637 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power
 638 Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd)
 639 Thir Arms away they threw, and to the Hills
 640 (For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n
 641 Of pleasure situate in Hill and Dale)
 642 Light as the Lightning glimps they ran, they flew,
 643 From thir foundations loosning to and fro
 644 They pluckt the seated Hills with all thir load,
 645 Rocks, Waters, Woods, and by the shaggie tops
 646 Up lifting bore them in thir hands: Amaze,
 647 Be sure, and terrour seis'd the rebel Host,
 648 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 649 The bottom of the Mountains upward turn'd,
 650 Till on those cursed Engins triple-row
 651 They saw them whelm'd, and all thir confidence
 652 Under the weight of Mountains buried deep,
 653 Themselves invaded next, and on thir heads
 654 Main Promontories flung, which in the Air
 655 Came shadowing, and opprest whole Legions arm'd,
 656 Thir armor help'd thir harm, crush't in and bruis'd
 657 Into thir substance pent, which wrought them pain
 658 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
 659 Long strugling underneath, ere they could wind
 660 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,
 661 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 662 The rest in imitation to like Armes
 663 Betook them, and the neighbouring Hills uptore;
 664 So Hills amid the Air encounterd Hills
 665 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,
 666 That under ground, they fought in dismal shade;
 667 Infernal noise; Warr seem'd a civil Game
 668 To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt
 669 Upon confusion rose: and now all Heav'n
 670 Had gon to wrack, with ruin overspred,
 671 Had not th' Almighty Father where he sits
 672 Shrin'd in his Sanctuarie of Heav'n **secure,**
 673 **Consulting on the sum of things,** foreseen
 674 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:
 675 That his great purpose he might so fulfill,
 676 To honour his Anointed Son aveng'd
 677 Upon his enemies, **and to declare**
 678 **All power on him transferr'd:** whence to his Son
 679 Th' Assessor of his Throne he thus began.
 680 Effulgence of my Glorie, Son below'd,
 681 Son in whose face invisible is beheld
 682 Visibly, what by Deitie I am,
 683 And in whose hand what by Decree I doe,
 684 Second Omnipotence, two dayes are past,
 685 Two dayes, as we compute the dayes of Heav'n,

686 Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame
687 These disobedient; sore hath been thir fight,
688 As likeliest was, when two such Foes met arm'd;
689 For to themselves I left them, and thou knowst,
690 Equal in thir Creation they were form'd,
691 Save what sin hath impaird, which yet hath wrought
692 Insensibly, for I suspend thir doom;
693 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
694 Endless, and no solution will be found:
695 Warr wearied hath perform'd what Warr can do,
696 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,
697 With Mountains as with Weapons arm'd, which makes
698 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the maine.
699 Two dayes are therefore past, the third is thine;
700 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus farr
701 Have sufferd, that the Glorie may be thine
702 Of ending this great Warr, since none but Thou
703 Can end it. Into thee such Vertue and Grace
704 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know
705 In Heav'n and Hell thy Power above compare,
706 And this perverse Commotion governd thus,
707 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir
708 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King
709 By Sacred Unction, thy deserved right.
710 Go then thou Mightiest in thy Fathers might,
711 Ascend my Chariot, guide the rapid Wheelles
712 That shake Heav'ns basis, bring forth all my Warr,
713 My Bow and Thunder, my Almighty Arms
714 Gird on, and Sword upon thy puissant Thigh;
715 Pursue these sons of Darkness, drive them out
716 From all Heav'ns bounds into the utter Deep:
717 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
718 God and Messiah his anointed King.

719 He said, and on his Son with Rayes direct
720 Shon full, he all his Father full exprest
721 Ineffably into his face receiv'd,
722 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

723 O Father, O Supream of heav'nly Thrones,
724 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou alwayes seekst
725 To glorifie thy Son, I alwayes thee,
726 As is most just; this I my Glorie account,
727 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
728 That thou in me well pleas'd, declarst thy will
729 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
730 Scepter and Power, thy giving, I assume,
731 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
732 Thou shalt be All in All, and I in thee

733 For ever, and in mee all whom thou lov'st:
734 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
735 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,
736 Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
737 Armd with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd,
738 To thir prepar'd ill Mansion driven down
739 To chains of darkness, and th' undying Worm,
740 That from thy just obedience could revolt,
741 Whom to obey is happiness entire.
742 Then shall thy Saints unmixt, and from th' impure
743 Farr separate, circling thy holy Mount
744 Unfained Halleluiahs to thee sing,
745 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.
746 So said, he o're his Scepter bowing, rose
747 From the right hand of Glorie where he sate,
748 And the third sacred Morn began to shine
749 Dawning through Heav'n: forth rush'd with whirlwind
sound
750 The Chariot of Paternal Deitie,
751 Flashing thick flames, Wheele within Wheele undrawn,
752 It self instinct with Spirit, but convoyd
753 By four Cherubic shapes, four Faces each
754 Had wondrous, as with Starrs thir bodies all
755 And Wings were set with Eyes, with Eyes the wheels
756 Of Beril, and careering Fires between;
757 Over thir heads a chrystal Firmament,
758 Whereon a Saphir Throne, inlaid with pure
759 Amber, and colours of the showrie Arch.
760 Hee in Celestial Panoplie all armd
761 Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,
762 Ascended, at his right hand Victorie
763 Sate Eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his Bow
764 And Quiver with three-bolted Thunder stor'd,
765 And from about him fierce Effusion rowld
766 Of smoak and bickering flame, and sparkles dire;
767 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,
768 He onward came, farr off his coming shon,
769 And twentie thousand (I thir number heard)
770 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen:
771 Hee on the wings of Cherub rode sublime
772 On the Chrystallin Skie, in Saphir Thron'd.
773 Illustrious farr and wide, but by his own
774 First seen, them unexpected joy surpriz'd,
775 When the great Ensign of Messiah blaz'd
776 Aloft by Angels born, his Sign in Heav'n:
777 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd
778 His Armie, circumfus'd on either Wing,
779 Under thir Head imbodied all in one.
780 Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd;

781 At his command the uprooted Hills retir'd
782 Each to his place, they heard his voice and went
783 Obsequious, Heav'n his wonted face renewd,
784 And with fresh Flourets Hill and Valley smil'd.
785 This saw his hapless Foes but stood obdur'd,
786 And to rebellious fight rallied thir Powers
787 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.
788 In heav'nly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?
789 But to convince the proud what Signs availe,
790 Or Wonders move th' obdurate to relent?
791 They hard'nd more by what might most reclame,
792 Grieving to see his Glorie, at the sight
793 Took envie, and aspiring to his highth,
794 Stood reimbattell'd fierce, by force or fraud
795 Weening to prosper, and at length prevaile
796 Against God and Messiah, or to fall
797 In universal ruin last, and now
798 To final Battel drew, disdainning flight,
799 Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
800 To all his Host on either hand thus spake.

801 Stand still in bright array ye Saints, here stand
802 Ye Angels arm'd, this day from Battel rest;
803 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
804 Accepted, fearless in his righteous Cause,
805 And as ye have receivd, so have ye don
806 Invincibly; but of this cursed crew
807 The punishment to other hand belongs,
808 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints;
809 Number to this dayes work is not ordain'd
810 Nor multitude, stand onely and behold
811 Gods indignation on these Godless pourd
812 By mee, not you but mee they have despis'd,
813 Yet envied; against mee is all thir rage,
814 Because the Father, t' whom in Heav'n supream
815 Kingdom and Power and Glorie appertains,
816 Hath honourd me according to his will.
817 Therefore to mee thir doom he hath assig'n'd;
818 That they may have thir wish, to trie with mee
819 In Battel which the stronger proves, they all,
820 Or I alone against them, since by strength
821 They measure all, of other excellence
822 Not emulous, nor care who them excells;
823 Nor other strife with them do I voutsafe.

824 So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd
825 His count'nance too severe to be beheld
826 And full of wrauth bent on his Enemies.
827 At once the Four spred out thir Starrie wings

828 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the Orbes
 829 Of his fierce Chariot rowld, as with the sound
 830 Of torrent Floods, or of a numerous Host.
 831 Hee on his impious Foes right onward drove,
 832 Gloomie as Night; under his burning Wheelles
 833 The stedfast Empyrean shook throughout,
 834 All but the Throne it self of God. Full soon
 835 Among them he arriv'd; in his right hand
 836 Grasping ten thousand Thunders, which he sent
 837 Before him, such as in thir Soules infix'd
 838 Plagues; they astonisht all resistance lost,
 839 All courage; down thir idle weapons drop'd;
 840 O're Shields and Helmes, and helmed heads he rode
 841 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
 842 That wisht the Mountains now might be again
 843 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
 844 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
 845 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Foure,
 846 Distinct with eyes, and from the living Wheels
 847 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes,
 848 One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
 849 Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire
 850 Among th' accurst, that witherd all thir strength,
 851 And of thir wonted vigour left them draind,
 852 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 853 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 854 His Thunder in mid Volie, for he meant
 855 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n:
 856 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a Heard
 857 Of Goats or timerous flock together throngd
 858 Drove them before him Thunder-struck, **pursu'd**
 859 **With terrors and with furies** to the bounds
 860 And Chrystal wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide,
 861 Rowld inward, and a spacious Gap disclos'd
 862 Into the wastful Deep; the monstrous sight
 863 Strook them with horror backward, but far worse
 864 Urg'd them behind; headlong themselves they threw
 865 Down from the verge of Heav'n, Eternal wrauth
 866 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

 867 Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, Hell saw
 868 Heav'n ruining from Heav'n and would have fled
 869 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep
 870 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound.
 871 Nine dayes they fell; confounded Chaos roard,
 872 And felt tenfold confusion in thir fall
 873 Through his wilde Anarchie, so huge a rout
 874 Incumberd him with ruin: Hell at last
 875 Yawning receavd them whole, and on them clos'd,

876 Hell thir fit habitation fraught with fire
877 Unquenchable, the house of woe and paine.
878 Disburd'nd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repaired
879 Her mural breach, returning whence it rowld.
880 Sole Victor from th' expulsion of his Foes
881 Messiah his triumphal Chariot turnd:
882 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
883 Eye witnesses of his Almighty Acts,
884 With Jubilie advanc'd; and as they went,
885 Shaded with branching Palme, each order bright,
886 Sung Triumph, and him sung Victorious King,
887 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him Dominion giv'n,
888 **Worthiest to Reign:** he celebrated rode
889 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the Courts
890 And Temple of his mightie Father Thron'd
891 On high: who into Glorie him receav'd,
892 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

893 Thus measuring things in Heav'n by things on Earth
894 At thy request, and that thou maist beware
895 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd
896 What might have else to human Race bin hid;
897 The discord which befel, and Warr in Heav'n
898 Among th' Angelic Powers, and the deep fall
899 Of those too high aspiring, who rebelld
900 With Satan, hee who envies now thy state,
901 Who now is plotting how he may seduce
902 Thee also from obedience, that with him
903 Bereavd of happiness thou maist partake
904 His punishment, Eternal miserie;
905 **Which would be all his solace and revenge,**
906 **As a despite don against the most High,**
907 **Thee once to gaine Companion of his woe.**
908 But list'n not to his Temptations, warne
909 Thy weaker; let it profit thee to have heard
910 By terrible Example the reward
911 Of disobedience; firm they might have stood,
912 Yet fell; remember, and fear to transgress.

BOOK VII.

1 **Descend from Heav'n Urania, by that name**
2 **If rightly thou art call'd, whose Voice divine**
3 **Following, above th' Olympian Hill I soare,**
4 **Above the flight of Pegasean wing.**
5 **The meaning, not the Name I call: for thou**
6 **Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top**
7 **Of old Olympus dwell'st, but Heav'nlie borne,**

8 Before the Hills appeerd, or Fountain flow'd,
9 Thou with Eternal wisdom didst converse,
10 Wisdom thy Sister, and with her didst play
11 In presence of th' Almighty Father, pleas'd
12 With thy Celestial Song. Up led by thee
13 Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,
14 An Earthlie Guest, and drawn Empyrean Aire,
15 Thy tempring; with like safetie guided down
16 Return me to my Native Element:
17 Least from this flying Steed unrein'd, (as once
18 Bellerophon, though from a lower Clime)
19 Dismounted, on th' Aleian Field I fall
20 Erroneous there to wander and forlorne.
21 Half yet remains unsung but narrower bound
22 Within the visible Diurnal Spheare;
23 Standing on Earth, not rapt above the Pole,
24 More safe I Sing with mortal voice, unchang'd
25 To hoarce or mute, though fall'n on evil dayes,
26 On evil dayes though fall'n, and evil tongues;
27 In darkness, and with dangers compast round,
28 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
29 Visit'st my slumbers Nightly, or when Morn
30 Purples the East: still govern thou my Song,
31 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
32 But drive farr off the barbarous dissonance
33 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the Race
34 Of that wilde Rout that tore the Thracian Bard
35 In Rhodope, where Woods and Rocks had Eares
36 To rapture, till the savage clamor dround
37 Both Harp and Voice; nor could the Muse defend
38 Her Son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:
39 For thou art Heav'nlie, shee an empty dreame.

40 Say Goddess, what ensu'd when Raphael,
41 The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarn'd
42 Adam by dire example to beware
43 Apostasie, by what befell in Heaven
44 To those Apostates, least the like befall
45 In Paradise to Adam or his Race,
46 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree,
47 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
48 So easily obeyd amid the choice
49 Of all tastes else to please thir appetite,
50 Though wandring. He with his consorted Eve
51 The storie heard attentive, and was fill'd
52 With admiration, and deep Muse to heare
53 Of things so high and strange, things to thir thought
54 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n,
55 And Warr so neer the Peace of God in bliss

56 With such confusion: but the evil soon
57 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those
58 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
59 With Blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd
60 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now
61 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
62 What neerer might concern him, how this World
63 Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,
64 When, and whereof created, for what cause,
65 What within Eden or without was done
66 Before his memorie, as one whose drouth
67 Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current streame,
68 Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
69 Proceeded thus to ask his Heav'nly Guest.

70 Great things, and full of wonder in our eares,
71 Farr differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd
72 Divine interpreter, by favour sent
73 Down from the Empyrean to forewarne
74 Us timely of what might else have bin our loss,
75 Unknown, which human knowledg could not reach:
76 For which to the infinitely Good we owe
77 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
78 Receive with solemne purpose to observe
79 Immutably his sovran will, the end
80 Of what we are. But since thou hast voutsaf't
81 Gently for our instruction to impart
82 Things above Earthly thought, which yet concernd
83 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seemd,
84 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
85 What may no less perhaps availe us known,
86 How first began this Heav'n which we behold
87 Distant so high, with moving Fires adorn'd
88 Innumerable, and this which yeelds or fills
89 All space, the ambient Aire wide interfus'd
90 Imbracing round this florid Earth, what cause
91 Mov'd the Creator in his holy Rest
92 Through all Eternitie so late to build
93 In Chaos, and the work begun, how soon
94 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou maist unfould
95 What wee, not to explore the secrets aske
96 Of his Eternal Empire, but the more
97 To magnifie his works, the more we know.
98 And the great Light of Day yet wants to run
99 Much of his Race though steep, suspens in Heav'n
100 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he heares,
101 And longer will delay to heare thee tell
102 His Generation, and the rising Birth
103 Of Nature from the unapparent Deep:

104 Or if the Starr of Eevning and the Moon
105 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring
106 Silence, and Sleep listning to thee will watch,
107 Or we can bid his absence, till thy Song
108 End, and dismiss thee ere the Morning shine.

109 Thus Adam his illustrious Guest besought:
110 And thus the Godlike Angel answerd milde.
111 This also thy request with caution askt
112 Obtaine: though to recount Almightye works
113 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
114 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?
115 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve
116 To glorifie the Maker, and inferr
117 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
118 Thy hearing, such Commission from above
119 I have receav'd, to answer thy desire
120 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain
121 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
122 Things not reveal'd; which th' invisible King,
123 Onely Omniscient, hath supprest in Night,
124 To none communicable in Earth or Heaven:
125 Anough is left besides to search and know.
126 But Knowledge is as food, and needs no less
127 Her Temperance over Appetite, to know
128 In measure what the mind may well contain,
129 Oppresses else with Surfet, and soon turns
130 Wisdom to Folly, as Nourishment to Winde.

131 Know then, that after Lucifer from Heav'n
132 (So call him, brighter once amidst the Host
133 Of Angels, then that Starr the Starrs among)
134 Fell with his flaming Legions through the Deep
135 Into his place, and the great Son returnd
136 Victorious with his Saints, th' Omnipotent
137 Eternal Father from his Throne beheld
138 Thir multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

139 At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought
140 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid
141 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
142 Of Deitie supream, us dispossesst,
143 He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud
144 Drew many, whom thir place knows here no more;
145 Yet farr the greater part have kept, I see,
146 Thir station, Heav'n yet populous retaines
147 Number sufficient to possess her Realmes
148 Though wide, and this high Temple to frequent
149 With Ministeries due and solemn Rites:

150 But least his heart exalt him in the harme
151 Already done, to have dispeopl'd Heav'n
152 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repara
153 That detriment, if such it be to lose
154 Self-lost, and in a moment will create
155 Another World, out of one man a Race
156 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
157 Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd
158 They open to themselves at length the way
159 Up hither, under long obedience tri'd,
160 And Earth be chang'd to Heav'n, & Heav'n to Earth,
161 One Kingdom, Joy and Union without end.
162 Mean while inhabit laxe, ye Powers of Heav'n,
163 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
164 This I perform, speak thou, and be it don:
165 My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee
166 I send along, ride forth, and bid the Deep
167 Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,
168 Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill
169 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
170 Though I uncircumscrib'd my self retire,
171 And put not forth my goodness, which is free
172 To act or not, Necessitie and Chance
173 Approach not mee, and what I will is Fate.

174 So spake th' Almightye, and to what he spake
175 His Word, the filial Godhead, gave effect.
176 Immediate are the Acts of God, more swift
177 Then time or motion, but to human ears
178 Cannot without process of speech be told,
179 So told as earthly notion can receive.
180 Great triumph and rejoycing was in Heav'n
181 When such was heard declar'd the Almightye's will;
182 Glorie they sung to the most High, good will
183 To future men, and in thir dwellings peace:
184 Glorie to him whose just avenging ire
185 Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight
186 And th' habitations of the just; to him
187 Glorie and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
188 Good out of evil to create, in stead
189 Of Spirits maligne a better Race to bring
190 Into thir vacant room, and thence diffuse
191 His good to Worlds and Ages infinite.
192 So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son
193 On his great Expedition now appeer'd,
194 Girt with Omnipotence, with Radiance crown'd
195 Of Majestie Divine, Sapience and Love
196 Immense, and all his Father in him shon.
197 About his Chariot numberless were pour'd

198 Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,
199 And Vertues, winged Spirits, and Chariots wing'd,
200 From the Armoury of God, where stand of old
201 Myriads between two brazen Mountains lodg'd
202 Against a solemn day, harness at hand,
203 Celestial Equipage; and now came forth
204 Spontaneous, for within them Spirit livd,
205 Attendant on thir Lord: Heav'n op'nd wide
206 Her ever during Gates, Harmonious sound
207 On golden Hinges moving, to let forth
208 The King of Glorie in his powerful Word
209 And Spirit coming to create new Worlds.
210 On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
211 They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss
212 Outrageous as a Sea, dark, wasteful, wilde,
213 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious windes
214 And surging waves, as Mountains to assault
215 Heav'ns highth, and with the Center mix the Pole.

216 Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou Deep, peace,
217 Said then th' Omnific Word, your discord end:

218 Nor staid, but on the Wings of Cherubim
219 Uplifted, in Paternal Glorie rode
220 Farr into Chaos, and the World unborn;
221 For Chaos heard his voice: him all his Train
222 Follow'd in bright procession to behold
223 Creation, and the wonders of his might.
224 Then staid the fervid Wheelles, and in his hand
225 He took the golden Compasses, prepar'd
226 In Gods Eternal store, to circumscribe
227 This Universe, and all created things:
228 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
229 Round through the vast profunditie obscure,
230 And said, thus farr extend, thus farr thy bounds,
231 This be thy just Circumference, O World.
232 Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,
233 Matter unform'd and void: Darkness profound
234 Cover'd th' Abyss: but on the watrie calme
235 His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspred,
236 And vital vertue infus'd, and vital warmth
237 Throughout the fluid Mass, but downward purg'd
238 The black tartareous cold Infernal dregs
239 Adverse to life: then founded, then conglob'd
240 Like things to like, the rest to several place
241 Disparted, and between spun out the Air,
242 And Earth self ballanc't on her Center hung.

243 Let ther be Light, said God, and forthwith Light

244 Ethereal first of things, quintessence pure
245 Sprung from the Deep, and from her Native East
246 To journie through the airie gloom began,
247 Sphear'd in a radiant Cloud, for yet the Sun
248 Was not; shee in a cloudie Tabernacle
249 Sojourn'd the while. God saw the Light was good;
250 And light from darkness by the Hemisphere
251 Divided: Light the Day, and Darkness Night
252 He nam'd. Thus was the first Day Eev'n and Morn:
253 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
254 By the Celestial Quires, when Orient Light
255 Exhaling first from Darkness they beheld;
256 Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth; with joy and shout
257 The hollow Universal Orb they fill'd,
258 And touch't thir Golden Harps, and hymning prais'd
259 God and his works, Creatour him they sung,
260 Both when first Eevning was, and when first Morn.

261 Again, God said, let ther be Firmament
262 Amid the Waters, and let it divide
263 The Waters from the Waters: and God made
264 The Firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
265 Transparent, Elemental Air, diffus'd
266 In circuit to the uttermost convex
267 Of this great Round: partition firm and sure,
268 The Waters underneath from those above
269 Dividing: for as Earth, so he the World
270 Built on circumfluous Waters calme, in wide
271 Crystallin Ocean, and the loud misrule
272 Of Chaos farr remov'd, least fierce extreames
273 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:
274 And Heav'n he nam'd the Firmament: So Eev'n
275 And Morning Chorus sung the second Day.

276 The Earth was form'd, but in the Womb as yet
277 Of Waters, Embryon immature involv'd,
278 Appeer'd not: over all the face of Earth
279 Main Ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warme
280 Prolific humour soft'ning all her Globe,
281 Fermented the great Mother to conceive,
282 Satiated with genial moisture, when God said
283 Be gather'd now ye Waters under Heav'n
284 Into one place, and let dry Land appeer.
285 Immediately the Mountains huge appeer
286 Emergent, and thir broad bare backs upheave
287 Into the Clouds, thir tops ascend the Skie:
288 So high as heav'd the tumid Hills, so low
289 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
290 Capacious bed of Waters: thither they

291 Hasted with glad precipitance, uprowld
292 As drops on dust conglobing from the drie;
293 Part rise in crystal Wall, or ridge direct,
294 For haste; such flight the great command impress'd
295 On the swift flouds: as Armies at the call
296 Of Trumpet (for of Armies thou hast heard)
297 Troop to thir Standard, so the watrie throng,
298 Wave rowling after Wave, where way they found,
299 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through Plaine,
300 Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them Rock or Hill,
301 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
302 With Serpent errour wandring, found thir way,
303 And on the washie Oose deep Channels wore;
304 Easie, e're God had bid the ground be drie,
305 All but within those banks, where Rivers now
306 Stream, and perpetual draw thir humid traine.
307 The dry Land, Earth, and the great receptacle
308 Of congregated Waters he call'd Seas:
309 And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' Earth
310 Put forth the verdant Grass, Herb yielding Seed,
311 And Fruit Tree yielding Fruit after her kind;
312 Whose Seed is in her self upon the Earth.
313 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then
314 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadornd,
315 Brought forth the tender Grass, whose verdure clad
316 Her Universal Face with pleasant green,
317 Then Herbs of every leaf, that sudden flour'd
318 Op'ning thir various colours, and made gay
319 Her bosom smelling sweet: and these scarce blown,
320 Forth flourish't thick the clustring Vine, forth crept
321 The smelling Gourd, up stood the cornie Reed
322 Embattell'd in her field: and the humble Shrub,
323 And Bush with frizl'd hair implicit: last
324 Rose as in Dance the stately Trees, and spread
325 Thir branches hung with copious Fruit; or gemm'd
326 Thir blossoms: with high woods the hills were crown'd,
327 With tufts the vallies and each fountain side,
328 With borders long the Rivers. That Earth now
329 Seemd like to Heav'n, a seat where Gods might dwell,
330 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt
331 Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd
332 Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground
333 None was, but from the Earth a dewie Mist
334 Went up and waterd all the ground, and each
335 Plant of the field, which e're it was in the Earth
336 God made, and every Herb, before it grew
337 On the green stemm; God saw that it was good.
338 So Eev'n and Morn recorded the Third Day.

339 Again th' Almightye spake: Let there be Lights
 340 High in th' expanse of Heaven to divide
 341 The Day from Night; and let them be for Signes,
 342 For Seasons, and for Dayes, and circling Years,
 343 And let them be for Lights as I ordaine
 344 Thir Office in the Firmament of Heav'n
 345 To give Light on the Earth; and it was so.
 346 And God made two great Lights, great for thir use
 347 To Man, the greater to have rule by Day,
 348 The less by Night alterne: and made the Starrs,
 349 And set them in the Firmament of Heav'n
 350 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the Day
 351 In thir vicissitude, and rule the Night,
 352 And Light from Darkness to divide. God saw,
 353 Surveying his great Work, that it was good:
 354 For of Celestial Bodies first the Sun
 355 A mightie Spheare he fram'd, unlightsom first,
 356 Though of Ethereal Mould: then form'd the Moon
 357 Globose, and every magnitude of Starrs,
 358 And sowd with Starrs the Heav'n thick as a field:
 359 Of Light by farr the greater part he took,
 360 Transplanted from her cloudie Shrine, and plac'd
 361 In the Suns Orb, made porous to receive
 362 And drink the liquid Light, firm to retaine
 363 Her gather'd beams, great Palace now of Light.
 364 Hither as to thir Fountain other Starrs
 365 Repairing, in thir gold'n Urns draw Light,
 366 And hence the Morning Planet guilds her horns;
 367 By tincture or reflection they augment
 368 Thir small peculiar, though from human sight
 369 So farr remote, with diminution seen.
 370 First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen,
 371 Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round
 372 Invested with bright Rayes; jocond to run
 373 His Longitude through Heav'ns high rode: the gray
 374 Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd
 375 Shedding sweet influence: less bright the Moon,
 376 But opposite in leveld West was set
 377 His mirror, with full face borrowing her Light
 378 From him, for other light she needed none
 379 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps
 380 Till night, then in the East **her turn she** shines,
 381 **Revolvd on Heav'ns great Axle**, and her Reign
 382 With thousand lesser Lights dividual holds,
 383 With thousand thousand Starres, that then appeer'd
 384 Spangling the Hemisphere: then first adornd
 385 With thir bright Luminaries that Set and Rose,
 386 Glad Eevning and glad Morn crownd the fourth day.

387 And God said, let the Waters generate
388 Reptil with Spawn abundant, living Soule:
389 And let Fowle flie above the Earth, with wings
390 Displayd on the op'n Firmament of Heav'n.
391 And God created the great Whales, and each
392 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
393 The waters generated by thir kinde,
394 And every Bird of wing after his kinde;
395 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,
396 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the Seas
397 And Lakes and running Streams the waters fill;
398 And let the Fowle be multiply'd on the Earth.
399 Forthwith the Sounds and Seas, each Creek and Bay
400 With Frie innumerable swarme, and Shoales
401 Of Fish that with thir Finns and shining Scales
402 Glide under the green Wave, in Sculles that oft
403 Bank the mid Sea: part single or with mate
404 Graze the Sea weed thir pasture, and through Groves
405 Of Coral stray, or sporting with quick glance
406 Show to the Sun thir wav'd coats dropt with Gold,
407 Or in thir Pearlie shells at ease, attend
408 Moist nutriment, or under Rocks thir food
409 In jointed Armour watch: on smooth the Seale,
410 And bended Dolphins play: part huge of bulk
411 Wallowing unweildie, enormous in thir Gate
412 Tempest the Ocean: there Leviathan
413 Hugest of living Creatures, on the Deep
414 Stretcht like a Promontorie sleeps or swimmes,
415 And seems a moving Land, and at his Gilles
416 Draws in, and at his Trunck spouts out a Sea.

417 Mean while the tepid Caves, and Fens and shoares
418 Thir Brood as numerous hatch, from the Egg that soon
419 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd
420 Thir callow young, but featherd soon and fledge
421 They summ'd thir Penns, and soaring th' air sublime
422 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
423 In prospect; there the Eagle and the Stork
424 On Cliffs and Cedar tops thir Eyries build:
425 Part loosly wing the Region, part more wise
426 In common, rang'd in figure wedge thir way,
427 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
428 Thir Aierie Caravan high over Sea's
429 Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing
430 Easing thir flight; so steers the prudent Crane
431 Her annual Voiage, born on Windes; the Aire
432 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes:
433 From Branch to Branch the smaller Birds with song
434 Solac'd the Woods, and spred thir painted wings

435 Till Ev'n, nor then the solemn Nightingal
436 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft layes:
437 Others on Silver Lakes and Rivers Bath'd
438 Thir downie Brest; the Swan with Arched neck
439 Between her white wings mantling proudly, Rowes
440 Her state with Oarie feet; yet oft they quit
441 The Dank, and rising on stiff Pennons, towre
442 The mid Aereal Skie: Others on ground
443 Walk'd firm; the crested Cock whose clarion sounds
444 The silent hours, and th' other whose gay Train
445 Adorns him, colour'd with the Florid hue
446 Of Rainbows and Starrie Eyes. The Waters thus
447 With Fish replenisht, and the Aire with Fowle,
448 Ev'ning and Morn solemniz'd the Fift day.

449 The Sixt, and of Creation last arose
450 With Eevning Harps and Martin, when God said,
451 Let th' Earth bring forth Foul living in her kinde,
452 Cattel and Creeping things, and Beast of the Earth,
453 Each in thir kinde. The Earth obey'd, and strait
454 Op'ning her fertil Woomb teem'd at a Birth
455 Innumeros living Creatures, perfet formes,
456 Limb'd and full grown: out of the ground up rose
457 As from his Laire the wilde Beast where he wonns
458 In Forrest wilde, in Thicket, Brake, or Den;
459 Among the Trees in Pairs they rose, they walk'd:
460 The Cattel in the Fields and Meddowes green:
461 Those rare and solitarie, these in flocks
462 Pasturing at once, and in broad Herds upsprung.
463 The grassie Clods now Calv'd, now half appeer'd
464 The Tawnie Lion, pawing to get free
465 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from Bonds,
466 And Rampant shakes his Brinded main; the Ounce,
467 The Libbard, and the Tyger, as the Moale
468 Rising, the crumbl'd Earth above them threw
469 In Hillocks; the swift Stag from under ground
470 Bore up his branching head: scarce from his mould
471 Behemoth biggest born of Earth upheav'd
472 His vastness: Fleec't the Flocks and bleating rose,
473 As Plants: ambiguous between Sea and Land
474 The River Horse and scalie Crocodile.
475 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,
476 Insect or Worme; those wav'd thir limber fans
477 For wings, and smallest Lineaments exact
478 In all the Liveries dect of Summers pride
479 With spots of Gold and Purple, azure and green:
480 These as a line thir long dimension drew,
481 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all
482 Minims of Nature; some of Serpent kinde

483 Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd
484 Thir Snakie foulds, and added wings. First crept
485 The Parsimonious Emmet, provident
486 Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd,
487 Pattern of just equalitie perhaps
488 Hereafter, join'd in her popular Tribes
489 Of Commonaltie: swarming next appeer'd
490 The Female Bee that feeds her Husband Drone
491 Deliciously, and builds her waxen Cells
492 With Honey stor'd: the rest are numberless,
493 And thou thir Natures know'st, & gav'st them Names,
494 Needlest to thee repeated; nor unknown
495 The Serpent suttl'st Beast of all the field,
496 Of huge extent somtimes, with brazen Eyes
497 And hairie Main terrific, though to thee
498 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.
499 Now Heav'n in all her Glorie shon, and rowld
500 Her motions, as the great first-Movers hand
501 First wheeld thir course; Earth in her rich attire
502 Consummate lovly smil'd; Aire, Water, Earth,
503 By Fowl, Fish, Beast, was flown, was swum, was walkt
504 Frequent; and of the Sixt day yet remain'd;
505 There wanted yet the Master work, the end
506 Of all yet don; a Creature who not prone
507 And Brute as other Creatures, but endu'd
508 With Sanctitie of Reason, might erect
509 His Stature, and upright with Front serene
510 Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence
511 Magnanimous to correspond with Heav'n,
512 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
513 Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes
514 Directed in Devotion, to adore
515 And worship God Supream, who made him chief
516 Of all his works: therefore the Omnipotent
517 Eternal Father (For where is not hee
518 Present) thus to his Son audibly spake.

519 Let us make now Man in our image, Man
520 In our similitude, and let them rule
521 Over the Fish and Fowle of Sea and Aire,
522 Beast of the Field, and over all the Earth,
523 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
524 This said, he formd thee, Adam, thee O Man
525 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd
526 The breath of Life; in his own Image hee
527 Created thee, in the Image of God
528 Express, and thou becam'st a living Soul.
529 Male he created thee, but thy consort
530 Female for Race; then bless'd Mankinde, and said,

531 Be fruitful, multiplie, and fill the Earth,
532 Subdue it, and throughout Dominion hold
533 Over Fish of the Sea, and Fowle of the Aire,
534 And every living thing that moves on the Earth.
535 Wherever thus created, for no place
536 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st
537 He brought thee into this delicious Grove,
538 This Garden, planted with the Trees of God,
539 Delectable both to behold and taste;
540 And freely all thir pleasant fruit for food
541 Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th' Earth yields,
542 Varietie without end; but of the Tree
543 Which tasted works knowledge of Good and Evil,
544 Thou mai'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou di'st;
545 Death is the penaltie impos'd, beware,
546 And govern well thy appetite, least sin
547 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
548 Here finish'd hee, and all that he had made
549 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
550 So Ev'n and Morn accomplish'd the Sixt day:
551 Yet not till the Creator from his work
552 Desisting, though unwearied, up returnd
553 Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns his high abode,
554 Thence to behold this new created World
555 Th' addition of his Empire, how it shew'd
556 In prospect from his Throne, how good, how faire,
557 Answering his great Idea. Up he rode
558 Followd with acclamation and the sound
559 Symphonious of ten thousand Harpes that tun'd
560 Angelic harmonies: the Earth, the Aire
561 Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heardst)
562 The Heav'ns and all the Constellations rung,
563 The Planets in thir station list'ning stood,
564 While the bright Pomp ascended jubilant.
565 Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,
566 Open, ye Heav'ns, your living dores; let in
567 The great Creator from his work returnd
568 Magnificent, his Six days work, a World;
569 Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deigne
570 To visit oft the dwellings of just Men
571 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
572 Thither will send his winged Messengers
573 On errands of supernal Grace. So sung
574 The glorious Train ascending: He through Heav'n,
575 That open'd wide her blazing Portals, led
576 To Gods Eternal house direct the way,
577 A broad and ample rode, whose dust is Gold
578 And pavement Starrs, as Starrs to thee appeer,
579 Seen in the Galaxie, that Milkie way

580 Which nightly as a circling Zone thou seest
 581 Pouderd with Starrs. And now on Earth the Seventh
 582 Eev'ning arose in Eden, for the Sun
 583 Was set, and twilight from the East came on,
 584 Forerunning Night; when at the holy mount
 585 Of Heav'ns high-seated top, th' Impereal Throne
 586 Of Godhead, fixt for ever firm and sure,
 587 The Filial Power arriv'd, and sate him down
 588 With his great Father (for he also went
 589 Invisible, yet staid (such priviledge
 590 Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd.
 591 Author and end of all things, and from work
 592 Now resting, bless'd and hallowd the Seav'nth day
 593 As resting on that day from all his work,
 594 But not in silence holy kept; the Harp
 595 Had work and rested not, the solemn Pipe,
 596 And Dulcimer, all Organs of sweet stop,
 597 All sounds on Fret by String or Golden Wire
 598 Temper'd soft Tunings, intermixt with Voice
 599 Choral or Unison: of incense Clouds
 600 Fuming from Golden Censers hid the Mount.
 601 Creation and the Six dayes acts they sung,
 602 Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite
 603 Thy power; what thought can measure thee or tongue
 604 Relate thee; greater now in thy return
 605 Then from the Giant Angels; thee that day
 606 Thy Thunders magnifi'd; but to create
 607 Is greater then created to destroy.
 608 Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound
 609 Thy Empire? easily the proud attempt
 610 Of Spirits apostat and thir Counsels vaine
 611 Thou hast repeld, while impiously they thought
 612 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 613 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
 614 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 615 To manifest the more thy might: his evil
 616 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
 617 Witness this new-made World, another Heav'n
 618 From Heaven Gate not farr, founded in view
 619 On the cleer Hyaline, the Glassie Sea;
 620 Of amplitude almost immense, with Starr's
 621 Numerous, and every Starr perhaps a World
 622 Of destind habitation; but thou know'st
 623 Thir seasons: among these the seat of men,
 624 Earth with her nether Ocean circumfus'd,
 625 Thir pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happie men,
 626 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc't,
 627 Created in his Image, there to dwell
 628 And worship him, and in reward to rule

629 Over his Works, on Earth, in Sea, or Air,
630 And multiply a Race of Worshippers
631 Holy and just: thrice happie if they know
632 Thir happiness, and persevere upright.

633 So sung they, and the Empyrean rung,
634 With Halleluiahs: Thus was Sabbath kept.
635 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd
636 How first this World and face of things began,
637 And what before thy memorie was don
638 From the beginning, that posteritie
639 Informd by thee might know; if else thou seekst
640 Aught, not surpassing human measure, say.

BOOK VIII.

1 The Angel ended, and in Adams Eare
2 So Charming left his voice, that he a while
3 Thought him still speaking, still stood fixt to hear;
4 Then as new wak't thus gratefully repli'd.
5 What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
6 Equal have I to render thee, Divine
7 Hystorian, who thus largely hast allayd
8 The thirst I had of knowledge, and voutsaf't
9 This friendly condescention to relate
10 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard
11 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
12 With glorie attributed to the high
13 Creator; something yet of doubt remaines,
14 Which onely thy solution can resolve.
15 When I behold this goodly Frame, this World
16 Of Heav'n and Earth consisting, and compute,
17 Thir magnitudes, this Earth a spot, a graine,
18 An Atom, with the Firmament compar'd
19 And all her numberd Starrs, that seem to rowle
20 Spaces incomprehensible (for such
21 Thir distance argues and thir swift return
22 Diurnal) meerly to officiate light
23 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,
24 One day and night; in all thir vast survey
25 Useless besides, reasoning I oft admire,
26 How Nature wise and frugal could commit
27 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
28 So many nobler Bodies to create,
29 Greater so manifold to this one use,
30 For aught appeers, and on thir Orbs impose
31 Such restless revolution day by day
32 Repeated, while the sedentarie Earth,

33 That better might with farr less compass move,
34 Serv'd by more noble then her self, attaines
35 Her end without least motion, and receaves,
36 As Tribute such a sumless journey brought
37 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;
38 Speed, to describe whose swiftnesse Number failes.

39 So spake our Sire, and by his count'nance seemd
40 Entring on studious thoughts abstruse, which Eve
41 Perceaving where she sat retir'd in sight,
42 With lowliness Majestic from her seat,
43 And Grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
44 Rose, and went forth among her Fruits and Flours,
45 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,
46 Her Nurserie; they at her coming sprung
47 And toucht by her fair tendance gladlier grew.
48 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
49 Delighted, or not capable her eare
50 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd,
51 Adam relating, she sole Auditress;
52 Her Husband the Relater she preferr'd
53 Before the Angel, and of him to ask
54 Chose rather; hee, she knew would intermix
55 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute
56 With conjugal Caresses, from his Lip
57 Not Words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now
58 Such pairs, in Love and mutual Honour joyn'd?
59 With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went;
60 Not unattended, for on her as Queen
61 A pomp of winning Graces waited still,
62 And from about her shot Darts of desire
63 Into all Eyes to wish her still in sight.
64 And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
65 Benevolent and facil thus repli'd.

66 To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heav'n
67 Is as the Book of God before thee set,
68 Wherein to read his wondrous Works, and learne
69 His Seasons, Hours, or Dayes, or Months, or Yeares:
70 This to attain, whether Heav'n move or Earth,
71 Imports not, if thou reck'n right, the rest
72 From Man or Angel the great Architect
73 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
74 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
75 Rather admire; or if they list to try
76 Conjecture, he his Fabric of the Heav'ns
77 Hath left to thir disputes, perhaps to move
78 His laughter at thir quaint Opinions wide
79 Hereafter, when they come to model Heav'n

80 And calculate the Starrs, how they will weild
81 The mightie frame, how build, unbuild, contrive
82 To save appeerances, how gird the Sphear
83 With Centric and Eccentric scribl'd o're,
84 Cycle and Epicycle, Orb in Orb:
85 Alreadie by thy reasoning this I guess,
86 Who art to lead thy ofspring, and supposest
87 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
88 The less not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,
89 Earth sitting still, when she alone receaves
90 The benefit: consider first, that Great
91 Or Bright inferrs not Excellence: the Earth
92 Though, in comparison of Heav'n, so small,
93 Nor glistering, may of solid good containe
94 More plenty then the Sun that barren shines,
95 Whose vertue on it self workes no effect,
96 But in the fruitful Earth; there first receavd
97 His beams, unactive else, thir vigour find.
98 Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries
99 Officious, but to thee Earths habitant.
100 And for the Heav'ns wide Circuit, let it speak
101 The Makers high magnificence, who built
102 So spacious, and his Line stretcht out so farr;
103 That Man may know he dwells not in his own;
104 An Edifice too large for him to fill,
105 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest
106 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
107 The swiftnes of those Circles attribute,
108 Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,
109 That to corporeal substances could adde
110 Speed almost Spiritual; mee thou thinkst not slow,
111 Who since the Morning hour set out from Heav'n
112 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd
113 In Eden, distance inexpressible
114 By Numbers that have name. But this I urge,
115 Admitting Motion in the Heav'ns, to shew
116 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;
117 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
118 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.
119 God to remove his wayes from human sense,
120 Plac'd Heav'n from Earth so farr, that earthly sight,
121 If it presume, might erre in things too high,
122 And no advantage gaine. What if the Sun
123 Be Center to the World, and other Starrs
124 By his attractive vertue and thir own
125 Incited, dance about him various rounds?
126 Thir wandring course now high, now low, then hid,
127 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
128 In six thou seest, and what if sev'nth to these

129 The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,
130 Insensibly three different Motions move?
131 Which else to several Sphears thou must ascribe,
132 Mov'd contrarie with thwart obliquities,
133 Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift
134 Nocturnal and Diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
135 Invisible else above all Starrs, the Wheele
136 Of Day and Night; which needs not thy beleefe,
137 If Earth industrious of her self fetch Day
138 Travelling East, and with her part averse
139 From the Suns beam meet Night, her other part
140 Still luminous by his ray. What if that light
141 Sent from her through the wide transpicuous aire,
142 To the terrestrial Moon be as a Starr
143 Enlightning her by Day, as she by Night
144 This Earth? reciprocal, if Land be there,
145 Feilds and Inhabitants: Her spots thou seest
146 As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and Rain produce
147 Fruits in her soft'nd Soile, for some to eate
148 Allotted there; and other Suns perhaps
149 With thir attendant Moons thou wilt descrie
150 Communicating Male and Femal Light,
151 Which two great Sexes animate the World,
152 Stor'd in each Orb perhaps with some that live.
153 For such vast room in Nature unpossesst
154 By living Soule, desert and desolate,
155 Onely to shine, yet scarce to contribute
156 Each Orb a glimps of Light, conveyd so farr
157 Down to this habitable, which returnes
158 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.
159 But whether thus these things, or whether not,
160 Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n
161 Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun,
162 Hee from the East his flaming rode begin,
163 Or Shee from West her silent course advance
164 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
165 On her soft Axle, while she paces Eev'n,
166 And beares thee soft with the smooth Air along,
167 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,
168 Leave them to God above, him serve and feare;
169 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,
170 Wherever plac't, let him dispose: joy thou
171 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise
172 And thy faire Eve; Heav'n is for thee too high
173 To know what passes there; be lowlie wise:
174 Think onely what concernes thee and thy being;
175 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there
176 Live, in what state, condition or degree,
177 Contented that thus farr hath been reveal'd

178 Not of Earth onely but of highest Heav'n.
 179 To whom thus Adam cleerd of doubt, repli'd.
 180 How fully hast thou satisfi'd mee, pure
 181 Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,
 182 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 183 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 184 To interrupt the sweet of Life, from which
 185 God hath bid dwell farr off all anxious cares,
 186 And not molest us, unless we our selves
 187 Seek them with wandring thoughts, and notions vain.
 188 But apt the Mind or Fancie is to roave
 189 Uncheckt, and of her roaving is no end;
 190 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learne,
 191 That not to know at large of things remote
 192 From use, obscure and suttle, but to know
 193 That which before us lies in daily life,
 194 Is the prime Wisdom, what is more, is fume,
 195 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,
 196 And renders us in things that most concerne
 197 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 198 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 199 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 200 Useful, whence haply mention may arise
 201 Of somthing not unseasonable to ask
 202 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 203 Thee I have heard relating what was don
 204 Ere my remembrance: now hear mee relate
 205 My Storie, which perhaps thou hast not heard;
 206 And Day is yet not spent; till then thou seest
 207 How suttly to detaine thee I devise,
 208 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 209 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:
 210 For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav'n,
 211 And sweeter thy discourse is to my eare
 212 Then Fruits of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
 213 And hunger both, from labour, at the houre
 214 Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill,
 215 Though pleasant, but thy words with Grace Divine
 216 Imbu'd, bring to thir sweetness no satietie.
 217 To whom thus Raphael answer'd heav'nly meek.
 218 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,
 219 Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee
 220 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd
 221 Inward and outward both, his image faire:
 222 Speaking or mute all comliness and grace
 223 Attends thee, and each word, each motion formes,
 224 Nor less think wee in Heav'n of thee on Earth

225 Then of our fellow servant, and inquire
 226 Gladly into the wayes of God with Man:
 227 For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set
 228 On Man his Equal Love: say therefore on;
 229 For I that Day was absent, as befell,
 230 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,
 231 Farr on excursion toward the Gates of Hell;
 232 Squar'd in full Legion (such command we had)
 233 To see that none thence issu'd forth a spie,
 234 Or enemie, while God was in his work,
 235 Least hee incenst at such eruption bold,
 236 Destruction with Creation might have mixt.
 237 **Not that they durst without his leave attempt,**
 238 **But us he sends upon his high behests**
 239 **For state, as Sovran King, and to enure**
 240 **Our prompt obedience. Fast** we found, fast shut
 241 The dismal Gates, and barricado'd strong;
 242 But long ere our approaching heard within
 243 Noise, other then the sound of Dance or Song,
 244 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.
 245 Glad we return'd up to the coasts of Light
 246 Ere Sabbath Eev'ning: so we had in charge.
 247 But thy relation now; for I attend,
 248 Pleas'd with thy words no less then thou with mine.

249 So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.
 250 For Man to tell how human Life began
 251 Is hard; for who himself beginning knew?
 252 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 253 Induc'd me. As new wak't from soundest sleep
 254 Soft on the flourie herb I found me laid
 255 In Balmie Sweat, which with his Beames the Sun
 256 Soon dri'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.
 257 Strait toward Heav'n my wondring Eyes I turn'd,
 258 And gaz'd a while the ample Skie, till rais'd
 259 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,
 260 As thitherward endeavoring, and upright
 261 Stood on my feet; about me round I saw
 262 Hill, Dale, and shadie Woods, and sunnie Plaines,
 263 And liquid Lapse of murmuring Streams; by these,
 264 Creatures that livd, and movd, and walk'd, or flew,
 265 Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd,
 266 With fragrance and with joy my heart oreflow'd.
 267 My self I then perus'd, and Limb by Limb
 268 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 269 With supple joints, and lively vigour led:
 270 But who I was, or where, or from what cause,
 271 Knew not; to speak I tri'd, and forthwith spake,
 272 My Tongue obey'd and readily could name

273 What e're I saw. Thou Sun, said I, faire Light,
 274 And thou enlight'nd Earth, so fresh and gay,
 275 Ye Hills and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plaines,
 276 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,
 277 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?
 278 Not of my self; by some great Maker then,
 279 In goodness and in power præminent;
 280 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,
 281 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 282 And feel that I am happier then I know.
 283 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,
 284 From where I first drew Aire, and first beheld
 285 This happie Light, when answer none return'd,
 286 On a green shadie Bank profuse of Flours
 287 Pensive I sate me down; there gentle sleep
 288 First found me, and with soft oppression seis'd
 289 My droused sense, untroubl'd, though I thought
 290 I then was passing to my former state
 291 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:
 292 When suddenly stood at my Head a dream,
 293 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 294 My fancy to believe I yet had being,
 295 And livd: One came, methought, of shape Divine,
 296 And said, thy Mansion wants thee, Adam, rise,
 297 First Man, of Men innumerable ordain'd
 298 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide
 299 To the Garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.
 300 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,
 301 And over Fields and Waters, as in Aire
 302 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 303 A woodie Mountain; whose high top was plaine,
 304 A Circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest Trees
 305 Planted, with Walks, and Bowers, that what I saw
 306 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seemd. Each Tree
 307 Load'n with fairest Fruit that hung to the Eye
 308 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
 309 To pluck and eate; whereat I wak'd, and found
 310 Before mine Eyes all real, as the dream
 311 Had lively shadowd: Here had new begun
 312 My wandring, had not hee who was my Guide
 313 Up hither, from among the Trees appeer'd
 314 Presence Divine. Rejoycing but with aw
 315 In adoration at his feet I fell
 316 Submiss: he rear'd me, and Whom thou soughtst I am,
 317 Said mildely, Author of all this thou seest
 318 Above, or round about thee or beneath.
 319 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
 320 To Till and keep, and of the Fruit to eate:
 321 Of every Tree that in the Garden growes

322 Eate freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:
323 But of the Tree whose operation brings
324 Knowledg of good and ill, which I have set
325 The Pledge of thy Obedience and thy Faith,
326 Amid the Garden by the Tree of Life,
327 Remember what I warne thee, shun to taste,
328 And shun the bitter consequence: for know,
329 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
330 Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt dye;
331 From that day mortal, **and this happie State**
332 **Shalt loose, expell'd from hence into a World**
333 **Of woe and sorrow.** Sternly he pronounc'd
334 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
335 Yet dreadful in mine eare, though in my choice
336 Not to incur; but soon his cleer aspect
337 Return'd and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
338 Not onely these fair bounds, but all the Earth
339 To thee and to thy Race I give; as Lords
340 Possess it, and all things that therein live,
341 Or live in Sea, or Aire, Beast, Fish, and Fowle.
342 In signe whereof each Bird and Beast behold
343 After thir kindes; I bring them to receive
344 From thee thir Names, and pay thee fealtie
345 With low subjection; understand the same
346 Of Fish within thir watry residence,
347 Not hither summond, since they cannot change
348 Thir Element to draw the thinner Aire.

349 As thus he spake, each Bird and Beast behold
350 Approaching two and two, These cowering low
351 With blandishment, each Bird stoop'd on his wing.
352 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood
353 Thir Nature, with such knowledg God endu'd
354 My sudden apprehension: but in these
355 I found not what me thought I wanted still;
356 And to the Heav'nly vision thus presum'd.

357 O by what Name, for thou above all these,
358 Above mankinde, or aught then mankinde higher,
359 Surpassest farr my naming, how may I
360 Adore thee, Author of this Universe,
361 And all this good to man, for whose well being
362 So amply, and with hands so liberal
363 Thou hast provided all things: but with mee
364 I see not who partakes. In solitude
365 What happiness, who can enjoy alone,
366 Or all enjoying, what contentment find?
367 Thus I presumptuous; and the vision bright,
368 As with a smile more bright'nd, thus repli'd.

369 What call'st thou solitude, is not the Earth
370 With various living creatures, and the Aire
371 Replenisht, and all these at thy command
372 To come and play before thee, know'st thou not
373 Thir language and thir wayes, they also know,
374 And reason not contemptibly; with these
375 Find pastime, and beare rule; thy Realm is large.
376 So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd
377 So ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,
378 And humble deprecation thus repli'd.

379 Let not my words offend thee, Heav'nly Power,
380 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.
381 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
382 And these inferiour farr beneath me set?

383 Among unequals what societie
384 Can sort, what harmonie or true delight?
385 Which must be mutual, in proportion due
386 Giv'n and receiv'd; **but in disparitie**
387 **The one intense, the other still remiss**
388 **Cannot well suite with either, but soon prove**
389 **Tedious alike:** Of fellowship I speak
390 Such as I seek, fit to participate
391 All rational delight, wherein the brute
392 Cannot be human consort; they rejoyce
393 Each with thir kinde, Lion with Lioness;
394 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd;
395 Much less can Bird with Beast, or Fish with Fowle
396 So well converse, nor with the Ox the Ape;
397 Wors then can Man with Beast, and least of all.
398 **Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.**
399 **A nice and suttle happiness I see**
400 **Thou to thy self proposest, in the choice**
401 **Of thy Associates, Adam, and wilt taste**
402 **No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitarie.**
403 **What thinkst thou then of mee, and this my State,**
404 **Seem I to thee sufficiently possest**
405 **Of happiness, or not? who am alone**
406 **From all Eternitie, for none I know**
407 **Second to me or like, equal much less.**
408 **How have I then with whom to hold converse**
409 **Save with the Creatures which I made, and those**
410 **To me inferiour, infinite descents**
411 **Beneath what other Creatures are to thee?**

412 He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attaine
413 The highth and depth of thy Eternal wayes
414 All human thoughts come short, Supream of things;

415 Thou in thy self art perfet, and in thee
416 Is no deficiencie found; not so is Man,
417 But in degree, the cause of his desire
418 By conversation with his like to help,
419 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
420 Shouldst propagat, already infinite;
421 And through all numbers absolute, though One;
422 But Man by number is to manifest
423 His single imperfection, and beget
424 Like of his like, his Image multipli'd,
425 In unitie defective, which requires
426 Collateral love, and deerest amitie.
427 Thou in thy secresie although alone,
428 Best with thy self accompanied, seek'st not
429 Social communication, yet so pleas'd,
430 Canst raise thy Creature to what highth thou wilt
431 Of Union or Communion, deifi'd;
432 I by conversing cannot these erect
433 From prone, nor in thir wayes complacence find.
434 Thus I embold'nd spake, and freedom us'd
435 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd
436 This answer from the gracious voice Divine.

437 Thus farr to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
438 And finde thee knowing not of Beasts alone,
439 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,
440 Expressing well the spirit within thee free,
441 My Image, not imparted to the Brute,
442 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
443 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,
444 And be so minded still; I, ere thou spak'st,
445 Knew it not good for Man to be alone,
446 And no such companie as then thou saw'st
447 Intended thee for trial onely brought,
448 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet:
449 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,
450 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,
451 Thy wish exactly to thy hearts desire.

452 Hee ended, or I heard no more, for now
453 My earthly by his Heav'nly overpowerd,
454 Which it had long stood under, streind to the highth
455 In that celestial Colloquie sublime,
456 As with an object that excels the sense,
457 Dazl'd and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
458 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
459 By Nature as in aide, and clos'd mine eyes.
460 Mine eyes he clos'd, but op'n left the Cell
461 Of Fancie my internal sight, by which

462 Abstract as in a transe methought I saw,
463 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
464 Still glorious before whom awake I stood;
465 Who stooping op'nd my left side, and took
466 From thence a Rib, with cordial spirits warme,
467 And Life-blood streaming fresh; wide was the wound,
468 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd:
469 The Rib he formd and fashond with his hands;
470 Under his forming hands a Creature grew,
471 Manlike, but different Sex, so lovely faire,
472 That what seemd fair in all the World, seemd now
473 Mean, or in her summd up, in her containd
474 And in her looks, which from that time infus'd
475 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,
476 **And into all things from her Aire inspir'd**
477 **The spirit of love and amorous delight.**
478 Shee disappeerd, and left me dark, I wak'd
479 To find her, or for ever to deplore
480 Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure:
481 When out of hope, behold her, not farr off,
482 Such as I saw her in my dream, adornd
483 With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
484 To make her amiable: On she came,
485 Led by her Heav'nly Maker, though unseen,
486 And guided by his voice, nor uninformd
487 Of nuptial Sanctitie and marriage Rites:
488 Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her Eye,
489 In every gesture dignitie and love.
490 I overjoyd could not forbear aloud.

491 This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
492 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benigne,
493 Giver of all things faire, but fairest this
494 Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see
495 Bone of my Bone, Flesh of my Flesh, my Self
496 Before me; Woman is her Name, of Man
497 Extracted; for this cause he shall forgoe
498 Father and Mother, and to his Wife adhere;
499 And they shall be one Flesh, one Heart, one Soule.

500 She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,
501 Yet Innocence and Virgin Modestie,
502 Her vertue and the conscience of her worth,
503 That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,
504 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,
505 The more desirable, or to say all,
506 Nature her self, though pure of sinful thought,
507 Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd;
508 I follow'd her, she what was Honour knew,

509 And with obsequious Majestie approv'd
 510 My pleaded reason. To the Nuptial Bowre
 511 I led her blushing like the Morn: all Heav'n,
 512 And happie Constellations on that houre
 513 Shed thir selectest influence; the Earth
 514 Gave sign of gratulation, and each Hill;
 515 Joyous the Birds; fresh Gales and gentle Aires
 516 Whisper'd it to the Woods, and from thir wings
 517 Flung Rose, flung Odours from the spicie Shrub,
 518 Disporting, till the amorous Bird of Night
 519 Sung Spousal, and bid haste the Eevning Starr
 520 On his Hill top, to light the bridal Lamp.
 521 Thus I have told thee all my State, and brought
 522 My Storie to the sum of earthly bliss
 523 Which I enjoy, and must confess to find
 524 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 525 As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,
 526 Nor vehement desire, these delicacies
 527 I mean of Taste, Sight, Smell, Herbs, Fruits, and Flours,
 528 Walks, and the melodie of Birds; but here
 529 Farr otherwise, transported I behold,
 530 Transported touch; here passion first I felt,
 531 Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 532 Superiour and unmov'd, here onely weake
 533 Against the charm of Beauties powerful glance.
 534 Or Nature faild in mee, and left some part
 535 Not proof enough such Object to sustain,
 536 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps
 537 More then enough; at least on her bestow'd
 538 Too much of Ornament, in outward shew
 539 Elaborate, of inward less exact.
 540 For well I understand in the prime end
 541 Of Nature her th' inferiour, in the mind
 542 And inward Faculties, which most excell,
 543 In outward also her resembling less
 544 His Image who made both, and less expressing
 545 The character of that Dominion giv'n
 546 O're other Creatures; yet when I approach
 547 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 548 And in her self compleat, so well to know
 549 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,
 550 Seems wisest, vertuosest, discreetest, best;
 551 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 552 Degraded; Wisdom in discourse with her
 553 Looses discount'nanc't, and like folly shewes;
 554 Authority and Reason on her waite,
 555 As one intended first, not after made
 556 Occasionally; and to consummate all,
 557 Greatness of mind and nobleness thir seat

558 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
559 About her, as a guard Angelic plac't.
560 To whom the Angel with contracted brow.

561 **Accuse not** Nature, she hath don her part;
562 Do thou but thine, **and be not diffident**
563 **Of Wisdom, she deserts thee not, if thou**
564 **Dismiss not her, when most thou needst her nigh,**
565 **By attributing overmuch to things**
566 **Less excellent, as thou thy self perceav'st.**
567 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,
568 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well
569 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
570 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thy self;
571 Then value: Oft times nothing profits more
572 Then self esteem, grounded on just and right
573 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,
574 The more she will acknowledge thee her Head,
575 And to realities yield all her shows:
576 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
577 So awful, that with honour thou maist love
578 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise,
579 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind
580 Is propagated seem such dear delight
581 Beyond all other, think the same voutsaf't
582 To Cattel and each Beast; which would not be
583 To them made common and divulg'd, if aught
584 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
585 The Soule of Man, or passion in him move,
586 What higher in her societie thou findest
587 Attractive, human, rational, love still;
588 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
589 Wherein true Love consists not; love refines
590 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his feat
591 In Reason, and is judicious, is the scale
592 By which to heav'nly Love thou maist ascend,
593 **Not sunk in carnal pleasure, for which cause**
594 **Among the Beasts no Mate for thee was found.**

595 To whom thus half abash't Adam repli'd.
596 Neither her out-side formd so fair, nor aught
597 In procreation common to all kindes
598 (Though higher of the genial Bed by far,
599 And with mysterious reverence I deem)
600 So much delights me as those graceful acts,
601 Those thousand decencies that daily flow
602 From all her words and actions mixt with Love
603 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
604 Union of Mind, or in us both one Soule;

605 Harmonie to behold in wedded pair
606 More grateful then harmonious sound to the eare.
607 Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose
608 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foild,
609 Who meet with various objects, from the sense
610 Variously representing; yet still free
611 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
612 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou saist
613 Leads up to Heav'n, is both the way and guide;
614 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask;
615 Love not the heav'nly Spirits, and how thir Love
616 Express they, by looks onely, or do they mix
617 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

618 To whom the Angel with a smile that glow'd
619 Celestial rosie red, Loves proper hue,
620 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st
621 Us happie, and without Love no happiness.
622 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st
623 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy
624 In eminence, and obstacle find none
625 Of membrane, joynt, or limb, exclusive barrs:
626 Easier then Air with Air, if Spirits embrace,
627 Total they mix, Union of Pure with Pure
628 Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need
629 As Flesh to mix with Flesh, or Soul with Soul.
630 But I can now no more; the parting Sun
631 Beyond the Earths green Cape and verdant Isles
632 Hesperean sets, my Signal to depart.
633 Be strong, live happie, and love, but first of all
634 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
635 His great command; take heed least Passion sway
636 Thy Judgement to do aught, which else free Will
637 Would not admit; thine and of all thy Sons
638 The weal or woe in thee is plac't; beware.
639 I in thy persevering shall rejoyce,
640 And all the Blest: stand fast; to stand or fall
641 Free in thine own Arbitrement it lies.
642 Perfet within, no outward aid require;
643 And all temptation to transgress repel.

644 So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus
645 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,
646 Go heavenly Guest, Ethereal Messenger,
647 Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore.
648 Gentle to me and affable hath been
649 Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
650 With grateful Memorie: thou to mankind
651 Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

652 So parted they, the Angel up to Heav'n
653 From the thick shade, and Adam to his Bowre.

BOOK IX.

1 No more of talk where God or Angel Guest
2 With Man, as with his Friend, familiar us'd
3 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
4 Rural repast, permitting him the while
5 Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change
6 Those Notes to Tragic; foul distrust, and breach
7 Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
8 And disobedience: On the part of Heav'n
9 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
10 **Anger and just rebuke**, and judgement giv'n,
11 That brought into this World **a world of woe**,
12 Sinne and her shadow Death, and Miserie
13 **Deaths Harbinger: Sad task, yet argument**
14 **Not less but more Heroic then the wrauth**
15 **Of stern Achilles on his Foe pursu'd**
16 **Thrice Fugitive about Troy Wall; or rage**
17 **Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd,**
18 **Or Neptun 's ire or Juno 's, that so long**
19 **Perplex'd the Greek and Cytherea 's Son;**
20 **If answerable style I can obtaine**
21 **Of my Celestial Patroness, who deignes**
22 **Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,**
23 **And dictates to me slumbring, or inspires**
24 **Easie my unpremeditated Verse:**
25 **Since first this Subject for Heroic Song**
26 **Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late;**
27 **Not sedulous by Nature to indite**
28 **Warrs, hitherto the onely Argument**
29 **Heroic deem'd, chief maistrie to dissect**
30 **With long and tedious havoc fabl'd Knights**
31 **In Battels feign'd; the better fortitude**
32 **Of Patience and Heroic Martyrdom**
33 **Unsung; or to describe Races and Games,**
34 **Or tilting Furniture, emblazon'd Shields,**
35 **Impreses quaint, Caparisons and Steeds;**
36 **Bases and tinsel Trappings, gorgious Knights**
37 **At Joust and Torneament; then marshal'd Feast**
38 **Serv'd up in Hall with Sewers, and Seneshals;**
39 **The skill of Artifice or Office mean,**
40 **Not that which justly gives Heroic name**
41 **To Person or to Poem. Mee of these**
42 **Nor skilld nor studious, higher Argument**
43 **Remaines, sufficient of it self to raise**
44 **That name, unless an age too late, or cold**

45 Climat, or Years damp my intended wing
46 Deprest, and much they may, if all be mine,
47 Not Hers who brings it nightly to my Ear.

48 The Sun was sunk, and after him the Starr
49 Of Hesperus, whose Office is to bring
50 Twilight upon the Earth, *short Arbiter*
51 *Twixt Day and Night*, and now from end to end
52 Nights Hemisphere had veild the Horizon round:
53 When Satan who late fled before the threats
54 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd
55 In meditated fraud and malice, bent
56 On mans destruction, maugre what might hap
57 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.
58 By Night he fled, and at Midnight return'd
59 From compassing the Earth, *cautious of day*,
60 *Since Uriel Regent of the Sun descri'd*
61 *His entrance, and forewarnd the Cherubim*
62 *That kept thir watch; thence full of anguish driv'n,*
63 *The space of seven continu'd Nights he rode*
64 *With darkness, thrice the Equinoctial Line*
65 *He circl'd, four times cross'd the Carr of Night*
66 *From Pole to Pole, traversing each Colure;*
67 *On the eighth return'd, and on the Coast averse*
68 *From entrance or Cherubic Watch, by stealth*
69 *Found unsuspected way.* There was a place,
70 Now not, though Sin, not Time, first wraught the change,
71 Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise
72 Into a Gulf shot under ground, till part
73 Rose up a Fountain by the Tree of Life;
74 In with the River sunk, and with it rose
75 Satan involv'd in rising Mist, then sought
76 Where to lie hid; *Sea he had searcht and Land*
77 *From Eden over Pontus, and the Poole*
78 *Mæotis, up beyond the River Ob;*
79 *Downward as farr Antarctic; and in length*
80 *West from Orontes to the Ocean barr'd*
81 *At Darien, thence to the Land where flowes*
82 *Ganges and Indus: thus the Orb he roam'd*
83 *With narrow search;* and with inspection deep
84 Consider'd every Creature, which of all
85 Most opportune might serve his Wiles, and found
86 The Serpent suttlest Beast of all the Field.
87 Him after long debate, *irresolute*
88 *Of thoughts revolv'd*, his final sentence chose
89 *Fit Vessel, fittest Imp of fraud, in whom*
90 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide
91 From sharpest sight: for in the wilie Snake,
92 Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,

93 As from his wit and native suttletie
94 Proceeding, which in other Beasts observ'd
95 Doubt might beget of Diabolic pow'r
96 Active within beyond the sense of brute.
97 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grieffe
98 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd:

99 O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not preferr'd
100 More justly, Seat worthier of Gods, as built
101 With second thoughts, reforming what was old!
102 For what God after better worse would build?
103 Terrestrial Heav'n, danc't round by other Heav'ns
104 That shine, yet bear thir bright officious Lamps,
105 Light above Light, for thee alone, as seems,
106 In thee concentrating all thir precious beams
107 Of sacred influence: As God in Heav'n
108 Is Center, yet extends to all, so thou
109 Centring receav'st from all those Orbs; in thee,
110 Not in themselves, all thir known vertue appears
111 Productive in Herb, Plant, and nobler birth
112 Of Creatures animate with gradual life
113 Of Growth, Sense, Reason, all summ'd up in Man.
114 With what delight could I have walkt thee round,
115 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange
116 Of Hill, and Vallie, Rivers, Woods and Plaines,
117 Now Land, now Sea, and Shores with Forrest crownd,
118 Rocks, Dens, and Caves; but I in none of these
119 Find place or refuge; and the more I see
120 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel
121 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
122 Of contraries; all good to me becomes
123 Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.
124 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n
125 To dwell, unless by maistring Heav'ns Supream;
126 Nor hope to be my self less miserable
127 By what I seek, but others to make such
128 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:
129 For onely in destroying I find ease
130 To my relentless thoughts; and him destroyd,
131 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
132 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
133 Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,
134 In wo then; that destruction wide may range:
135 To mee shall be the glorie sole among
136 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd
137 What he Almightye styl'd, six Nights and Days
138 Continu'd making, and who knows how long
139 Before had bin contriving, though perhaps
140 Not longer then since I in one Night freed

141 From servitude inglorious welnigh half
142 Th' Angelic Name, and thinner left the throng
143 Of his adorers: hee to be aveng'd,
144 And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,
145 Whether such vertue spent of old now faild
146 More Angels to Create, if they at least,
147 Are his Created, or to spite us more,
148 Determin'd to advance into our room
149 A Creature form'd of Earth, and him endow,
150 Exalted from so base original,
151 With Heav'nly spoils, our spoils: What he decreed
152 He effected; Man he made, and for him built
153 Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,
154 Him Lord pronounc'd, and, O indignitie!
155 Subjected to his service Angel wings,
156 And flaming Ministers to watch and tend
157 Thir earthy Charge: Of these the vigilance
158 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist
159 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and prie
160 In every Bush and Brake, where hap may finde
161 The Serpent sleeping, in whose mazie foulds
162 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
163 O foul descent! that I who erst contended
164 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constraind
165 Into a Beast, and mixt with bestial slime,
166 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
167 That to the hight of Deitie aspir'd;
168 But what will not Ambition and Revenge
169 Descend to? who aspires must down as low
170 As high he soard, obnoxious first or last
171 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
172 Bitter ere long back on it self recoiles;
173 Let it; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
174 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
175 Provokes my envie, this new Favorite
176 Of Heav'n, this Man of Clay, Son of despite,
177 Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd
178 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.

179 So saying, through each Thicket Danck or Drie,
180 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on
181 His midnight search, where soonest he might finde
182 The Serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found
183 In Labyrinth of many a round self-rowld,
184 His head the midst, well stor'd with suttile wiles:
185 Not yet in horrid Shade or dismal Den,
186 Nor nocent yet, but on the grassie Herbe
187 Fearless unfeard he slept: in at his Mouth
188 The Devil enterd, and his brutal sense,

189 In heart or head, possessing soon inspir'd
190 With act intelligential; but his sleep
191 Disturbd not, waiting close th' approach of Morn.

192 Now when as sacred Light began to dawne
193 In Eden on the humid Flours, that breathd
194 Thir morning incense, when all things that breath,
195 From th' Earths great Altar send up silent praise
196 To the Creator, and his Nostrils fill
197 With grateful Smell, forth came the human pair
198 And joind thir vocal Worship to the Quire
199 Of Creatures wanting voice, that done, partake
200 The season, prime for sweetest Sents and Aires:
201 Then commune how that day they best may ply
202 Thir growing work: for much thir work outgrew
203 The hands dispatch of two Gardning so wide.
204 And Eve first to her Husband thus began.

205 Adam, well may we labour still to dress
206 This Garden, still to tend Plant, Herb and Flour,
207 Our pleasant task enjoyn'd, but till more hands
208 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
209 Luxurious by restraint, what we by day
210 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,
211 One night or two with wanton growth derides
212 Tending to wilde. Thou therefore now advise
213 Or bear what to my minde first thoughts present,
214 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
215 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
216 The Woodbine round this Arbour, or direct
217 The clasping Ivie where to climb, while I
218 In yonder Spring of Roses intermixt
219 With Myrtle, find what to redress till Noon:
220 For while so near each other thus all day
221 Our taske we choose, what wonder if so near
222 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
223 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
224 Our dayes work brought to little, though begun
225 Early, and th' hour of Supper comes unearn'd.

226 To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.
227 Sole Eve, Associate sole, to me beyond
228 Compare above all living Creatures deare,
229 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts imployd
230 How we might best fulfill the work which here
231 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass
232 Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found
233 In Woman, then to studie household good,
234 And good workes in her Husband to promote.

235 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd
236 Labour as to debarr us when we need
237 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
238 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
239 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from Reason flow,
240 To brute deni'd, and are of Love the food,
241 Love not the lowest end of human life.
242 For not to irksom toile, but to delight
243 He made us, and delight to Reason joyn'd.
244 These paths & Bowers doubt not but our joynt hands
245 Will keep from Wilderness with ease, as wide
246 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
247 Assist us: But if much converse perhaps
248 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield.
249 For solitude somtimes is best societie,
250 And short retirement urge sweet returne.
251 But other doubt possesses me, least harm
252 Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou knowst
253 What hath bin warn'd us, what malicious Foe
254 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
255 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame
256 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand
257 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
258 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
259 Hopeless to circumvent us joynd, where each
260 To other speedie aide might lend at need;
261 Whether his first design be to withdraw
262 Our fealtie from God, or to disturb
263 Conjugal Love, **then which perhaps no bliss**
264 **Enjoy'd by us excites his envie more;**
265 **Or this, or worse,** leave not the faithful side
266 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.
267 The Wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
268 Safest and seemliest by her Husband staies,
269 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

270 To whom the Virgin Majestie of Eve,
271 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
272 With sweet austeer composure thus reply'd,
273 Ofspring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earths Lord,
274 That such an Enemie we have, who seeks
275 Our ruin, both by thee informd I learne,
276 And from the parting Angel over-heard
277 As in a shadie nook I stood behind,
278 Just then returnd at shut of Evening Flours.
279 But that thou shouldst my firmness therfore doubt
280 To God or thee, because we have a foe
281 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
282 His violence thou fearst not, being such,

283 As wee, not capable of death or paine,
284 Can either not receive, or can repell.
285 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers
286 Thy equal fear that my firm Faith and Love
287 Can by his fraud be shak'n or seduc't;
288 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy brest
289 Adam, missthougt of her to thee so dear?

290 To whom with healing words Adam replyd.
291 Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve,
292 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire:
293 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
294 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
295 Th' attempt it self, intended by our Foe.
296 For hee who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses
297 The tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd
298 Not incorruptible of Faith, not prooff
299 Against temptation: thou thy self with scorne
300 And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong,
301 Though ineffectual found: misdeem not then,
302 If such affront I labour to avert
303 From thee alone, which on us both at once
304 The Enemie, though bold, will hardly dare,
305 Or daring, first on mee th' assault shall light.
306 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;
307 Suttle he needs must be, who could seduce
308 Angels, nor think superfluous others aid.
309 I from the influence of thy looks receive
310 Access in every Vertue, in thy sight
311 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
312 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
313 Shame to be overcome or over-reacht
314 Would utmost vigor raise, and rais'd unite.
315 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel
316 When I am present, and thy trial choose
317 With me, best witness of thy Vertue tri'd.

318 So spake domestick Adam in his care
319 And Matrimonial Love; but Eve, who thought
320 Less attributed to her Faith sincere,
321 Thus her reply with accent sweet renewd.

322 If this be our condition, thus to dwell
323 In narrow circuit strait'nd by a Foe,
324 Suttle or violent, we not endu'd
325 Single with like defence, wherever met,
326 How are we happie, still in fear of harm?
327 But harm precedes not sin: onely our Foe
328 Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem

329 Of our integritie: his foul esteeme
330 Sticks no dishonor on our Front, but turns
331 Foul on himself; then wherefore shund or feard
332 By us? who rather double honour gaine
333 From his surmise prov'd false, find peace within,
334 Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.
335 And what is Faith, Love, Vertue unassaid
336 Alone, without exterior help sustaind?
337 Let us not then suspect our happie State
338 Left so imperfet by the Maker wise,
339 As not secure to single or combin'd,
340 Fraile is our happiness, if this be so,
341 And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd.

342 To whom thus Adam fervently repli'd.
343 O Woman, best are all things as the will
344 Of God ordain'd them, his creating hand
345 Nothing imperfet or deficient left
346 Of all that he Created, much less Man,
347 Or aught that might his happie State secure,
348 Secure from outward force; within himself
349 The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
350 Against his will he can receive no harme.
351 But God left free the Will, for what obeyes
352 Reason, is free, and Reason he made right,
353 But bid her well beware, and still erect,
354 Least by some faire appeering good surpris'd
355 She dictate false, and missinforme the Will
356 To do what God expresly hath forbid,
357 Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoynes,
358 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
359 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,
360 Since Reason not impossibly may meet
361 Some specious object by the Foe subornd,
362 And fall into deception unaware,
363 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.
364 Seek not temptation then, which to avoide
365 Were better, and most likelie if from mee
366 Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.
367 Wouldst thou approve thy constancie, approve
368 First thy obedience; th' other who can know,
369 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
370 But if thou think, trial unsought may finde
371 Us both securer then thus warn'd thou seemst,
372 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
373 Go in thy native innocence, relie
374 On what thou hast of vertue, summon all,
375 For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.

376 So spake the Patriarch of Mankinde, but Eve
 377 Persisted, yet submiss, though last, repli'd.

 378 With thy permission then, and thus forewarnd
 379 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 380 Touchd onely, that our trial, when least sought,
 381 May finde us both perhaps farr less prepar'd,
 382 The willinger I goe, nor much expect
 383 A Foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
 384 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.
 385 Thus saying, from her Husbands hand her hand
 386 Soft she withdrew, and like a Wood-Nymph light
 387 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's Traine,
 388 Betook her to the Groves, but Delia's self
 389 In gate surpass'd and Goddess-like deport,
 390 Though not as shee with Bow and Quiver armd,
 391 But with such Gardning Tools as Art yet rude,
 392 Guiltless of fire had formd, or Angels brought.
 393 To Pales, or Pomona thus adornd,
 394 Likeliest she seemd, Pomona when she fled
 395 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her Prime,
 396 Yet Virgin of Proserpina from Jove.
 397 Her long with ardent look his Eye pursu'd
 398 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.
 399 Oft he to her his charge of quick returne
 400 Repeated, shee to him as oft engag'd
 401 To be returnd by Noon amid the Bowre,
 402 And all things in best order to invite
 403 Noontide repast, or Afternoons repose.
 404 O much deceav'd, much failing, hapless Eve,
 405 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse!
 406 Thou never from that houre in Paradise
 407 Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose;
 408 Such ambush hid among sweet Flours and Shades
 409 Waited with hellish rancour imminent
 410 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
 411 Despoild of Innocence, of Faith, of Bliss.
 412 For now, and since first break of dawne the Fiend,
 413 Meer Serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 414 And on his Quest, where likeliest he might finde
 415 The onely two of Mankinde, but in them
 416 The whole included Race, his purposd prey.
 417 In Bowre and Field he sought, where any tuft
 418 Of Grove or Garden-Plot more pleasant lay,
 419 Thir tendance or Plantation for delight,
 420 By Fountain or by shadie Rivulet
 421 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 422 Eve separate, he wish'd, but not with hope
 423 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,

424 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 425 Veild in a Cloud of Fragrance, where she stood,
 426 Half spi'd, so thick the Roses bushing round
 427 About her glowd, oft stooping to support
 428 Each Flour of slender stalk, whose head though gay
 429 Carnation, Purple, Azure, or spect with Gold,
 430 Hung drooping unsustaind, them she upstaies
 431 Gently with Mirtle band, mindless the while,
 432 Her self, though fairest unsupported Flour,
 433 From her best prop so farr, and storm so nigh.
 434 Neerer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 435 Of stateliest Covert, Cedar, Pine, or Palme,
 436 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 437 Among thick-wov'n Arborets and Flours
 438 Imborderd on each Bank, the hand of Eve:
 439 Spot more delicious then those Gardens feign'd
 440 Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renownd
 441 Alcinous, host of old Laertes Son,
 442 Or that, not Mystic, where the Sapient King
 443 Held dalliance with his faire Egyptian Spouse.
 444 Much hee the Place admir'd, the Person more.
 445 As one who long in populous City pent,
 446 Where Houses thick and Sewers annoy the Aire,
 447 Forth issuing on a Summers Morn to breathe
 448 Among the pleasant Villages and Farmes
 449 Adjoynd, from each thing met conceaves delight,
 450 The smell of Grain, or tedded Grass, or Kine,
 451 Or Dairie, each rural sight, each rural sound;
 452 If chance with Nymphlike step fair Virgin pass,
 453 What pleasing seemd, for her now pleases more,
 454 She most, and in her look summs all Delight.
 455 Such Pleasure took the Serpent to behold
 456 This Flourie Plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 457 Thus earlie, thus alone; her Heav'nly forme
 458 Angelic, but more soft, and Feminine,
 459 Her graceful Innocence, her every Aire
 460 Of gesture or lest action overawd
 461 His Malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 462 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:
 463 That space the Evil one abstracted stood
 464 From his own evil, and for the time remaind
 465 Stupidly good, of enmitie disarm'd,
 466 Of guile, of hate, of envie, of revenge;
 467 But the hot Hell that always in him burnes,
 468 Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,
 469 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 470 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd: then soon
 471 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 472 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

473 Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what sweet
 474 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 475 What hither brought us, hate, not love, nor hope
 476 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste
 477 Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,
 478 Save what is in destroying, other joy
 479 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass
 480 Occasion which now smiles, behold alone
 481 The Woman, opportune to all attempts,
 482 Her Husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 483 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 484 And strength, of courage hautie, and of limb
 485 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould,
 486 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 487 I not; so much hath Hell debas'd, and paine
 488 Infebl'd me, to what I was in Heav'n.
 489 Shee fair, divinely fair, fit Love for Gods,
 490 Not terrible, though terrour be in Love
 491 And beautie, not approacht by stronger hate,
 492 Hate stronger, under shew of Love well feign'd,
 493 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

494 So spake the Enemy of Mankind, enclos'd
 495 In Serpent, Inmate bad, and toward Eve
 496 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 497 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his reare,
 498 Circular base of rising foulds, that tour'd
 499 Foul'd above fould a surging Maze, his Head
 500 Crested aloft, and Carbuncle his Eyes;
 501 With burnisht Neck of verdant Gold, erect
 502 Amidst his circling Spires, that on the grass
 503 Floted redundant: pleasing was his shape,
 504 And lovely, never since of Serpent kind
 505 Lovelier, not those that in Illyria chang'd
 506 Hermione and Cadmus, or the God
 507 In Epidaurus; nor to which transform'd
 508 Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline was seen,
 509 Hee with Olympias, this with her who bore
 510 Scipio the highth of Rome. With tract oblique
 511 At first, as one who sought access, but feard
 512 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.
 513 As when a Ship by skilful Steersman wrought
 514 Nigh Rivers mouth or Foreland, where the Wind
 515 Veres oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her Saile;
 516 So varied hee, and of his tortuous Traine
 517 Curld many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,
 518 To lure her Eye; shee busied heard the sound
 519 Of rusling Leaves, but minded not, as us'd
 520 To such disport before her through the Field,

521 From every Beast, more duteous at her call,
522 Then at Circean call the Herd disguis'd.
523 Hee boulder now, uncall'd before her stood;
524 But as in gaze admiring: Oft he bowd
525 His turret Crest, and sleek enamel'd Neck,
526 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
527 His gentle dumb expression turnd at length
528 The Eye of Eve to mark his play; he glad
529 Of her attention gaind, with Serpent Tongue
530 Organic, or impulse of vocal Air,
531 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

532 Wonder not, sovran Mistress, if perhaps
533 Thou canst, who art sole Wonder, much less arm
534 Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
535 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
536 Infatiate, I thus single, nor have feard
537 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
538 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker faire,
539 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
540 By gift, and thy Celestial Beautie adore
541 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld
542 Where universally admir'd; but here
543 In this enclosure wild, these Beasts among,
544 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
545 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,
546 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen
547 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd
548 By Angels numberless, thy daily Train.

549 So glaz'd the Tempter, and his Proem tun'd;
550 Into the Heart of Eve his words made way,
551 Though at the voice much marveling; at length
552 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
553 What may this mean? Language of Man pronounc't
554 By Tongue of Brute, and human sense exprest?
555 The first at lest of these I thought deni'd
556 To Beasts, whom God on thir Creation-Day
557 Created mute to all articulat sound;
558 The latter I demurre, for in thir looks
559 Much reason, and in thir actions oft appeers.
560 Thee, Serpent, sottlest beast of all the field
561 I knew, but not with human voice endu'd;
562 Redouble then this miracle, and say,
563 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how
564 To me so friendly grown above the rest
565 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?
566 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

567 To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.
568 Empress of this fair World, resplendent Eve,
569 **Easie to mee it is to tell thee all**
570 **What thou commandst, and right thou shouldst be obeyd:**
571 I was at first as other Beasts that graze
572 The trodden Herb, of abject thoughts and low,
573 As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd
574 Or Sex, and apprehended nothing high:
575 Till on a day roaving the field, I chanc'd
576 A goodly Tree farr distant to behold
577 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,
578 Ruddie and Gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
579 When from the boughes a savorie odour blow'n,
580 **Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense**
581 **Then smell of sweetest Fenel or the Teats**
582 **Of Ewe or Goat dropping with Milk at Eevn,**
583 Unsuckt of Lamb or Kid, that tend thir play.
584 To satisfie the sharp desire I had
585 **Of tasting those fair Apples, I resolv'd**
586 **Not to deferr; hunger and thirst at once,**
587 **Powerful perswaders, quick'nd at the scent**
588 **Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keene.**
589 About the mossie Trunk I wound me soon,
590 For high from ground the branches would require
591 Thy utmost reach or Adams: Round the Tree
592 All other Beasts that saw, with like desire
593 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
594 Amid the Tree now got, **where plenty hung**
595 **Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill**
596 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
597 At Feed or Fountain never had I found.
598 Sated at length, ere long I might perceave
599 Strange alteration in me, to degree
600 Of Reason in my inward Powers, and Speech
601 Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
602 Thenceforth to Speculations high or deep
603 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
604 Consider'd all things visible in Heav'n,
605 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good;
606 But all that fair and good in thy Divine
607 Semblance, and in thy Beauties heav'nly Ray
608 United I beheld; no Fair to thine
609 Equivalent or second, which compel'd
610 Mee thus, though importune perhaps, to come
611 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
612 Sovran of Creatures, universal Dame.

613 So talk'd the spirited sly Snake; and Eve
614 Yet more amaz'd unwarie thus reply'd.

615 Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
616 The vertue of that Fruit, in thee first prov'd:
617 But say, where grows the Tree, from hence how far?
618 For many are the Trees of God that grow
619 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
620 To us, in such abundance lies our choice,
621 As leaves a greater store of Fruit untoucht,
622 Still hanging incorruptible, till men
623 Grow up to thir provision, and more hands
624 Help to disburden Nature of her Bearth.

625 To whom the wilie Adder, blithe and glad.
626 Empress, the way is readie, and not long,
627 Beyond a row of Myrtles, on a Flat,
628 Fast by a Fountain, one small Thicket past
629 Of blowing Myrrh and Balme; if thou accept
630 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

631 Lead then, said Eve. Hee leading swiftly rowld
632 In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,
633 To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
634 Bright'ns his Crest, as when a wandring Fire,
635 Compact of unctuous vapor, which the Night
636 Condenses, and the cold invirons round,
637 Kindl'd through agitation to a Flame,
638 Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends
639 Hovering and blazing with delusive Light,
640 Misleads th' amaz'd Night-wanderer from his way
641 To Boggs and Mires, and oft through Pond or Poole,
642 There swallow'd up and lost, from succour farr.
643 So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud
644 Led Eve our credulous Mother, to the Tree
645 Of prohibition, root of all our woe;
646 Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

647 Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
648 Fruitless to mee, though Fruit be here to excess,
649 The credit of whose vertue rest with thee,
650 Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.
651 But of this Tree we may not taste nor touch;
652 God so commanded, and left that Command
653 Sole Daughter of his voice; the rest, we live
654 Law to our selves, our Reason is our Law.

655 To whom the Tempter guilefully repli'd.
656 Indeed? hath God then said that of the Fruit
657 Of all these Garden Trees ye shall not eate,
658 Yet Lords declar'd of all in Earth or Aire?

659 To whom thus Eve yet sinless. Of the Fruit
660 Of each Tree in the Garden we may eate,
661 But of the Fruit of this fair Tree amidst
662 The Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eate
663 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, least ye die.

664 She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold
665 The Tempter, but with shew of Zeale and Love
666 To Man, and indignation at his wrong,
667 New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,
668 Fluctuats disturbd, yet comely and in act
669 Rais'd, as of som great matter to begin.
670 As when of old som Orator renound
671 In Athens or free Rome, where Eloquence
672 Flourishd, since mute, to som great cause address,
673 Stood in himself collected, while each part,
674 Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue,
675 Somtimes in highth began, as no delay
676 Of Preface brooking through his Zeal of Right.
677 So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown
678 The Tempter all impassiond thus began.

679 O Sacred, Wise, and Wisdom-giving Plant,
680 Mother of Science, Now I feel thy Power
681 Within me cleere, not onely to discern
682 Things in thir Causes, but to trace the wayes
683 Of highest Agents, deemd however wise.
684 Queen of this Universe, doe not believe
685 Those rigid threats of Death; ye shall not Die:
686 How should ye? by the Fruit? it gives you Life
687 To Knowledge? By the Threatner, look on mee,
688 Mee who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
689 And life more perfet have attaind then Fate
690 Meant mee, by ventring higher then my Lot.
691 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast
692 Is open? or will God incense his ire
693 For such a petty Trespass, and not praise
694 Rather your dauntless vertue, whom the pain
695 Of Death denounc't, whatever thing Death be,
696 Deterred not from atchieving what might leade
697 To happier life, knowledge of Good and Evil;
698 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
699 Be real, why not known, since easier shunnd?
700 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;
701 Not just, not God; not feard then, nor obeyd:
702 Your feare it self of Death removes the feare.
703 Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,
704 Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
705 His worshippers; he knows that in the day

706 Ye Eate thereof, your Eyes that seem so cleere,
707 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
708 Op'nd and cleerd, and ye shall be as Gods,
709 Knowing both Good and Evil as they know.
710 That ye should be as Gods, since I as Man,
711 Internal Man, is but proportion meet,
712 I of brute human, yee of human Gods.
713 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
714 Human, to put on Gods, death to be wisht,
715 Though threat'nd, which no worse then this can bring.
716 And what are Gods that Man may not become
717 As they, participating God-like food?
718 The Gods are first, and that advantage use
719 On our belief, that all from them proceeds;
720 I question it, for this fair Earth I see,
721 Warm'd by the Sun, producing every kind,
722 Them nothing: If they all things, who enclos'd
723 Knowledge of Good and Evil in this Tree,
724 That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains
725 Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies
726 Th' offence, that Man should thus attain to know?
727 What can your knowledge hurt him, or this Tree
728 Impart against his will if all be his?
729 Or is it envie, and can envie dwell
730 In heav'nly breasts? these, these and many more
731 Causes import your need of this fair Fruit.
732 Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste.

733 He ended, and his words replete with guile
734 Into her heart too easie entrance won:
735 Fixt on the Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold
736 Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
737 Yet rung of his perswasive words, impregn'd
738 With Reason, to her seeming, and with Truth;
739 Mean while the hour of Noon drew on, and wak'd
740 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell
741 So savorie of that Fruit, which with desire,
742 Inclivable now grown to touch or taste,
743 Sollicited her longing eye; yet first
744 Pausing a while, thus to her self she mus'd.

745 Great are thy Vertues, doubtless, best of Fruits.
746 Though kept from Man, and worthy to be admir'd,
747 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay
748 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
749 The Tongue not made for Speech to speak thy praise:
750 Thy praise hee also who forbids thy use,
751 Conceales not from us, naming thee the Tree
752 Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;

753 Forbids us then to taste, but his forbidding
754 Commends thee more, while it inferrs the good
755 By thee communicated, and our want:
756 For good unknown, sure is not had, or had
757 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
758 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
759 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?
760 Such prohibitions binde not, But if Death
761 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
762 Our inward freedom? In the day we eat
763 Of this fair Fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
764 How dies the Serpent? hee hath eat'n and lives,
765 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
766 Irrational till then. For us alone
767 Was death invented? or to us deni'd
768 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?
769 For Beasts it seems: yet that one Beast which first
770 Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy
771 The good befall'n him, Author unsuspect,
772 Friendly to man, farr from deceit or guile.
773 What fear I then, rather what know to feare
774 Under this ignorance of good and Evil,
775 Of God or Death, of Law or Penaltie?
776 Here grows the Cure of all, this Fruit Divine,
777 Fair to the Eye, inviting to the Taste,
778 Of vertue to make wise: what hinders then
779 To reach, and feed at once both Bodie and Mind?

780 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour
781 Forth reaching to the Fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:
782 Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat
783 Sighing through all her Works gave signs of woe,
784 That all was lost. Back to the Thicket slunk
785 The guiltie Serpent, and well might, for Eve
786 Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else
787 Regarded, such delight till then, as seemd,
788 In Fruit she never tasted, whether true
789 Or fansied so, through expectation high
790 Of knowledg, nor was God-head from her thought.
791 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,
792 And knew not eating Death: Satiated at length,
793 And hight'nd as with Wine, jocond and boon,
794 Thus to her self she pleasingly began.

795 O Sovran, vertuous, precious of all Trees
796 In Paradise, of operation blest
797 To Sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,
798 And thy fair Fruit let hang, as to no end
799 Created; but henceforth my early care,

800 Not without Song, each Morning, and due praise
801 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
802 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
803 Till dieted by thee I grow mature
804 In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know;
805 **Though others envie what they cannot give;**
806 **For had the gift bin theirs, it had not here**
807 **Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,**
808 Best guide; not following thee, I had remaind
809 In ignorance, thou op'nst Wisdoms way,
810 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.
811 And I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,
812 High and remote to see from thence distinct
813 Each thing on Earth; **and other care perhaps**
814 **May have diverted from continual watch**
815 **Our great Forbidder, safe with all his Spies**
816 **About him.** But to Adam in what sort
817 Shall I appeer? shall I to him make known
818 As yet my change, and give him to partake
819 Full happiness with mee, or rather not,
820 But keep the odds of Knowledge in my power
821 Without Copartner? so to add what wants
822 In Femal Sex, the more to draw his Love,
823 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
824 A thing not undesireable, sometime
825 Superior; for inferior who is free?
826 This may be well: but what if God have seen,
827 And Death ensue? then I shall be no more,
828 And Adam wedded to another Eve,
829 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
830 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve,
831 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:
832 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
833 I could endure, without him live no life.

834 So saying, from the Tree her step she turnd,
835 But first low Reverence don, as to the power
836 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd
837 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd
838 From Nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while
839 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
840 Of choicest Flours a Garland to adorne
841 Her Tresses, and her rural labours crown,
842 **As Reapers oft are wont thir Harvest Queen.**
843 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
844 Solace in her return, so long delay'd;
845 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
846 Misgave him; hee the faultring measure felt;
847 And forth to meet her went, the way she took

848 That Morn when first they parted; by the Tree
849 Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,
850 Scarce from the Tree returning; in her hand
851 A bough of fairest fruit that downie smil'd,
852 New gatherd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
853 To him she hasted, in her face excuse
854 Came Prologue, and Apologie to prompt,
855 Which with bland words at will she thus address.

856 Hast thou not wonderd, Adam, at my stay?
857 Thee I have misst, and thought it long, depriv'd
858 Thy presence, agonie of love till now
859 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
860 Mean I to trie, what rash untri'd I sought,
861 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
862 Hath bin the cause, and wonderful to heare:
863 This Tree is not as we are told, a Tree
864 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
865 Op'ning the way, but of Divine effect
866 To open Eyes, and make them Gods who taste;
867 And hath bin tasted such: the Serpent wise,
868 Or not restraind as wee, or not obeying,
869 Hath eat'n of the fruit, and is become,
870 Not dead, as we are threatn'd, but thenceforth
871 Endu'd with human voice and human sense,
872 Reasoning to admiration, and with mee
873 Perswasively hath so prevaild, that I
874 Have also tasted, and have also found
875 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine Eyes,
876 Dimm erst, dilated Spirits, ampler Heart,
877 And growing up to Godhead; which for thee
878 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
879 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
880 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.
881 Thou therefore also taste, that equal Lot
882 May joyne us, equal Joy, as equal Love;
883 Least thou not tasting, different degree
884 Disjoyne us, and I then too late renounce
885 Deitie for thee, when Fate will not permit.

886 Thus Eve with Countnance blithe her storie told;
887 But in her Cheek distemper flushing glowd.
888 On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard
889 The fatal Trespass don by Eve, amaz'd,
890 Astonied stood and Blank, while horror chill
891 Ran through his veins, and all his joynts relax'd;
892 From his slack hand the Garland wreath'd for Eve
893 Down drop'd, and all the faded Roses shed:
894 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length

895 First to himself he inward silence broke.

896 O fairest of Creation, last and best
897 Of all Gods works, Creature in whom excell'd
898 Whatever can to sight or thought be formd,
899 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
900 How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,
901 Defac't, deflour'd, and now to Death devote?
902 Rather how hast thou yeelded to transgress
903 The strict forbiddance, how to violate
904 The sacred Fruit forbidd'n! som cursed fraud
905 Of Enemie hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,
906 And mee with thee hath ruind, for with thee
907 Certain my resolution is to Die;
908 How can I live without thee, how forgoe
909 Thy sweet Converse and Love so dearly joyn'd,
910 To live again in these wilde Woods forlorn?
911 Should God create another Eve, and I
912 Another Rib afford, yet loss of thee
913 Would never from my heart; no no, I feel
914 The Link of Nature draw me: Flesh of Flesh,
915 Bone of my Bone thou art, and from thy State
916 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

917 So having said, as one from sad dismay
918 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbd
919 Submitting to what seemd remediless,
920 Thus in calm mood his Words to Eve he turnd.

921 Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventrous Eve,
922 And peril great provok't, who thus hath dar'd
923 Had it been onely coveting to Eye
924 That sacred Fruit, sacred to abstinence,
925 Much more to taste it under banne to touch.
926 But past who can recall, or don undoe?
927 Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate, yet so
928 Perhaps thou shalt not Die, perhaps the Fact
929 Is not so hainous now, foretasted Fruit,
930 Profan'd first by the Serpent, by him first
931 Made common and unhallowd ere our taste;
932 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,
933 Lives, as thou saidst, and gaines to live as Man
934 Higher degree of Life, inducement strong
935 To us, as likely tasting to attaine
936 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
937 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-gods.
938 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
939 Though threatning, will in earnest so destroy
940 Us his prime Creatures, dignifi'd so high,

941 Set over all his Works, which in our Fall,
942 For us created, needs with us must faile,
943 **Dependent made; so God shall uncreate,**
944 **Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour loose,**
945 **Not well conceav'd of God, who though his Power**
946 **Creation could repeate, yet would be loath**
947 **Us to abolish, least the Adversary**
948 **Triumph and say; Fickle their State whom God**
949 **Most Favors, who can please him long; Mee first**
950 **He ruind, now Mankind; whom will he next?**
951 **Matter of scorne, not to be given the Foe,**
952 However I with thee have fixt my Lot,
953 Certain to undergoe like doom, if Death
954 Consort with thee, Death is to mee as Life;
955 So forcible within my heart I feel
956 The Bond of Nature draw me to my owne,
957 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;
958 Our State cannot be severd, we are one,
959 One Flesh; to loose thee were to loose my self.

960 So Adam, and thus Eve to him repli'd.
961 O glorious trial of exceeding Love,
962 Illustrious evidence, example high!
963 Ingaging me to emulate, but short
964 Of thy perfection, how shall I attaine,
965 Adam, from whose deare side I boast me sprung,
966 And gladly of our Union heere thee speak,
967 One Heart, one Soul in both; whereof good prooff
968 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
969 Rather then Death or aught then Death more dread
970 Shall separate us, linkt in Love so deare,
971 To undergoe with mee one Guilt, one Crime,
972 If any be, of tasting this fair Fruit,
973 Whose vertue, for of good still good proceeds,
974 Direct, or by occasion hath presented
975 This happie trial of thy Love, which else
976 So eminently never had bin known
977 Were it I thought Death menac't would ensue
978 This my attempt, I would sustain alone
979 The worst, and not perswade thee rather die
980 Deserted, then oblige thee with a fact
981 Pernicious to thy Peace, chiefly assur'd
982 Remarkably so late of thy so true,
983 So faithful Love unequald; but I feel
984 Farr otherwise th' event, not Death, but Life
985 Augmented, op'nd Eyes, new Hopes, new Joyes,
986 Taste so Divine, that what of sweet before
987 Hath toucht my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
988 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,

989 And fear of Death deliver to the Windes.
990 So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy
991 Tenderly wept, much won that he his Love
992 Had so enobl'd, as of choice to incurr
993 Divine displeasure for her sake, or Death.
994 In recompence (for such compliance bad
995 Such recompense best merits) from the bough
996 She gave him of that fair enticing Fruit
997 With liberal hand: he scrupl'd not to eat
998 Against his better knowledge, not deceav'd,
999 But fondly overcome with Femal charm.
1000 Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again
1001 In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,
1002 Skie lowr'd and muttering Thunder, som sad drops
1003 Wept at compleating of the mortal Sin
1004 Original; while Adam took no thought,
1005 Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate
1006 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe
1007 Him with her lov'd societie, that now
1008 As with new Wine intoxicated both
1009 They swim in mirth, and fansie that they feel
1010 Divinitie, within them breeding wings
1011 Wherewith to scorne the Earth: but that false Fruit
1012 Farr other operation first displaid,
1013 Carnal desire enflaming, hee on Eve
1014 Began to cast lascivious Eyes, she him
1015 As wantonly repaid; in Lust they burne:
1016 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move,

1017 Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
1018 And elegant, of Sapience no small part,
1019 Since to each meaning savour me apply,
1020 And Palate call judicious; I the praise
1021 Yeild thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.
1022 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
1023 From this delightful Fruit, nor known till now
1024 True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be
1025 In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd,
1026 For this one Tree had bin forbidden ten.
1027 But come, so well refresh't, now let us play,
1028 As meet is, after such delicious Fare;
1029 For never did thy Beautie since the day
1030 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd
1031 With all perfections, so enflame my sense
1032 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
1033 Then ever, bountie of this vertuous Tree.

1034 So said he, and forbore not glance or toy

1035 Of amorous intent, well understood
 1036 Of Eve, whose Eye darted contagious Fire.
 1037 Her hand he seis'd, and to a shadie bank,
 1038 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowl'd
 1039 He led her nothing loath; Flours were the Couch,
 1040 Pansies, and Violets, and Asphodel,
 1041 And Hyacinth, Earths freshest softest lap.
 1042 There they thir fill of Love and Loves disport
 1043 Took largely, of thir mutual guilt the Seale,
 1044 The solace of thir sin, till dewie sleep
 1045 Oppress'd them, wearied with thir amorous play.
 1046 Soon as the force of that fallacious Fruit,
 1047 That with exhilarating vapour bland
 1048 About thir spirits had plaid, and inmost powers
 1049 Made erre, was now exhal'd, and grosser sleep
 1050 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams
 1051 Encumberd, now had left them, up they rose
 1052 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 1053 Soon found thir Eyes how op'nd, and thir minds
 1054 How dark'nd; innocence, that as a veile
 1055 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gon,
 1056 Just confidence, and native righteousness
 1057 And honour from about them, naked left
 1058 To guiltie shame **hee cover'd, but his Robe**
 1059 **Uncover'd more,** so rose the Danite strong
 1060 Herculean Samson from the Harlot-lap
 1061 **Of Philistean Dalilah, and wak'd**
 1062 Shorn of his strength, They destitute and bare
 1063 Of all thir vertue: silent, and in face
 1064 Confounded long they sate, as struck'n mute,
 1065 Till Adam, though not less then Eve abash't.
 1066 At length gave utterance to these words constraind.

 1067 O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give eare
 1068 To that false Worm, of whomsoever taught
 1069 To counterfet Mans voice, true in our Fall,
 1070 False in our promis'd Rising; since our Eyes
 1071 Op'nd we find indeed, and find we know
 1072 Both Good and Evil, Good lost, and Evil got,
 1073 Bad Fruit of Knowledge, if this be to know,
 1074 Which leaves us naked thus, of Honour void,
 1075 Of Innocence, of Faith, of Puritie,
 1076 Our wonted Ornaments now soild and staind,
 1077 And in our Faces evident the signes
 1078 Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;
 1079 Even shame, the last of evils; of the first
 1080 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face
 1081 Henceforth of God or Angel, earst with joy
 1082 And rapture so oft beheld? those heav'nly shapes

1083 Will dazle now this earthly, with thir blaze
1084 Insufferably bright. O might I here
1085 In solitude live savage, in some glade
1086 Obscur'd, where highest Woods impenetrable
1087 To Starr or Sun-light, spread thir umbrage broad
1088 And brown as Evening: Cover me ye Pines,
1089 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs
1090 Hide me, where I may never see them more.
1091 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise
1092 What best may from the present serve to hide
1093 The Parts of each for other, that seem most
1094 To shame obnoxious, and **unseemliest seen,**
1095 **Some Tree whose broad smooth Leaves together sowd,**
1096 **And girded on our loyns,** may cover round
1097 Those middle parts, that this new commer, Shame,
1098 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean,

1099 So counsel'd hee, and both together went
1100 Into the thickest Wood, there soon they chose
1101 The Figtree, not that kind for Fruit renown'd,
1102 But such as at this day to Indians known
1103 In Malabar or Decan spreads her Armes
1104 Braunching so broad and long, that in the ground
1105 The bended Twigs take root, and Daughters grow
1106 About the Mother Tree, a Pillard shade
1107 High overarch't, and echoing Walks between;
1108 **There oft the Indian Herdsman shunning heate**
1109 **Shelters in coole, and tends his pasturing Herds**
1110 **At Loopholes cut through thickest shade:** Those Leaves
1111 They gatherd, **broad as Amazonian Targe,**
1112 And **with what skill they had,** together sowd,
1113 To gird thir waste, vain Covering if to hide
1114 Thir guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike
1115 To that first naked Glorie. Such of late
1116 Columbus found th' American so girt
1117 With featherd Cincture, naked else and wilde
1118 Among the Trees on Iles and woodie Shores.
1119 Thus fenc't, and as they thought, thir shame in part
1120 Coverd, but not at rest or ease of Mind,
1121 They sate them down to weep, nor onely Teares
1122 Rained at thir Eyes, but high Winds worse within
1123 Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,
1124 Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord and shook sore
1125 Thir inward State of Mind, calm Region once
1126 And full of Peace, now tost and turbulent:
1127 For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will
1128 Heard not her lore, both in subjection now
1129 To sensual Appetite, who from beneath
1130 Usurping over sovran Reason claimd

1131 Superior sway: from thus distemperd brest,
1132 Adam, estrang'd in look and alterd stile,
1133 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renewd.

1134 Would thou hadst heark'nd to my words, and stai'd
1135 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
1136 Desire of wandring this unhappie Morn,
1137 I know not whence possessd thee; we had then
1138 Remaind still happie, not as now, despoild
1139 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.
1140 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve
1141 The Faith they owe; when earnestly they seek
1142 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to faile.

1143 To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus Eve.
1144 What words have past thy Lips, Adam severe,
1145 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will
1146 Of wandring, as thou call'st it, which who knows
1147 But might as ill have happ'nd thou being by,
1148 Or to thy self perhaps: hadst thou been there,
1149 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
1150 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake;
1151 No ground of enmitie between us known,
1152 Why hee should mean me ill, or seek to harme.
1153 Was I to have never parted from thy side?
1154 As good have grown there still a liveless Rib.
1155 Being as I am, why didst not thou the Head
1156 Command me absolutely not to go,
1157 Going into such danger as thou saidst?
1158 Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,
1159 Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
1160 Hadst thou bin firm and fixt in thy dissent,
1161 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with mee.

1162 To whom then first incenst Adam repli'd,
1163 Is this the Love, is this the recompence
1164 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, exprest
1165 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,
1166 Who might have liv'd and joyd immortal bliss,
1167 Yet willingly chose rather Death with thee:
1168 And am I now upbraided, as the cause
1169 Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,
1170 It seems, in thy restraint: what could I more?
1171 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold
1172 The danger, and the lurking Enemy
1173 That lay in wait; beyond this had bin force,
1174 And force upon free will hath here no place.
1175 But confidence then bore thee on, secure
1176 Either to meet no danger, or to finde

1177 Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
1178 I also err'd in overmuch admiring
1179 What seemd in thee so perfet, that I thought
1180 No evil durst attempt thee, but I rue
1181 That error now, which is become my crime,
1182 And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall
1183 Him who to worth in Women overtrusting
1184 Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook,
1185 And left to her self, if evil thence ensue,
1186 Shee first his weak indulgence will accuse.

1187 Thus they in mutual accusation spent
1188 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
1189 And of thir vain contest appeer'd no end.

BOOK X.

1 Meanwhile the hainous and despightfull act
2 Of Satan done in Paradise, **and how**
3 **Hee in the Serpent, had perverted Eve,**
4 **Her Husband shee, to taste the fataall fruit,**
5 Was known in Heav'n; for what can scape the Eye
6 Of God All-seeing, **or deceive his Heart**
7 **Omniscient,** who in all things wise and just,
8 Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the minde
9 Of Man, with strength entire, and free will arm'd,
10 Complete to have discover'd and repulst
11 Whatever wiles of Foe or seeming Friend.
12 **For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd**
13 **The high Injunction not to taste that Fruit,**
14 **Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,**
15 **Incurr'd, what could they less, the penaltie,**
16 **And manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.**
17 Up into Heav'n from Paradise in haste
18 Th' Angelic Guards ascended, mute and sad
19 For Man, for of his state by this they knew,
20 Much wondring how the suttle Fiend had stoln
21 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news
22 From Earth arriv'd **at Heaven Gate, displeas'd**
23 **All were who heard,** dim sadness did not spare
24 That time Celestial visages, yet mixt
25 With pitie, violated not thir bliss.
26 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes
27 Th' ethereal People ran, to hear and know
28 How all befell: they towards the Throne Supream
29 Accountable made haste to make appear
30 With righteous plea, thir utmost vigilance,
31 And easily approv'd; when the most High

32 Eternal Father from his secret Cloud,
33 Amidst in Thunder utter'd thus his voice.

34 Assembl'd Angels, and ye Powers return'd
35 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,
36 Nor troubl'd at these tidings from the Earth,
37 Which your sincerest care could not prevent,
38 Foretold so lately *what would come to pass,*
39 *When first this Tempter cross'd the Gulf from Hell.*
40 *I told ye then he should prevail and speed*
41 *On his bad Errand, Man should be seduc't*
42 *And flatter'd out of all, believing lies*
43 *Against his Maker; no Decree of mine*
44 *Concurring to necessitate his Fall,*
45 *Or touch with lightest moment of impulse*
46 *His free Will, to her own inclining left*
47 *In eevn scale. But fall'n he is, and now*
48 *What rests but that the mortal Sentence pass*
49 *On his transgression Death denounc't that day,*
50 *Which he presumes already vain and void,*
51 *Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,*
52 *By some immediate stroak; but soon shall find*
53 *Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.*
54 Justice shall not return as bountie scorn'd.
55 But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee
56 Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd
57 All Judgement whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell.
58 Easie it might be seen that I intend
59 Mercie colleague with Justice, sending thee
60 Mans Friend, his Mediator, his design'd
61 Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntarie,
62 And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fall'n.

63 So spake the Father, and unfolding bright
64 Toward the right hand his Glorie, on the Son
65 Blaz'd forth unclouded Deitie; he full
66 Resplendent all his Father manifest
67 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd milde.

68 Father Eternal, thine is to decree,
69 Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will
70 Supream, that thou in mee thy Son belov'd
71 Mayst ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge
72 *On Earth these thy transgressors, but thou knowst,*
73 *Whoever judg'd, the worst on mee must light,*
74 *When time shall be, for so I undertook*
75 *Before thee; and not repenting, this obtaine*
76 *Of right, that I may mitigate thir doom*
77 *On me deriv'd, yet I shall temper so*

78 Justice with Mercie, as may illustrate most
79 Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.
80 Attendance none shall need, nor Train, where none
81 Are to behold the Judgment, but the judg'd,
82 Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,
83 Convict by flight, and Rebel to all Law
84 Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.

85 Thus saying, from his radiant Seat he rose
86 Of high collateral glorie: him Thrones and Powers,
87 Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant
88 Accompanied to Heaven Gate, from whence
89 Eden and all the Coast in prospect lay.
90 Down he descended strait; the speed of Gods
91 Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.
92 Now was the Sun in Western cadence low
93 From Noon, and gentle Aires due at thir hour
94 To fan the Earth now wak'd, and usher in
95 The Eevning coole when he from wrauth more coole
96 Came the mild Judge and Intercessor both
97 To sentence Man: the voice of God they heard
98 Now walking in the Garden, by soft windes
99 Brought to thir Ears, while day declin'd, they heard,
100 And from his presence hid themselves among
101 The thickest Trees, both Man and Wife, till God
102 Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.

103 Where art thou Adam, wont with joy to meet
104 My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,
105 Not pleas'd, thus entertaind with solitude,
106 Where obvious dutie erewhile appear'd unsaught:
107 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
108 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.
109 He came, and with him Eve, more loth, though first
110 To offend, discount'nanc't both, and discompos'd;
111 Love was not in thir looks, either to God
112 Or to each other, but apparent guilt,
113 And shame, and perturbation, and despaire,
114 Anger, and obstinacie, and hate, and guile.
115 Whence Adam faultring long, thus answer'd brief.

116 I heard thee in the Garden, and of thy voice
117 Affraid, being naked, hid my self. To whom
118 The gracious Judge without revile repli'd.

119 My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,
120 But still rejoyc't, how is it now become
121 So dreadful to thee? that thou art naked, who
122 Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the Tree

123 Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?
124 To whom thus Adam sore beset repli'd.
125 O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand
126 Before my Judge, either to undergoe
127 My self the total Crime, or to accuse
128 My other self, the partner of my life;
129 Whose failing, while her Faith to me remains,
130 I should conceal, and not expose to blame
131 By my complaint; but strict necessitie
132 Subdues me; and calamitous constraint
133 Least on my head both sin and punishment,
134 However insupportable, be all
135 Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet thou
136 Wouldst easily detect what I conceale.
137 This Woman whom thou mad'st to be my help,
138 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,
139 So fit, so acceptable, so Divine,
140 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
141 And what she did, whatever in it self,
142 Her doing seem'd to justifie the deed;
143 Shee gave me of the Tree, and I did eate.

144 To whom the sovran Presence thus repli'd.
145 Was shee thy God, that her thou didst obey
146 Before his voice, or was shee made thy guide,
147 Superior, or but equal, that to her
148 Thou did'st resigne thy Manhood, and the Place
149 Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,
150 And for thee, whose perfection farr excell'd
151 Hers in all real dignitie: Adorn'd
152 Shee was indeed, and lovely to attract
153 Thy Love, not thy Subjection, and her Gifts
154 Were such as under Government well seem'd,
155 Unseemly to beare rule, which was thy part
156 And person, had'st thou known thy self aright.

157 So having said, he thus to Eve in few:
158 Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?

159 To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
160 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge
161 Bold or loquacious, thus abasht repli'd.

162 The Serpent me beguil'd and I did eate.
163 Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
164 To Judgement he proceeded on th' accus'd
165 Serpent though brute, unable to transferre
166 The Guilt on him who made him instrument

167 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
168 Of his Creation; justly then accurst,
169 As vitiated in Nature: more to know
170 Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew)
171 Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last
172 To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,
173 Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:
174 And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

175 Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst
176 Above all Cattle, each Beast of the Field;
177 Upon thy Belly groveling thou shalt goe,
178 And dust shalt eat all the dayes of thy Life.
179 Between Thee and the Woman I will put
180 Enmitie, and between thine and her Seed;
181 Her Seed shall bruse thy head, thou bruise his heel.

182 So spake this Oracle, then verifi'd
183 When Jesus son of Mary second Eve,
184 Saw Satan fall like Lightning down from Heav'n,
185 Prince of the Aire; then rising from his Grave
186 Spoild Principalities and Powers, triumpht
187 In open shew, and with ascention bright
188 Captivity led captive through the Aire,
189 The Realm it self of Satan long usurpt,
190 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;
191 Eevn hee who now foretold his fatal bruise,
192 And to the Woman thus his Sentence turn'd.

193 Thy sorrow I will greatly multiplie
194 By thy Conception; Children thou shalt bring
195 In sorrow forth, and to thy Husbands will
196 Thine shall submit, hee over thee shall rule.

197 On Adam last thus judgement he pronounc'd.
198 Because thou hast heark'nd to the voice of thy Wife,
199 And eaten of the Tree concerning which
200 I charg'd thee, saying: Thou shalt not eate thereof,
201 Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow
202 Shalt eate thereof all the days of thy Life;
203 Thorns also and Thistles it shall bring thee forth
204 Unbid, and thou shalt eate th' Herb of th' Field,
205 In the sweat of thy Face shalt thou eat Bread,
206 Till thou return unto the ground, for thou
207 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy Birth,
208 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust returne.

209 So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent,
210 And th' instant stroke of Death denounc't that day

211 Remov'd farr off; then pittying how they stood
212 Before him naked to the aire, that now
213 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
214 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
215 As when he wash'd his servants feet so now
216 **As Father of his Familie** he clad
217 Thir nakedness with Skins of Beasts, **or slain,**
218 **Or as the Snake with youthful Coate repaid;**
219 **And thought not much to cloath his Enemies:**
220 Nor hee thir outward onely with the Skins
221 Of Beasts, but inward nakedness, much more
222 Opprobrious, with his Robe of righteousness,
223 Araying cover'd from his Fathers sight.
224 To him with swift ascent he up returnd,
225 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd
226 In glory as of old, to him appeas'd
227 All, though all-knowing, what had past with Man
228 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.
229 Meanwhile ere thus was sin'd and judg'd on Earth,
230 Within the Gates of Hell sate Sin and Death,
231 In counterview within the Gates, that now
232 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
233 Farr into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,
234 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

235 O Son, why sit we here each other viewing
236 Idlely, while Satan our great Author thrives
237 In other Worlds, and happier Seat provides
238 For us his ofspring deare? It cannot be
239 But that success attends him; if mishap,
240 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driv'n
241 **By his Avengers, since no place like this**
242 **Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.**
243 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
244 Wings growing, and Dominion giv'n me large
245 Beyond this Deep; whatever drawes me on,
246 Or sympathie, or som connatural force
247 Powerful at greatest distance to unite
248 With secret amity things of like kinde
249 By secretest conveyance. Thou my Shade
250 Inseparable must with mee along:
251 For Death from Sin no power can separate.
252 But least the difficultie of passing back
253 Stay his return perhaps over this Gulfe
254 Impassable, Impervious, let us try
255 Adventrous work, yet to thy power and mine
256 Not unagreeable, to found a path
257 Over this Maine from Hell to that new World
258 Where Satan now prevailes, a Monument

259 Of merit high to all th' infernal Host,
260 Easing thir passage hence, for intercourse,
261 Or transmigration, as thir lot shall lead.
262 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
263 By this new felt attraction and instinct.

264 Whom thus the meager Shadow answerd soon.
265 Goe whither Fate and inclination strong
266 Leads thee, I shall not lag behinde, nor erre
267 The way, thou leading, such a sent I draw
268 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
269 The savour of Death from all things there that live:
270 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest
271 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid;

272 So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
273 Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock
274 Of ravenous Fowl, though many a League remote,
275 Against the day of Battel, to a Field,
276 Where Armies lie encampt, come flying, lur'd
277 With sent of living Carcasses design'd
278 For death, the following day, in bloodie fight.
279 So sented the grim Feature, and upturn'd
280 His Nostril-wide into the murkie Air,
281 Sagacious of his Quarry from so farr.
282 Then Both from out Hell Gates into the waste
283 Wide Anarchie of Chaos damp and dark
284 Flew divers, and with Power (thir Power was great)
285 Hovering upon the Waters; what they met
286 Solid or slimie, as in raging Sea
287 Tost up and down, together crowded drove
288 From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell.
289 As when two Polar Winds blowing adverse
290 Upon the Cronian Sea, together drive
291 Mountains of Ice, that stop th' imagin'd way
292 Beyond Petsora Eastward, to the rich
293 Cathaian Coast. The aggregated Soyle
294 Death with his Mace petrifie, cold and dry,
295 As with a Trident smote, and fix't as firm
296 As Delos floating once; the rest his look
297 Bound with Gorgonian tigor not to move,
298 And with Asphaltic slime, broad as the Gate,
299 Deep to the Roots of Hell the gather'd beach
300 They fasten'd, and the Mole immense wrought on
301 Over the foaming deep high Archt, a Bridge
302 Of length prodigious joyning to the Wall
303 Immovable of this now senceless world
304 Forfeit to Death, from hence a passage broad,
305 Smooth, easie, inoffensive down to Hell.

306 So, if great things to small may be compar'd,
307 Xerxes, the Libertie of Greece to yoke,
308 From Susa his Momnonian Palace high
309 Came to the Sea, and over Hellespont
310 Bridging his way Europe with Asia joyn'd,
311 And scourg'd with many a stroak th' indignant waves.
312 Now had they brought the work by wondrous Art
313 Pontifical, a ridge of pendent Rock
314 Over the vext Abyss, following the track
315 Of Satan, to the self same place where hee
316 First lighted from his Wing, and landed safe
317 From out of Chaos to the out side bare
318 Of this round World: with Pinns of Adamant
319 And Chains they made all fast, too fast they made
320 And durable; and now in little space
321 The confines met of Emphyrean Heav'n
322 And of this World, and on the left hand Hell
323 With long reach interpos'd; three sev'ral wayes
324 In sight, to each of these three places led.
325 And now thir way to Earth they had descri'd,
326 To Paradise first tending, when behold
327 Satan in likeness of an Angel bright
328 Betwixt the Centaure and the Scorpion steering
329 His Zenith, while the Sun in Aries rose:
330 Disguis'd he came, but those his Children dear
331 Thir Parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
332 Hee after Eve seduc't, unminded slunk
333 Into the Wood fast by, and changing shape
334 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
335 By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded
336 Upon her Husband, saw thir shame that sought
337 Vain covertures; but when he saw descend
338 The Son of God to judge them terrifi'd
339 Hee fled, not hoping to escape, but shun
340 The present, fearing guiltie what his wrauth
341 Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd
342 By Night, and listening where the hapless Paire
343 Sate in thir sad discourse, and various plaint,
344 Thence gatherd his own doom, which understood
345 Not instant, but of future time. With joy
346 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,
347 And at the brink of Chaos, neer the foot
348 Of this new wondrous Pontifice, unhop't
349 Met who to meet him came, his Ofspring dear.
350 Great joy was at thir meeting, and at sight
351 Of that stupendious Bridge his joy encreas'd.
352 Long hee admiring stood, till Sin, his faire
353 Inchanting Daughter, thus the silence broke.

354 O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,
355 Thy Trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own,
356 Thou art thir Author and prime Architect:
357 For I no sooner in my Heart divin'd,
358 My Heart, which by a secret harmonie
359 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,
360 That thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, **which thy looks**
361 **Now also evidence**, but straight I felt
362 Though distant from thee Worlds between, yet felt
363 That I must after thee with this thy Son;
364 Such fatal consequence unites us three:
365 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,
366 Nor this unvoyageable Gulf obscure
367 Detain from following thy illustrious track.
368 Thou hast atchiev'd our libertie, confin'd
369 Within Hell Gates till now, thou us impow'rd
370 To fortifie thus farr, and overlay
371 With this portentous Bridge the dark Abyss.
372 Thine now is all this World, thy vertue hath won
373 What thy hands builded not, thy Wisdom gain'd
374 With odds what Warr hath lost, and sully aveng'd
375 Our foile in Heav'n; here thou shalt Monarch reign,
376 There didst not; there let him still Victor sway,
377 As Battel hath adjudg'd, from this new World
378 Retiring, by his own doom alienated,
379 And henceforth Monarchie with thee divide
380 Of all things parted by th' Empyreal bounds,
381 His Quadrature, from thy Orbicular World,
382 **Or trie thee now more dang'rous to his Throne.**

383 Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answerd glad.
384 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,
385 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the Race
386 Of Satan (for I glorie in the name,
387 Antagonist of Heav'ns Almighty King)
388 Amply have merited of me, of all
389 Th' infernal Empire, that so neer Heav'ns dore
390 Triumphal with triumphal act have met,
391 Mine with this glorious Work, **and made one Realm**
392 **Hell and this World, one Realm, one Continent**
393 **Of easie thorough-fare.** Therefore while I
394 Descend through Darkness, on your Rode with ease
395 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint
396 With these successes, and with them rejoyce,
397 You two this way, **among these numerous Orbs**
398 **All yours, right down** to Paradise descend;
399 There dwell and Reign in bliss, thence on the Earth
400 Dominion exercise and in the Aire,
401 Chiefly on Man, sole Lord of all declar'd,

402 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 403 My Substitutes I send ye, and Create
 404 Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might
 405 Issuing from mee: on your joynt vigor now
 406 My hold of this new Kingdom all depends,
 407 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.
 408 If your joynt power prevailes, th' affaires of Hell
 409 No detriment need feare, goe and be strong.

410 So saying he dismiss'd them, they with speed
 411 Thir course through thickest Constellations held
 412 Spreading thir bane; the blasted Starrs lookt wan,
 413 And Planets, Planet-strook, real Eclips
 414 Then sufferd. Th' other way Satan went down
 415 The Causey to Hell Gate; on either side
 416 Disparted Chaos over built exclaimd,
 417 And with rebounding surge the barrs assaild,
 418 That scorn'd his indignation: through the Gate,
 419 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,
 420 And all about found desolate; for those
 421 Appointed to sit there, had left thir charge,
 422 Flown to the upper World; the rest were all
 423 Farr to the inland retir'd, about the walls
 424 Of Pandæmonium, Citie and proud seate
 425 Of Lucifer, so by allusion calld,
 426 Of that bright Starr to Satan paragond.
 427 There kept thir Watch the Legions, while the Grand
 428 In Council sate, sollicitous what chance
 429 Might intercept thir Emperour sent, so hee
 430 Departing gave command, and they observ'd.
 431 As when the Tartar from his Russian Foe
 432 By Astracan over the Snowie Plaines
 433 Retires, or Bactrian Sophi from the hornes
 434 Of Turkish Crescent, leaves all waste beyond
 435 The Realm of Aladule, in his retreat
 436 To Tauris or Casbeen. So these the late
 437 Heav'n-banisht Host, left desert utmost Hell
 438 Many a dark League, reduc't in careful Watch
 439 Round thir Metropolis, and now expecting
 440 Each hour their great adventurer from the search
 441 Of Forrein Worlds: he through the midst unmarkt,
 442 In shew Plebeian Angel militant
 443 Of lowest order, past; and from the dore
 444 Of that Plutonian Hall, invisible
 445 Ascended his high Throne, which under state
 446 Of richest texture spred, at th' upper end
 447 Was plac't in regal lustre. Down a while
 448 He sate, and round about him saw unseen:
 449 At last as from a Cloud his fulgent head

450 And shape Starr bright appeer'd, or brighter, clad
 451 With what permissive glory since his fall
 452 Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd
 453 At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng
 454 Bent thir aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,
 455 Thir mighty Chief returnd: loud was th' acclaime:
 456 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers,
 457 Rais'd from thir Dark Divan, and with like joy
 458 Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand
 459 Silence, and with these words attention won.

460 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,
 461 For in possession such, not onely of right,
 462 I call ye and declare ye now, returnd
 463 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
 464 Triumphant out of this infernal Pit
 465 **Abominable, accurst, the house of woe,**
 466 **And** Dungeon of our Tyrant: Now possess.
 467 As Lords, a spacious World, to our native Heaven
 468 Little inferiour, by my adventure hard
 469 With peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell
 470 What I have don, what sufferd, with what paine
 471 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
 472 Of horrible confusion, over which
 473 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd
 474 To expedite your glorious march; but I
 475 Toild out my uncouth passage, forc't to ride
 476 Th' untractable Abyesse, plung'd in the womb
 477 Of unoriginal Night **and Chaos wilde,**
 478 **That jealous of thir secrets fiercely oppos'd**
 479 **My journey strange, with clamorous uproare**
 480 **Protesting Fate supream;** thence how I found
 481 The new created World, which fame in Heav'n
 482 Long had foretold, a Fabrick wonderful
 483 Of absolute perfection, therein Man
 484 Plac't in a Paradise, by our exile
 485 Made happie: Him by fraud I have seduc'd
 486 From his Creator, and the more to increase
 487 Your wonder, with an Apple; he thereat
 488 Offended, **worth your laughter,** hath giv'n up
 489 **Both his beloved** Man and all his World,
 490 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,
 491 **Without our hazard, labour, or allarme,**
 492 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
 493 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.
 494 True is, mee also he hath judg'd, or rather
 495 Mee not, but the brute Serpent in whose shape
 496 Man I deceav'd: that which to mee belongs,
 497 Is enmity, which he will put between

498 Mee and Mankinde; I am to bruise his heel;
499 His Seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:
500 A World who would not purchase with a bruise,
501 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th' account
502 Of my performance: What remains, ye Gods,
503 But up and enter now into full bliss.

504 So having said, a while he stood, expecting
505 Thir universal shout and high applause
506 To fill his eare, when contrary he hears
507 On all sides, from innumerable tongues
508 A dismal universal hiss, the sound
509 Of public scorn; he wonderd, but not long
510 Had leasure, wondring at himself now more;
511 His Visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
512 His Armes clung to his Ribs, his Leggs entwining
513 Each other, till supplanted down he fell
514 A monstrous Serpent on his Belly prone,
515 Reluctant, but in vaine, a greater power
516 Now rul'd him, punisht in the shape he sin'd,
517 According to his doom: he would have spoke,
518 But hiss for hiss returnd with forked tongue
519 To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd
520 Alike, to Serpents all as accessories
521 To his bold Riot: dreadful was the din
522 Of hissing through the Hall, thick swarming now
523 With complicated monsters head and taile,
524 Scorpion and Asp, and Amphisbæna dire,
525 Cerastes hornd, Hydrus, and Ellops drear,
526 And Dipsas (not so thick swarm'd once the Soil
527 Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the Isle
528 Ophiusa) but still greatest hee the midst,
529 Now Dragon grown, larger then whom the Sun
530 Ingenderd in the Pythian Vale on slime,
531 Huge Python, and his Power no less he seem'd
532 Above the rest still to retain; they all
533 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open Field,
534 Where all yet left of that revolted Rout
535 Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood or just array,
536 Sublime with expectation when to see
537 In Triumph issuing forth thir glorious Chief;
538 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd
539 Of ugly Serpents; horror on them fell,
540 And horrid sympathie; for what they saw,
541 They felt themselvs now changing; down thir arms,
542 Down fell both Spear and Shield, down they as fast,
543 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
544 Catcht by Contagion, like in punishment,
545 As in thir crime. Thus was th' applause they meant,

546 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame
547 Cast on themselves from thir own mouths. There stood
548 A Grove hard by, sprung up with this thir change,
549 His will who reigns above, to aggravate
550 Thir penance, laden with Fruit like that
551 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
552 Us'd by the Tempter: on that prospect strange
553 Thir earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining
554 For one forbidden Tree a multitude
555 Now ris'n, to work them funder woe or shame;
556 Yet parcht with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
557 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,
558 But on thy rould in heaps, and up the Trees
559 Climbing, sat thicker then the snakie locks
560 That curld Megara: greedily they pluck'd
561 The Frutage fair to sight, like that which grew
562 Neer that bituminous Lake where Sodom flam'd;
563 This more delusive, not the touch, but taste
564 Deceav'd; they fondly thinking to allay
565 Thir appetite with gust, instead of Fruit
566 Chewd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste
567 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assayd,
568 Hunger and thirst constraining, drugd as oft,
569 With hatefulest disrelish writh'd thir jaws
570 With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell
571 Into the same illusion, not as Man
572 Whom they triumph'd once lapst. Thus were they plagu'd
573 And worn with Famin, long and ceasless hiss,
574 Till thir lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,
575 Yearly enjoynd, some say, to undergo
576 This annual humbling certain number'd days,
577 To dash thir pride, and joy for Man seduc't.
578 However some tradition they dispers'd
579 Among the Heathen of thir purchase got,
580 And Fabl'd how the Serpent, whom they call'd
581 Ophion with Eurynome, the wide
582 Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule
583 Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn driv'n
584 And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.
585 Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair
586 Too soon arriv'd, Sin there in power before,
587 Once actual, now in body, and to dwell
588 Habitual habitant; behind her Death
589 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
590 On his pale Horse: to whom Sin thus began.

591 Second of Satan sprung, all conquering Death,
592 What thinkst thou of our Empire now, though earnd
593 With travail difficult, not better farr

594 Then stil at Hels dark threshold to have sate watch,
595 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thy self half starv'd?

596 Whom thus the Sin-born Monster answerd soon.
597 To mee, who with eternal Famin pine,
598 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,
599 There best, where most with ravin I may meet;
600 Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems
601 To stuff this Maw, this vast unhide-bound Corps.

602 To whom th' incestuous Mother thus repli'd.
603 Thou therefore on these Herbs, and Fruits, and Flours
604 Feed first, on each Beast next, and Fish, and Fowle,
605 No homely morsels, and whatever thing
606 The Sithe of Time mowes down, devour unspar'd,
607 Till I in Man residing through the Race,
608 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
609 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

610 This said, they both betook them several wayes,
611 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make
612 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
613 Sooner or later; which th' Almightye seeing,
614 From his transcendent Seat the Saints among,
615 To those bright Orders utterd thus his voice.

616 See with what heat these Dogs of Hell advance
617 To waste and havoc yonder World, which I
618 So fair and good created, and had still
619 Kept in that State, had not the folly of Man
620 Let in these wastful Furies, who impute
621 Folly to mee, so doth the Prince of Hell
622 And his Adherents, that with so much ease
623 I suffer them to enter and possess
624 A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem
625 To gratifie my scornful Enemies,
626 That laugh, as if transported with some fit
627 Of Passion, I to them had quitted all,
628 At random yielded up to their misrule;
629 And know not that I call'd and drew them thither
630 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth
631 Which mans polluting Sin with taint hath shed
632 On what was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh burst
633 With suckt and glutted offal, at one sling
634 Of thy victorious Arm, well-pleasing Son,
635 Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave at last
636 Through Chaos hurld, obstruct the mouth of Hell
637 For ever, and seal up his ravenous Jawes.
638 Then Heav'n and Earth renewd shall be made pure

639 To sanctitie that shall receive no staine:
 640 Till then the Curse pronounc't on both precedes.

 641 He ended, and the heav'nly Audience loud
 642 Sung Halleluia, as the sound of Seas,
 643 Through multitude that sung: Just are thy ways,
 644 Righteous are thy Decrees on all thy Works;
 645 Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,
 646 Destin'd restorer of Mankind, by whom
 647 New Heav'n and Earth shall to the Ages rise,
 648 Or down from Heav'n descend. Such was thir song,
 649 While the Creator calling forth by name
 650 His mightie Angels gave them several charge,
 651 As sorted best with present things. The Sun
 652 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 653 As might affect the Earth with cold and heat
 654 Scarce tollerable, and from the North to call
 655 Decrepit Winter, from the South to bring
 656 Solstitial summers heat. To the blanc Moone
 657 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five
 658 Thir planetarie motions and **aspects**
 659 **In Sextile, Square, and Trine, and Opposite,**
 660 **Of noxious efficacie, and when to joyne**
 661 **In Synod unbenigne, and taught the fixt**
 662 Thir influence malignant when to showre,
 663 Which of them rising with the Sun, or falling,
 664 Should prove tempestuous: To the Winds they set
 665 Thir corners, when with bluster to confound
 666 Sea, Aire, and Shoar, the Thunder when to rowle
 667 With terror through the dark Aereal Hall.
 668 Some say he bid his Angels turne ascense
 669 The Poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more
 670 From the Suns Axle; they with labour push'd
 671 Oblique the Centric Globe: **Som say the Sun**
 672 **Was bid turn Reines from th' Equinoctial Rode**
 673 **Like distant breadth to Taurus with the Seav'n**
 674 **Atlantick Sisters, and the Spartan Twins**
 675 **Up to the Tropic Crab; thence down amaine**
 676 **By Leo and the Virgin and the Scales,**
 677 **As deep as Capricorne,** to bring in change
 678 Of Seasons to each Clime; else had the Spring
 679 Perpetual smil'd on Earth with vernant Flours,
 680 Equal in Days and Nights, except to those
 681 Beyond the Polar Circles; to them Day
 682 Had unbenighted shon, while the low Sun
 683 To recompence his distance, in thir sight
 684 Had rounded still th' Horizon, and not known
 685 Or East or West, which had forbid the Snow
 686 From cold Estotiland, and South as farr

687 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted Fruit
 688 The Sun, as from Thyestean Banquet, turn'd
 689 His course intended; else how had the World
 690 Inhabited, though sinless, more then now,
 691 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heate?
 692 These changes in the Heav'ns, though slow, produc'd
 693 Like change on Sea and Land, sideral blast,
 694 Vapour, and Mist, and Exhalation hot,
 695 Corrupt and Pestilent: Now from the North
 696 Of Norumbega, and the Samoed shoar
 697 Bursting thir brazen Dungeon, armd with ice
 698 And snow and haile and stormie gust and flaw,
 699 Boreas and Cæcias and Argestes loud
 700 And Thrascias rend the Woods and Seas upturn;
 701 With adverse blast up-turns them from the South
 702 Notus and Afer **black with thundrous Clouds**
 703 **From Serraliona;** thwart of these as fierce
 704 Forth rush **the Levant and the Ponent Windes**
 705 Eurus and Zephir with thir lateral noise,
 706 Sirocco, and Libecchio, Thus began
 707 Outrage from liveless things; but Discord first
 708 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,
 709 Death introduc'd through fierce antipathie:
 710 Beast now with Beast gan war, and Fowle with Fowle,
 711 And Fish with Fish; to graze the Herb all leaving,
 712 Devourd each other; nor stood much in awe
 713 Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
 714 Glar'd on him passing: these were from without
 715 The growing miseries, which Adam saw
 716 Alreadie in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,
 717 To sorrow abandond, but worse felt within,
 718 And in a troubl'd Sea of passion tost,
 719 Thus to disburd'n sought with sad complaint.

720 O miserable of happie! is this the end
 721 Of this new glorious World, and mee so late
 722 The Glory of that Glory, who now becom
 723 Accurst of blessed, hide me from the face
 724 Of God, whom to behold was then my highth
 725 Of happiness: yet well, if here would end
 726 The miserie, I deserv'd it, and would beare
 727 My own deservings; but this will not serve;
 728 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 729 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard
 730 Delightfully, Encrease and multiply,
 731 Now death to heare! for what can I encrease
 732 Or multiplie, but curses on my head?
 733 Who of all Ages to succeed, but feeling
 734 The evil on him brought by me, will curse

735 My Head, Ill fare our Ancestor impure,
736 For this we may thank Adam; **but his thanks**
737 **Shall be the execration;** so besides
738 Mine own that bide upon me, all from mee
739 Shall with a fierce reflux on mee redound,
740 On mee as on thir natural center **light**
741 **Heavie, though in thir place.** O fleeting joyes
742 Of Paradise, deare bought with lasting woes!
743 Did I request thee, Maker, from my Clay
744 To mould me Man, did I sollicite thee
745 From darkness to promote me, or here place
746 In this delicious Garden? as my Will
747 Concurd not to my being, it were but right
748 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
749 Desirous to resigne, and render back
750 All I receav'd, unable to performe
751 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
752 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
753 Sufficient penaltie, why hast thou added
754 The sense of endless woes? inexplicable
755 Thy Justice seems; yet to say truth, too late,
756 I thus contest; then should have been refusd
757 Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:
758 Thou didst accept them; wilt thou enjoy the good,
759 Then cavil the conditions? and though God
760 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son
761 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
762 Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not
763 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee
764 That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,
765 But Natural necessity begot.
766 God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
767 To serve him, thy reward was of his grace,
768 Thy punishment then justly is at his Will.
769 Be it so, for I submit, his doom is fair,
770 That dust I am, and shall to dust returne:
771 O welcom hour whenever! why delays
772 His hand to execute what his Decree
773 Fixd on this day? why do I overlive,
774 Why am I mockt with death, and length'nd out
775 To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet
776 Mortalitie my sentence, and be Earth
777 Insensible, how glad would lay me down
778 As in my Mothers lap? there I should rest
779 And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more
780 Would Thunder in my ears, no fear of worse
781 To mee and to my offspring would torment me
782 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
783 Pursues me still, least all I cannot die,

784 Least that pure breath of Life, the Spirit of Man
 785 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish
 786 With this corporeal Clod; then in the Grave,
 787 Or in some other dismal place who knows
 788 But I shall die a living Death? O thought
 789 Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath
 790 Of Life that sinn'd; what dies but what had life
 791 And sin? the Bodie properly hath neither.
 792 All of me then shall die: let this appease
 793 The doubt since humane reach no further knows.
 794 For though the Lord of all be infinite,
 795 Is his wrauth also? be it, man is not so,
 796 But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise
 797 Wrath without end on Man whom Death must end?
 798 Can he make deathless Death? that were to make
 799 Strange contradiction, which to God himself
 800 Impossible is held, as Argument
 801 Of weakness, not of Power. Will he, draw out,
 802 For angers sake, finite to infinite
 803 In punisht man, to satisfie his rigour
 804 Satisfi'd never; that were to extend
 805 His Sentence beyond dust and Natures Law,
 806 By which all Causes else according still
 807 To the reception of thir matter act,
 808 Not to th' extent of thir own Spheare. But say
 809 That Death be not one stroak, as I suppos'd,
 810 Bereaving sense, but endless miserie
 811 From this day onward, which I feel begun
 812 Both in me, and without me, and so last
 813 To perpetuitie; Ay me, that fear
 814 Comes thundring back with dreadful revolution
 815 On my defensless head; both Death and I
 816 Am found Eternal, and incorporate both,
 817 Nor I on my part single, in mee all
 818 Posteritie stands curst: Fair Patrimonie
 819 That I must leave ye, Sons; O were I able
 820 To waste it all my self, and leave ye none!
 821 So disinherited how would ye bless
 822 Me now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind
 823 For one mans fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,
 824 If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,
 825 But all corrupt, both Mind and Will deprav'd,
 826 Not to do onely, but to will the same
 827 With me? how can they then acquitted stand
 828 In sight of God? Him after all Disputes
 829 Forc't I absolve: all my evasions vain,
 830 And reasonings, though through Mazes, lead me still
 831 But to my own conviction: first and last
 832 On mee, mee onely, as the sourse and spring

833 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;
834 So might the wrauth. Fond wish! couldst thou support
835 That burden heavier then the Earth to bear
836 Then all the World much heavier, though divided
837 With that bad Woman? Thus what thou desir'st
838 And what thou fearst, alike destroyes all hope
839 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
840 **Beyond all past example and future,**
841 To Satan only like both crime and doom.
842 O Conscience, into what Abyss of fears
843 And horrors hast thou driv'n me; out of which
844 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!

845 Thus Adam to himself lamented loud
846 Through the still Night, not now, as ere man fell,
847 Wholsom and cool, and mild, but with black Air
848 Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
849 Which to his evil Conscience represented
850 All things with double terror: On the Ground
851 Outstretcht he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
852 Curs'd his Creation, Death as oft accus'd
853 Of tardie execution, since denounc't
854 The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,
855 Said hee, with one thrice acceptable stroke
856 To erd me? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,
857 Justice Divine not hast'n to be just?
858 But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine
859 Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
860 O Woods, O Fountains, Hillocks, Dales and Bowrs,
861 With other echo late I taught your Shades
862 To answer, and resound farr other Song.
863 Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,
864 Desolate where she sate, approaching nigh,
865 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd:
866 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

867 Out of my sight, thou Serpent, that name best
868 Befits thee with him leagu'd, thy self as false
869 And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,
870 Like his, and colour Serpentine may shew
871 Thy inward fraud, to warn all Creatures from thee
872 Henceforth; least that too heav'nly form, pretended
873 To hellish falshood, snare them. But for thee
874 I had persisted happie, had not thy pride
875 **And wandring vanitie, when lest was safe,**
876 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
877 Not to be trusted, longing to be seen
878 Though by the Devil himself, him overweening
879 To over-reach, but with the Serpent meeting

880 Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee,
881 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
882 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
883 And understood not all was but a shew
884 Rather then solid vertu, **all but a Rib**
885 **Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,**
886 **More to the part sinister from me drawn,**
887 **Well if thrown out, as supernumerarie**
888 **To my just number found.** O why did God,
889 Creator wise, that peopl'd highest Heav'n
890 With Spirits Masculine, create at last
891 This noveltie on Earth, this fair defect
892 Of Nature, and not fill the World at once
893 With Men as Angels without Feminine,
894 Or find some other way to generate
895 Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n,
896 And more that shall befall, innumerable
897 Disturbances on Earth through Femal snares,
898 And straight conjunction with this Sex: for either
899 He never shall find out fit Mate, but such
900 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake,
901 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
902 Through her perversness, but shall see her gaind
903 By a farr worse, or if she love, withheld
904 By Parents, or his happiest choice too late
905 Shall meet, alreadie linkt and Wedlock-bound
906 To a fell Adversarie, his hate or shame:
907 **Which infinite calamitie shall cause**
908 **To Humane life, and houshold peace confound.**

909 He added not, and from her turn'd, but Eve
910 Not so repulst, with Tears that ceas'd not flowing,
911 And tresses all disorderd, at his feet
912 Fell humble, and imbracing them, besaught
913 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

914 Forsake me not thus, Adam, witness Heav'n
915 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart
916 I beare thee, and unweeting have offended,
917 Unhappilie deceav'd; thy suppliant
918 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
919 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
920 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress,
921 My onely strength and stay: forlorn of thee,
922 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?
923 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
924 Between us two let there be peace, both joyning,
925 As joyn'd in injuries, one enmitie
926 Against a Foe by doom express assign'd us,

927 That cruel Serpent: On me exercise not
928 Thy hatred for this miserie befall'n,
929 On me alreadie lost, mee then thy self
930 More miserable; both have sin'd, but thou
931 Against God onely, I against God and thee,
932 And to the place of judgment will return,
933 There with my cries importune Heaven, that all
934 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light
935 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,
936 Mee mee onely just object of his ire.

937 She ended weeping, and her lowlie plight,
938 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
939 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought
940 Commiseration; soon his heart relented
941 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,
942 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
943 Creature so faire his reconcilement seeking,
944 His counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aide;
945 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,
946 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

947 Unwarie, and too desirous, as before,
948 So now of what thou knowst not, who desir'st
949 The punishment all on thy self; alas,
950 Beare thine own first, ill able to sustaine
951 His full wrauth whose thou feelst as yet lest part,
952 And my displeasure bearst so ill. If Prayers
953 Could alter high Decrees, I to that place
954 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,
955 That on my head all might be visited,
956 Thy frailtie and infirmer Sex forgiv'n,
957 To me committed and by me expos'd.
958 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame
959 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive
960 In offices of Love, how we may light'n
961 Each others burden in our share of woe;
962 Since this days Death denounc't, if ought I see,
963 Will prove no sudden, but a slow pac't evill,
964 A long days dying to augment our paine,
965 And to our Seed (O hapless Seed!) deriv'd.

966 To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, repli'd.
967 Adam, by sad experiment I know
968 How little weight my words with thee can finde,
969 Found so erroneous, thence by just event
970 Found so unfortunate; nevertheless,
971 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
972 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regaine

973 Thy Love, the sole contentment of my heart
974 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
975 What thoughts in my unquiet brest are ris'n,
976 Tending to some relief of our extremes,
977 Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
978 As in our evils, and of easier choice.
979 If care of our descent perplex us most,
980 Which must be born to certain woe, devourd
981 By Death at last, and miserable it is
982 To be to others cause of misery,
983 Our own begotten, and of our Loines to bring
984 Into this cursed World a woful Race,
985 That after wretched Life must be at last
986 Food for so foule a Monster, in thy power
987 It lies, yet ere Conception to prevent
988 The Race unblest, to being yet unbegot.
989 Childless thou art, Childless remaine:
990 So Death shall be deceav'd his glut, and with us two
991 Be forc'd to satisfie his Rav'nous Maw.
992 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
993 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
994 From Loves due Rites, Nuptial imbraces sweet,
995 And with desire to languish without hope,
996 Before the present object languishing
997 With like desire, which would be meserie
998 And torment less then none of what we dread,
999 Then both our selves and Seed at once to free
1000 From what we fear for both, let us make short,
1001 Let us seek Death, or he not found, supply
1002 With our own hands his Office on our selves;
1003 Why stand we longer shivering under feares,
1004 That shew no end but Death, and have the power,
1005 Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,
1006 Destruction with destruction to destroy.

1007 She ended heer, or vehement despaire
1008 Broke off the rest; so much of Death her thoughts
1009 Had entertaind, as di'd her Cheeks with pale.
1010 But Adam with such counsel nothing sway'd,
1011 To better hopes his more attentive minde
1012 Labouring had rais'd, and thus to Eve repli'd.

1013 Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems
1014 To argue in thee somthing more sublime
1015 And excellent then what thy minde contemnes;
1016 But self-destruction therefore saught, refutes
1017 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
1018 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret
1019 For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.

1020 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end
1021 Of miserie, so thinking to evade
1022 The penaltie pronounc't, doubt not but God
1023 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire then so
1024 To be forestall'd; much more I fear least Death
1025 So snatcht will not exempt us from the paine
1026 We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
1027 Of contumacie will provoke the highest
1028 To make death in us live: Then let us seek
1029 Some safer resolution, which methinks
1030 I have in view, calling to minde with heed
1031 Part of our Sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise
1032 The Serpents head; piteous amends, unless
1033 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand Foe
1034 Satan, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd
1035 Against us this deceit: to crush his head
1036 Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost
1037 By death brought on our selves, or childless days
1038 Resolv'd, as thou proposest; so our Foe
1039 Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and wee
1040 Instead shall double ours upon our heads.
1041 No more be mention'd then of violence
1042 Against our selves, and wilful barrenness,
1043 That cuts us off from hope, and savours onely
1044 **Rancor and pride, impatience and despite,**
1045 Reluctance against God and his just yoke
1046 Laid on our Necks. Remember with what mild
1047 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
1048 Without wrauth or reviling; wee expected
1049 Immediate dissolution, which we thought
1050 Was meant by Death that day, when lo, to thee
1051 Pains onely in Child-bearing were foretold,
1052 And bringing forth, soon recompenc't with joy,
1053 Fruit of thy Womb: On mee the Curse aslope
1054 Glanc'd on the ground, with labour I must earne
1055 My bread; what harm? Idleness had bin worse;
1056 My labour will sustain me; and least Cold
1057 Or Heat should injure us, his timely care
1058 Hath unbesaught provided, and his hands
1059 Cloath'd us unworthie, pitying while he judg'd;
1060 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear
1061 Be open, and his heart to pitie incline,
1062 And teach us further by what means to shun
1063 Th' inclement Seasons, Rain, Ice, Hail and Snow,
1064 Which now the Skie with various Face begins
1065 To shew us in this Mountain, while the Winds
1066 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks
1067 Of these fair spreading Trees; which bids us seek
1068 Som better shroud, som better warmth to cherish

1069 Our Limbs benumm'd, ere this diurnal Starr
1070 Leave cold the Night, how we his gather'd beams
1071 Reflected, may with matter sere foment,
1072 Or by collision of two bodies grinde
1073 The Air attrite to Fire, as late the Clouds
1074 Justling or pusht with Winds rude in thir shock
1075 Tine the slant Lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n down
1076 Kindles the gummie bark of Firr or Pine,
1077 And sends a comfortable heat from farr,
1078 Which might supplie the Sun: such Fire to use,
1079 And what may else be remedie or cure
1080 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,
1081 Hee will instruct us praying, and of Grace
1082 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear
1083 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
1084 By him with many comforts, till we end
1085 In dust, our final rest and native home.
1086 What better can we do, then to the place
1087 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
1088 Before him reverent, and there confess
1089 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
1090 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the Air
1091 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
1092 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.
1093 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn
1094 From his displeasure; in whose look serene,
1095 When angry most he seem'd and most severe,
1096 What else but favor, grace, and mercie shon?

1097 So spake our Father penitent, nor Eve
1098 Felt less remorse: they forthwith to the place
1099 Repairing where he judg'd them prostrate fell
1100 Before him reverent, and both confess'd
1101 Humbly thir faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears
1102 Watering the ground, and with thir sighs the Air
1103 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
1104 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

BOOK XI.

1 Thus they in lowliest plight repentant stood
2 Praying, for from the Mercie-seat above
3 Preventient Grace descending had remov'd
4 The stonie from thir hearts, & made new flesh
5 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd
6 Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer
7 Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight
8 Then loudest Oratorie: **yet thir port**

9 Not of mean suiters, nor important less
10 Seem'd thir Petition, then when th' ancient Pair
11 In Fables old, less ancient yet then these,
12 Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha to restore
13 The Race of Mankind drown'd, before the Shrine
14 Of Themis stood devout. To Heav'n thir prayers
15 Flew up, nor missd the way, by envious windes
16 Blow'n vagabond or frustrate: in they passd
17 Dimentionless through Heav'nly dores; then clad
18 With incense, where the Golden Altar fum'd,
19 By thir great Intercessor, came in sight
20 Before the Fathers Throne: Them the glad Son
21 Presenting, thus to intercede began.

22 See Father, what first fruits on Earth are sprung
23 From thy implanted Grace in Man, these Sighs
24 And Prayers, which in this Golden Censer, mixt
25 With Incense, I thy Priest before thee bring,
26 Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed
27 Sow'n with contrition in his heart, then those
28 Which his own hand manuring all the Trees
29 Of Paradise could have produc't, ere fall'n
30 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine eare
31 To supplication, heare his sighs though mute;
32 Unskilful with what words to pray, let mee
33 Interpret for him, mee his Advocate
34 And propitiation, all his works on mee
35 Good or not good ingraft, my Merit those
36 Shall perfet, and for these my Death shall pay.
37 Accept me, and in mee from these receive
38 The smell of peace toward Mankinde, let him live
39 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
40 Numberd, though sad, till Death, his doom (which I
41 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)
42 To better life shall yeeld him, where with mee
43 All my redeemd may dwell in joy and bliss,
44 Made one with me as I with thee am one.

45 To whom the Father, without Cloud, serene.
46 All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
47 Obtain, all thy request was my Decree:
48 But longer in that Paradise to dwell,
49 The Law I gave to Nature him forbids:
50 Those pure immortal Elements that know
51 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,
52 Eject him tainted now, and purge him off
53 As a distemper, gross to aire as gross,
54 And mortal food, as may dispose him best
55 For dissolution wrought by Sin, that first

56 Distemperd all things, and of incorrupt
57 Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
58 Created him endowd, with Happiness
59 And Immortalitie: that fondly lost,
60 This other serv'd but to eternize woe;
61 Till I provided Death; so Death becomes
62 His final remedie, and after Life
63 Tri'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
64 By Faith and faithful works, to second Life,
65 **Wak't in the renovation of the just,**
66 Resignes him up with Heav'n and Earth renewd.
67 But let us call to Synod all the Blest
68 Through Heav'ns wide bounds; from them I will not hide
69 My judgments, how with Mankind I proceed,
70 As how with peccant Angels late they saw;
71 And in thir state, though firm, stood more confirmd.

72 He ended, and the Son gave signal high
73 To the bright Minister that watchd, hee blew
74 His Trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps
75 When God descended, and perhaps once more
76 To sound at general Doom. Th' Angelic blast
77 Filld all the Regions: from thir blissful Bowrs
78 Of Amarantin Shade, Fountain or Spring,
79 By the waters of Life, where ere they sate
80 In fellowships of joy: the Sons of Light
81 Hasted, resorting to the Summons high,
82 And took thir Seats; till from his Throne supream
83 Th' Almighty thus pronounced his sovran Will.

84 O Sons, like one of us Man is become
85 To know both Good and Evil, **since his taste**
86 **Of that defended Fruit;** but let him boast
87 His knowledge of Good lost, and Evil got,
88 Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known
89 Good by it self, and Evil not at all.
90 He sorrows now, repents, and prayes contrite,
91 My motions in him, longer then they move,
92 His heart I know, how variable and vain
93 Self-left. Least therefore his now bolder hand
94 Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,
95 And live for ever, dream at least to live
96 For ever, to remove him I decree,
97 And send him from the Garden forth to Till
98 The Ground whence he was taken, fitter soile.

99 Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,
100 Take to thee from among the Cherubim
101 Thy choice of flaming Warriours, least the Fiend

102 Or in behalf of Man, or to invade
103 Vacant possession som new trouble raise:
104 Hast thee, and from the Paradise of God
105 Without remorse drive out the sinful Pair,
106 From hallowd ground th' unholie, and denounce
107 To them and to thir Progenie from thence
108 Perpetual banishment. Yet least they faint
109 **At the sad Sentence rigorously urg'd,**
110 For I behold them softn'd and with tears
111 Bewailing thir excess, all terror hide.
112 **If patiently thy bidding they obey,**
113 Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveale
114 To Adam what shall come in future dayes,
115 As I shall thee enlighten, intermix
116 My Cov'nant in the womans seed renewd;
117 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace:
118 And on the East side of the Garden place,
119 Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,
120 Cherubic watch, and of a Sword the flame
121 Wide waving, all approach farr off to fright,
122 And guard all passage to the Tree of Life:
123 **Least Paradise a receptacle prove**
124 **To Spirits foule, and all my Trees thir prey,**
125 **With whose stol'n Fruit Man once more to delude.**

126 He ceas'd; and th' Archangelic Power prepar'd
127 For swift descent, with him the Cohort bright
128 Of watchful Cherubim; **four faces each**
129 **Had, like a double Janus, all thir shape**
130 **Spangl'd with eyes more numerous then those**
131 **Of Argus, and more wakeful then to drouze,**
132 **Charm'd with Arcadian Pipe, the Pastoral Reed**
133 **Of Hermes, or his opiate Rod.** Mean while
134 To resalute the World with sacred Light
135 Leucothea wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalmd
136 The Earth, when Adam and first Matron Eve
137 Had ended now thir Orisons, and found
138 Strength added from above, new hope to spring
139 Out of despaire, joy, but with fear yet linkt;
140 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renewd.

141 Eve, easily may Faith admit, that all
142 The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends;
143 But that from us ought should ascend to Heav'n
144 So prevalent as to concerne the mind
145 Of God high-blest, or to incline his will,
146 Hard to belief may seem; yet this will Prayer,
147 Or one short sigh of humane breath, up-borne
148 Ev'n to the Seat of God. For since I saught

149 By Prayer th' offended Deitie to appease,
150 **Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart,**
151 Methought I saw him placable and mild,
152 Bending his eare; perswasion in me grew
153 That I was heard with favour; peace returnd
154 Home to my Brest, and to my memorie
155 His promise, that thy Seed shall bruise our Foe;
156 Which then not minded in dismay, yet now
157 Assures me that the bitterness of death
158 Is past, and we shall live. Whence Haile to thee,
159 Eve rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,
160 **Mother of all things living, since by thee**
161 **Man is to live, and all things live for Man.**

162 To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.
163 Ill worthie I such title should belong
164 To me transgressour, who for thee ordaind
165 A help, became thy snare; to mee reproach
166 Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise:
167 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
168 That I who first brought Death on all, am grac't
169 The sourse of life; next favourable thou,
170 Who highly thus to entitle me voutsaf'st,
171 Farr other name deserving. But the Field
172 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
173 Though after sleepless Night; for see the Morn,
174 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
175 Her rosie progress smiling; let us forth,
176 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
177 **Wherere our days work lies, though now enjoind**
178 **Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,**
179 What can be toilsom in these pleasant Walkes?
180 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content.

181 So spake, so wish'd much-humbl'd Eve, but Fate
182 Subscrib'd nor; Nature first gave Signs, imprest
183 On Bird, Beast, Aire, Aire suddenly eclips'd
184 After short blush of Morn; nigh in her sight
185 The Bird of Jove, stoopt from his aerie tour,
186 Two Birds of gayest plume before him drove:
187 Down from a Hill the Beast that reigns in Woods,
188 First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
189 Goodliest of all the Forrest, Hart and Hinde;
190 Direct to th' Eastern Gate was bent thir flight.
191 Adam observ'd, and with his Eye the chase
192 Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.

193 O Eve, some furdere change awaits us nigh,
194 Which Heav'n by these mute signs in Nature shews

195 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn
196 Us haply too secure of our discharge
197 From penaltie, because from death releast
198 Some days; how long, and what till then our life,
199 Who knows, or more then this, that we are dust,
200 And thither must return and be no more.
201 Why else this double object in our sight
202 Of flight pursu'd in th' Air and ore the ground
203 One way the self-same hour? why in the East
204 Darkness ere Dayes mid-course, and Morning light
205 More orient in yon Western Cloud that draws
206 O're the blew Firmament a radiant white,
207 And slow descends, with somthing heav'nly fraught.

208 He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly Bands
209 Down from a Skie of Jasper lighted now
210 In Paradise, and on a Hill made alt,
211 A glorious Apparition, had not doubt
212 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adams eye.
213 Not that more glorious, when the Angels met
214 Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw
215 The field Pavilion'd with his Guardians bright;
216 Nor that which on the flaming Mount appeerd
217 In Dothan, cover'd with a Camp of Fire,
218 Against the Syrian King, **who to surprize**
219 **One man, Assassin-like had levied Warr,**
220 **Warr unproclam'd.** The Princely Hierarch
221 In thir bright stand, there left his Powers to seise
222 Possession of the Garden; hee alone,
223 To find where Adam shelterd, took his way,
224 Not unperceav'd of Adam, who to Eve,
225 While the great Visitant approachd, thus spake.

226 Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
227 Of us will soon determin, or impose
228 New Laws to be observ'd; for I descrie
229 From yonder blazing Cloud that veils the Hill
230 One of the heav'nly Host, and by his Gate
231 None of the meanest, some great Potentate
232 Or of the Thrones above, such Majestie
233 Invests him coming? yet not terrible,
234 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,
235 As Raphael, that I should much confide,
236 But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend,
237 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.
238 He ended; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,
239 Not in his shape Celestial, but as Man
240 Clad to meet Man; over his lucid Armes
241 A militarie Vest of purple flowd

242 Livelier then Meliboean, or the graine
243 Of Sarra, worn by Kings and Hero's old
244 In time of Truce; Iris had dipt the wooff;
245 His starrie Helme unbuckl'd shew'd him prime
246 In Manhood where Youth ended; by his side
247 As in a glistering Zodiac hung the Sword,
248 Satans dire dread, and in his hand the Spear.
249 Adam bowd low, hee Kingly from his State
250 Incl'in'd not, but his coming thus declar'd.

251 Adam, Heav'ns high behest no Preface needs:
252 Sufficient that thy Prayers are heard, and Death,
253 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
254 Defeated of his seisure many dayes
255 Giv'n thee of Grace, wherein thou may'st repent,
256 And one bad act with many deeds well done
257 Mayst cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd
258 Redeem thee quite from Deaths rapacious claime;
259 But longer in this Paradise to dwell
260 Permits not; to remove thee I am come,
261 And send thee from the Garden forth to till
262 The ground whence thou wast tak'n, fitter Soile.

263 He added not, for Adam at the newes
264 Heart-strook with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
265 That all his senses bound; Eve, who unseen
266 Yet all had heard, with audible lament
267 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

268 O unexpected stroke, worse then of Death!
269 Must I thus leave thee Paradise? thus leave
270 Thee Native Soile, these happie Walks and Shades,
271 Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,
272 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day
273 That must be mortal to us both. O flours,
274 That never will in other Climate grow,
275 My early visitation, and my last
276 At Eev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
277 From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye Names,
278 Who now shall reare ye to the Sun, or ranke
279 Your Tribes, and water from th' ambrosial Fount?
280 Thee lastly nuptial Bowre, by mee adorn'd
281 With what to sight or smell was sweet; from thee
282 How shall I part, and whither wander down
283 Into a lower World, to this obscure
284 And wilde, how shall we breath in other Aire
285 Less pure, accustomed to immortal Fruits?

286 Whom thus the Angel interrupted milde.

287 Lament not Eve, but patiently resigne
288 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
289 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine;
290 Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes
291 Thy Husband, him to follow thou art bound;
292 Where he abides, think there thy native soile.

293 Adam by this from the cold sudden damp
294 Recovering, and his scatterd spirits returnd,
295 To Michael thus his humble words addressd.

296 Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd
297 Of them the Highest, for such of shape may seem
298 Prince above Princes, gently hast thou tould
299 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
300 And in performing end us; what besides
301 Of sorrow and dejection and despair
302 Our frailtie can sustain, thy tidings bring,
303 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
304 Recess, and onely consolation left
305 Familiar to our eyes, all places else
306 Inhospitable appeer and desolate,
307 Nor knowing us nor known: and if by prayer
308 Incessant I could hope to change the will
309 Of him who all things can, I would not cease
310 To wearie him with my assiduous cries:
311 But prayer against his absolute Decree
312 No more availes then breath against the winde,
313 **Blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth:**
314 Therefore to his great bidding I submit,
315 This most afflicts me, that departing hence,
316 As from his face I shall be hid, deprivd
317 His blessed count'nance; here I could frequent,
318 With worship, place by place where he voutsaf'd
319 Presence Divine, and to my Sons relate;
320 On this Mount he appeerd, under this Tree
321 Stood visible, among these Pines his voice
322 I heard, here with him at this Fountain talk'd:
323 So many grateful Altars I would reare
324 Of grassie Terfe, and pile up every Stone
325 Of lustre from the brook, in memorie,
326 Or monument to Ages, and thereon
327 Offer sweet smelling Gumms and Fruits and Flours:
328 In yonder nether World where shall I seek
329 His bright appearances, or foot step-trace?
330 For though I fled him angrie, yet recall'd
331 To life prolongd and promis'd Race, I now
332 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
333 Of glory, and farr off his steps adore.

334 To whom thus Michael with regard benigne.
335 Adam, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the Earth.
336 Not this Rock onely; his Omnipresence fills
337 Land, Sea, and Aire, and every kinde that lives,
338 **Fomented by his virtual power and warmd:**
339 All th' Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
340 No despicable gift; surmise not then
341 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd
342 Of Paradise or Eden: this had been
343 Perhaps thy Capital Seate, from whence had spread
344 All generations, and had hither come
345 From all the ends of th' Earth, to celebrate
346 And reverence thee thir great Progenitor.
347 But this præminence thou hast lost, brought down
348 To dwell on eeven ground now with thy Sons:
349 Yet doubt not but in Vallie and in plaine
350 God is as here, and will be found alike
351 Present, and of his presence many a signe
352 Still following thee, still compassing thee round
353 **With goodness and paternal Love, his Face**
354 **Express, and of his steps the track Divine.**
355 Which that thou mayst beleeve, and be confirmd
356 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent
357 To shew thee what shall come in future dayes
358 To thee and to thy Ofspring; good with bad
359 Expect to hear, supernal Grace contending
360 With sinfulness of Men; thereby to learn
361 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
362 And pious sorrow, equally enur'd
363 By moderation either state to beare,
364 Prosperous or adverse: so shalt thou lead
365 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure
366 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
367 This Hill; let Eve (for I have drencht her eyes)
368 Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st,
369 As once thou slepst, while Shee to life was formd.

370 To whom thus Adam gratefully repli'd.
371 Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path
372 Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,
373 However chast'ning, to the evil turne
374 My obvious breast, arming to overcom
375 By suffering, and earne rest from labour won,
376 If so I may attain. So both ascend
377 In the Visions of God: It was a Hill
378 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
379 The Hemisphere of Earth in cleerest Ken
380 Stretcht out to the amplest reach of prospect lay.
381 **Not higher that Hill nor wider looking round,**

382 Whereon for different cause the Tempter set
383 Our second Adam in the Wilderness,
384 To shew him all Earths Kingdomes and thir Glory.
385 His Eye might there command wherever stood
386 City of old or modern Fame, the Seat
387 Of mightiest Empire, from the destind Walls
388 Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can
389 And Samarchand by Oxus, Temirs Throne,
390 To Paquin of Sinæan Kings, and thence
391 To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul
392 Down to the golden Chersonese, or where
393 The Persian in Ecbatan sate, or since
394 In Hispahan, or where the Russian Ksar
395 In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance,
396 Turchestan -born; nor could his eye not ken
397 Th' Empire of Negus to his utmost Port
398 Ercoco and the less Maritim Kings
399 Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,
400 And Sofala thought Ophir, to the Realme
401 Of Congo, and Angola fardest South;
402 Or thence from Niger Flood to Atlas Mount
403 The Kingdoms of Almansor, Fez and Sus,
404 Marocco and Algiers, and Tremisen;
405 On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway
406 The World: in Spirit perhaps he also saw
407 Rich Mexico the seat of Motezume,
408 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat
409 Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoil'd
410 Guiana, whose great Citie Geryons Sons
411 Call El Dorado: but to nobler sights
412 Michael from Adams eyes the Filme remov'd
413 Which that false Fruit that promis'd clearer sight
414 Had bred; then purg'd with Euphrasie and Rue
415 The visual Nerve, for he had much to see;
416 And from the Well of Life three drops instill'd.
417 So deep the power of these Ingredients pierc'd,
418 Eevn to the inmost seat of mental sight,
419 That Adam now enforc't to close his eyes,
420 Sunk down and all his Spirits became intrans:
421 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
422 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

423 Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
424 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought
425 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd
426 Th' excepted Tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,
427 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that derive
428 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

429 His eyes he op'nd, and beheld a field,
430 Part arable and tilth, whereon were Sheaves
431 New reapt, the other part sheep-walks and foulds;
432 Ith' midst an Altar as the Land-mark stood
433 Rustic, of grassie sord; thither anon
434 A sweatie Reaper from his Tillage brought
435 First Fruits, the green Eare, and the yellow Sheaf,
436 Uncull'd, as came to hand; a Shepherd next
437 More meek came with the Firstlings of his Flock
438 Choicest and best; then sacrificing, laid
439 The Inwards and thir Fat, with Incense strew'd,
440 On the cleft Wood, and all due Rites perform'd.
441 His Offring soon propitious Fire from Heav'n
442 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steame;
443 The others not, for his was not sincere;
444 Whereat hee inlie rag'd, and as they talk'd,
445 Smote him into the Midriff with a stone
446 That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale
447 Groand out his Soul with gushing bloud effus'd.
448 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
449 Dismai'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cri'd.

450 O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n
451 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
452 Is Pietie thus and pure Devotion paid?

453 T' whom Michael thus, hee also mov'd, repli'd.
454 These two are Brethren, Adam, and to come
455 Out of thy loyns; th' unjust the just hath slain,
456 For envie that his Brothers Offering found
457 From Heav'n acceptance; but the bloodie Fact
458 Will be aveng'd, and th' others Faith approv'd
459 Loose no reward, though here thou see him die,
460 Rowling in dust and gore. To which our Sire.

461 Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
462 But have I now seen Death? Is this the way
463 I must return to native dust? O sight
464 Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,
465 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!

466 To whom thus Michael. Death thou hast seen
467 In his first shape on man; but many shapes
468 Of Death, and many are the wayes that lead
469 To his grim Cave, all dismal; yet to sense
470 More terrible at th' entrance then within.
471 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
472 By Fire, Flood, Famin, by Intemperance more
473 In Meats and Drinks which on the Earth shall bring

474 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
475 Before thee shall appear; that thou mayst know
476 What miserie th' inabstinence of Eve
477 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
478 Before his eyes appeard, sad, noysom, dark,
479 A Lazar-house it seemd, wherein were laid
480 Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies
481 Of gastly Spasm, or racking torture, qualmes
482 Of heart-sick Agonie, all feavorous kinds,
483 Convulsions, Epilepsies, fierce Catarrhs,
484 Intestin Stone and Ulcer, Colic pangs,
485 Dæmoniac Phrenzie, moaping Melancholie
486 And Moon-struck madness, pining Atrophie,
487 Marasmus, and wide-wasting Pestilence,
488 Dropsies, and Asthma's, and Joint-racking Rheums.
489 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans, despair
490 Tended the sick busiest from Couch to Couch;
491 And over them triumphant Death his Dart
492 Shook, but delaid to strike, though oft invok't
493 With vows, as thir chief good, and final hope.
494 Sight so deform what heart of Rock could long
495 Drie-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept,
496 Though not of Woman born; compassion quell'd
497 His best of Man, and gave him up to tears
498 A space, till firmer thoughts restraind excess,
499 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

500 O miserable Mankind, to what fall
501 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!
502 Better end heer unborn. Why is life giv'n
503 To be thus wrested from us? rather why
504 Obtruded on us thus? who if we knew
505 What we receive, would either not accept
506 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,
507 Glad to be so dismiss in peace. Can thus
508 Th' Image of God in man created once
509 So goodly and erect, though faultie since,
510 To such unsightly sufferings be debas't
511 Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,
512 Retaining still Divine similitude
513 In part, from such deformities be free,
514 And for his Makers Image sake exempt?

515 Thir Makers Image, answerd Michael then
516 Forsook them, when themselves they villifi'd
517 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took
518 His Image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,
519 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.
520 Therefore so abject is thir punishment,

521 Disfiguring not Gods likeness, but thir own,
522 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac't
523 While they pervert pure Natures healthful rules
524 To loathsom sickness, worthily, since they
525 Gods Image did not reverence in themselves.

526 I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.
527 But is there yet no other way, besides
528 These painful passages, how we may come
529 To Death, and mix with our connatural dust?

530 There is, said Michael, if thou well observe
531 The rule of not too much, by temperance taught
532 In what thou eatst and drinkst, seeking from thence
533 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
534 Till many years over thy head return:
535 So maist thou live, till like ripe Fruit thou drop
536 Into thy Mothers lap, or be with ease
537 Gatherd, not harshly pluckt, for death mature:
538 This is old age; but then thou must out live
539 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
540 To witherd weak and gray; thy Senses then
541 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgoe,
542 To what thou hast, and for the Aire of youth
543 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reigne
544 A melancholly damp of cold and dry
545 To weigh thy Spirits down, and last consume
546 The Balme of Life. To whom our Ancestor.

547 Henceforth I flie not Death, nor would prolong
548 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit
549 Fairest and easiest of this combrous charge,
550 Which I must keep till my appointed day
551 Of rendring up, and patiently attend
552 My dissolution. Michael repli'd,

553 Nor love thy Life, nor hate; but what thou livst
554 Live well, how long or short permit to Heav'n:
555 And now prepare thee for another sight.

556 He lookd and saw a spacious Plaine, whereon
557 Were Tents of various hue; by some were herds
558 Of Cattel grazing: others, whence the sound
559 Of Instruments that made melodious chime
560 Was heard, of Harp and Organ; and who moovd
561 Thir stops and chords was seen: his volant touch
562 Instinct through all proportions low and high
563 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.
564 In other part stood one who at the Forge

565 Labouring, two massie clods of Iron and Brass
566 Had melted (whether found where casual fire
567 Had wasted woods on Mountain or in Vale,
568 Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot
569 To som Caves mouth, or whether washt by stream
570 From underground) the liquid Ore he dreind
571 Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he formd
572 First his own Tooles; then, what might else be wrought
573 Fusil or grav'n in mettle. After these,
574 But on the hether side a different sort
575 From the high neighbouring Hills, which was thir Seat,
576 Down to the Plain descended: by thir guise
577 Just men they seemd, and all thir study bent
578 To worship God aright, and know his works
579 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve
580 Freedom and Peace to men: they on the Plain
581 Long had not walkt, when from the Tents behold
582 A Beavie of fair Women, richly gay
583 In Gems and wanton dress; to the Harp they sung
584 Soft amorous Ditties, and in dance came on:
585 The Men though grave, ey'd them, and let thir eyes
586 Rove without rein, till in the amorous Net
587 Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose;
588 And now of love they treat till th' Eevning Star
589 Loves Harbinger appeerd; then all in heat
590 They light the Nuptial Torch, and bid invoke
591 Hymen, then first to marriage Rites invok't;
592 With Feast and Musick all the Tents resound.
593 Such happy interview and fair event
594 Of love and youth not lost, Songs, Garlands, Flours,
595 And charming Symphonies attach'd the heart
596 Of Adam, soon enclin'd to admit delight,
597 The bent of Nature; which he thus express'd.

598 True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,
599 Much better seems this Vision, and more hope
600 Of peaceful dayes portends, then those two past;
601 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
602 Here Nature seems fulfilld in all her ends.

603 To whom thus Michael. Judg not what is best
604 By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,
605 Created, as thou art, to nobler end
606 Holie and pure, conformitie divine.
607 Those Tents thou sawst so pleasant, were the Tents
608 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his Race
609 Who slew his Brother; studious they appere
610 Of Arts that polish Life, Inventers rare,
611 Unmindful of thir Maker, though his Spirit

612 Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.
613 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget;
614 For that fair femal Troop thou sawst, **that seemd**
615 **Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth,** so gay,
616 Yet empty of all good wherein consists
617 Womans domestic honour and chief praise;
618 Bred onely and completed to the taste
619 Of lustful appetence, to sing, to dance,
620 **To dress, and troule the Tongue, and roule the Eye.**
621 To these that sober Race of Men, whose lives
622 Religious titl'd them the Sons of God,
623 Shall yield up all thir vertue, all thir fame
624 Ignobly, to the traines and to the smiles
625 Of these fair Atheists, and now swim in joy,
626 **(Erelong to swim at large)** and laugh; for which
627 The world erelong **a world of tears** must weepe.

628 To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft.
629 O pittie and shame, that they who to live well
630 Enterd so faire, should turn aside to tread
631 Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!
632 But still I see the tenor of Mans woe
633 Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

634 From Mans effeminate slackness it begins,
635 Said th' Angel, who should better hold his place
636 By wisdom, and superiour gifts receav'd.
637 But now prepare thee for another Scene.

638 He lookd and saw wide Territorie spred
639 Before him, Towns, and rural works between,
640 Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Towrs,
641 Concours in Arms, fierce Faces threatning Warr,
642 Giants of mightie Bone, and bould emprise;
643 Part wield thir Arms, part courb the foaming Steed,
644 Single or in Array of Battel rang'd
645 Both Horse and Foot, nor idely mustring stood;
646 One way a Band select from forage drives
647 A herd of Beeves, faire Oxen and faire Kine
648 From a fat Meddow ground; or fleecy Flock,
649 Ewes and thir bleating Lambs over the Plaine,
650 Thir Bootie; **scarce with Life the Shepherds flye,**
651 **But callin aide, which makes a bloody Fray;**
652 **With cruel Tournament the Squadrons joine;**
653 **Where Cattle pastur'd late, now scatterd lies**
654 **With Carcasses and Arms th' ensanguind Field**
655 **Deserted:** Others to a Citie strong
656 Lay Seige, encampt; by Batterie, Scale, and Mine,
657 Assaulting; others from the wall defend

658 With Dart and Jav'lin, Stones and sulfurous Fire;
659 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.
660 In other part the scepter'd Haralds call
661 To Council in the Citie Gates: anon
662 Grey-headed men and grave, with Warriours mixt,
663 Assemble, and Harangues are heard, but soon
664 In factious opposition, till at last
665 Of middle Age one rising, eminent
666 In wise deport, spake much of Right and Wrong,
667 Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,
668 And Judgment from above: him old and young
669 Exploded and had seiz'd with violent hands,
670 Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence
671 Unseen amid the throng: so violence
672 Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword-Law
673 Through all the Plain, and refuge none was found.
674 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
675 Lamenting turnd full sad; O what are these,
676 Deaths Ministers, not Men, who thus deal Death
677 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
678 Ten thousand fould the sin of him who slew
679 His Brother; for of whom such massacher
680 Make they but of thir Brethren, men of men?
681 But who was that Just Man, whom had not Heav'n
682 Rescu'd, had in his Righteousness bin lost?

683 To whom thus Michael. These are the product
684 Of those ill mated Marriages thou saw'st:
685 Where good with bad were matcht, who of themselves
686 Abhor to joyn; and by imprudence mixt,
687 Produce prodigious Births of bodie or mind.
688 Such were these Giants, men of high renown;
689 For in those dayes Might onely shall be admir'd,
690 And Valour and Heroic Vertu call'd;
691 To overcome in Battle, and subdue
692 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
693 Man-slaughter shall be held the highest pitch
694 Of human Glorie, and for Glorie done
695 Of triumph, to be styl'd great Conquerours,
696 Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods,
697 Destroyers rightlier call'd and Plagues of men.
698 Thus Fame shall be atchiev'd, renown on Earth,
699 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
700 But hee the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst
701 The onely righteous in a World perverse,
702 And therefore hated, therefore so beset
703 With Foes for daring single to be just,
704 And utter odious Truth, that God would come
705 To judge them with his Saints: Him the most High

706 Rapt in a balmie Cloud with winged Steeds
707 Did, as thou sawst, receive, to walk with God
708 High in Salvation and the Climes of bliss,
709 Exempt from Death; to shew thee what reward
710 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment?
711 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

712 He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd,
713 The brazen Throat of Warr had ceast to roar,
714 All now was turn'd to jollitie and game,
715 **To luxurie and riot, feast and dance,**
716 Marrying or prostituting, as befell,
717 Rape or Adulterie, where passing faire
718 Allurd them; thence from Cups to civil Broiles.
719 At length a Reverend Sire among them came,
720 And of thir doings great dislike declar'd,
721 And testifi'd against thir wayes; hee oft
722 Frequented thir Assemblies, whereso met,
723 Triumphs or Festivals, and to them preachd
724 Conversion and Repentance, as to Souls
725 In Prison under Judgements imminent:
726 But all in vain: which when he saw, he ceas'd
727 Contending, and remov'd his Tents farr off;
728 Then from the Mountain hewing Timber tall,
729 Began to build a Vessel of huge bulk,
730 Measur'd by Cubit, length, and breadth, and highth,
731 Smeard round with Pitch, and in the side a dore
732 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large
733 For Man and Beast: when loe a wonder strange!
734 Of every Beast, and Bird, and Insect small
735 Came seavens, and pairs, and enterd in, as taught
736 Thir order: last the Sire, and his three Sons
737 With thir four Wives; and God made fast the dore.
738 Meanwhile the Southwind rose, and with black wings
739 Wide hovering, all the Clouds together drove
740 From under Heav'n; **the Hills to their supplie**
741 **Vapour, and Exhalation dusk and moist,**
742 **Sent up amain;** and now the thick'nd Skie
743 Like a dark Ceeling stood; down rush'd the Rain
744 Impetuous, and continu'd till the Earth
745 No more was seen; the floating Vessel swum
746 Uplifted; and secure with beaked prow
747 Rode tilting o're the Waves, all dwellings else
748 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all thir pomp
749 Deep under water rould; Sea cover'd Sea,
750 Sea without shoar; and in thir Palaces
751 Where luxurie late reign'd, Sea-monsters whelp'd
752 And stabl'd; of Mankind, so numerous late,
753 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark't.

754 How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 755 The end of all thy Ofspring, end so sad,
 756 Depopulation; thee another Floud,
 757 Of tears and sorrow a Floud thee also drown'd,
 758 And sunk thee as thy Sons; till gently reard
 759 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stoodst at last,
 760 Though comfortless, as when a Father mourns
 761 His Children, all in view destroyd at once;
 762 And scarce to th' Angel utterdst thus thy plaint.

763 O Visions ill foreseen! better had I
 764 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne
 765 My part of evil onely, each dayes lot
 766 Anough to beare; those now, that were dispenst
 767 The burd'n of many Ages, **on me light**
 768 **At once, by my foreknowledge gaining Birth**
 769 **Abortive, to torment me ere thir being,**
 770 **With thought that they must be.** Let no man seek
 771 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall
 772 Him or his Childern, evil he may be sure,
 773 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
 774 And hee the future evil shall no less
 775 In apprehension then in substance feel
 776 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,
 777 Man is not whom to warne: those few escap't
 778 Famin and anguish will at last consume
 779 Wandring that watrie Desert: I had hope
 780 When violence was ceas't, and Warr on Earth,
 781 All would have then gon well, **peace would have crownd**
 782 **With length of happy dayes the race of man;**
 783 **But I was farr deceav'd;** for now I see
 784 Peace to corrupt no less then Warr to waste.
 785 How comes it thus? unfould, Celestial Guide,
 786 And whether here the Race of man will end.
 787 To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou sawst
 788 In Triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 789 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 790 And great exploits, but of true vertu void;
 791 Who having spilt much blood, and don much waste
 792 Subduing Nations, and achievd thereby
 793 Fame in the World, high titles, and rich prey,
 794 Shall change thir course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 795 Surfet, and lust, till wantonness and pride
 796 Raise out of friendship hostil deeds in Peace.
 797 The conquerd also, and enslav'd by Warr
 798 Shall with thir freedom lost all vertu loose
 799 And fear of God, from whom thir pietie feign'd
 800 In sharp contest of Battel found no aide
 801 Against invaders; therefore coold in zeale

802 Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,
803 Worldlie or dissolute, on what thir Lords
804 Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' Earth shall bear
805 More then anough, that temperance may be tri'd:
806 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,
807 **Justice and Temperance, Truth and Faith forgot;**
808 One Man except, the onely Son of light
809 In a dark Age, against example good,
810 Against allurement, custom, and a World
811 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,
812 Or violence, hee of thir wicked wayes
813 Shall them admonish, and before them set
814 The paths of righteousness, **how much more safe,**
815 **And full of peace,** denouncing wrauth to come
816 On thir impenitence; and shall returne
817 Of them derided, but of God observd
818 The one just Man alive; by his command
819 Shall build a wondrous Ark, as thou beheldst,
820 To save himself and houshold from amidst
821 A World devote to universal rack.
822 No sooner hee with them of Man and Beast
823 Select for life shall in the Ark be lodg'd,
824 And shelterd round, but all the Cataracts
825 Of Heav'n set open on the Earth shall powre
826 Raine day and night, all fountains of the Deep
827 Broke up, shall heave the Ocean to usurp
828 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
829 Above the highest Hills: then shall this Mount
830 Of Paradise by might of Waves be moovd
831 Out of his place, pushd by the horned floud,
832 With all his verdure spoil'd, and Trees adrift
833 Down the great River to the op'ning Gulf,
834 And there take root an Iland salt and bare,
835 The haunt of Seales and Orcs, and Sea-mews clang.
836 To teach thee that God attributes to place
837 No sanctitie, if none be thither brought
838 By Men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
839 And now what further shall ensue, behold.

840 He lookd, and saw the Ark hull on the floud,
841 Which now abated, for the Clouds were fled,
842 Drivn by a keen North-winde, that blowing drie
843 Wrinkl'd the face of Deluge, as decai'd;
844 And the cleer Sun on his wide watrie Glass
845 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh Wave largely drew,
846 As after thirst, which made thir flowing shrink
847 From standing lake to tripping ebbe, that stole
848 With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopt
849 His Sluces, as the Heav'n his windows shut.

850 The Ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground
851 Fast on the top of som high mountain fixt.
852 And now the tops of Hills as Rocks appeer;
853 With clamor thence the rapid Currents drive
854 Towards the retreating Sea thir furious tyde.
855 Forthwith from out the Arke a Raven flies,
856 And after him, the surer messenger,
857 A Dove sent forth once and agen to spie
858 Green Tree or ground whereon his foot may light;
859 The second time returning, in his Bill
860 An Olive leafe he brings, pacific signe:
861 Anon drie ground appeers, and from his Arke
862 The ancient Sire descends with all his Train;
863 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,
864 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds
865 A dewie Cloud, and in the Cloud a Bow
866 Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,
867 Betok'ning peace from God, and Cov'nant new.
868 Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad
869 Greatly rejoyc'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

870 O thou who future things canst represent
871 As present, Heav'nly instructor, I revive
872 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live
873 With all the Creatures, and thir seed preserve.
874 Farr less I now lament for one whole World
875 Of wicked Sons destroyd, then I rejoyce
876 For one Man found so perfet and so just,
877 That God voutsafes to raise another World
878 From him, and all his anger to forget.
879 But say, what mean those colourd streaks in Heavn,
880 Distended as the Brow of God appeas'd,
881 Or serve they as a flourie verge to binde
882 The fluid skirts of that same watrie Cloud.
883 Least it again dissolve and showr the Earth?

884 To whom th' Archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st;
885 So willingly doth God remit his Ire,
886 Though late repenting him of Man deprav'd,
887 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw
888 The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh
889 Corrupting each thir way; yet those remoov'd,
890 Such grace shall one just Man find in his sight,
891 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,
892 And makes a Covenant never to destroy
893 The Earth again by flood, nor let the Sea
894 Surpass his bounds, nor Rain to drown the World
895 With Man therein or Beast; but when he brings
896 Over the Earth a Cloud, will therein set

897 His triple-colour'd Bow, whereon to look
898 And call to mind his Cov'nant: Day and Night,
899 Seed time and Harvest, Heat and hoary Frost
900 Shall hold thir course, till fire purge all things new,
901 Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

BOOK XII.

1 As one who in his journey bates at Noone,
2 Though bent on speed, so heer the Archangel paus'd
3 Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,
4 If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;
5 Then with transition sweet new Speech resumes.

6 Thus thou hast seen one World begin and end;
7 And Man as from a second stock proceed.
8 Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceave
9 Thy mortal sight to faile; objects divine
10 Must needs impaire and wearie human sense:
11 Henceforth what is to com I will relate,
12 Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.
13 This second sours of Men, while yet but few;
14 And while the dread of judgement past remains
15 Fresh in thir mindes, fearing the Deitie,
16 **With some regard to what is just and right**
17 Shall lead thir lives, and multiplie apace,
18 Labouring the soile, and reaping plenteous crop,
19 Corn wine and oyle; and from the herd or flock,
20 Oft sacrificing Bullock, Lamb, or Kid,
21 **With large Wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred Feast,**
22 Shal spend thir dayes in joy unblam'd, and dwell
23 Long time in peace by Families and Tribes
24 Under paternal rule; till one shall rise
25 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content
26 With fair equalitie, fraternal state,
27 Will arrogate Dominion undeserv'd
28 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
29 Concord and law of Nature from the Earth,
30 Hunting (and Men not Beasts shall be his game)
31 With Warr and hostile snare such as refuse
32 Subjection to his Empire tyrannous:
33 A mightie Hunter thence he shall be styl'd
34 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heav'n,
35 **Or from Heav'n claming second Sovrantie;**
36 **And from Rebellion shall derive his name,**
37 **Though of Rebellion others he accuse.**
38 Hee with a crew, whom like Ambition joyns
39 **With him or under him to tyrannize,**

40 Marching from Eden towards the West, shall finde
41 The Plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
42 Boiles out from under ground, the mouth of Hell;
43 Of Brick, and of that stuff they cast to build
44 A Citie and Towre, whose top may reach to Heav'n;
45 And get themselves a name, least far disperst
46 In foraign Lands thir memorie be lost
47 **Regardless whether good or evil fame.**
48 But God who oft descends to visit men
49 **Unseen, and through thir habitations walks**
50 **To mark thir doings, them beholding soon,**
51 Comes down to see thir Citie, ere the Tower
52 Obstruct Heav'n Towrs, and in derision sets
53 Upon thir Tongues a various Spirit to rase
54 Quite out thir Native Language, and instead
55 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:
56 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud
57 Among the Builders; each to other calls
58 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
59 As mockt they storm; **great laughter was in Heav'n**
60 **And looking down, to see the hubbub strange**
61 **And hear the din;** thus was the building left
62 Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.

63 Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.
64 O execrable Son so to aspire
65 Above his Brethren, to himself assuming
66 Authoritie usurpt, from God not giv'n:
67 He gave us onely over Beast, Fish, Fowl
68 Dominion absolute; that right we hold
69 By his donation; but Man over men
70 He made not Lord; such title to himself
71 Reserving, human left from human free.
72 **But this Usurper his encroachment proud**
73 **Stayes not on Man; to God his Tower intends**
74 **Siege and defiance: Wretched man! what food**
75 **Will he convey up thither to sustain**
76 **Himself and his rash Armie, where thin Aire**
77 **Above the Clouds will pine his entrails gross,**
78 **And famish him of Breath, if not of Bread?**

79 To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st
80 That Son, who on the quiet state of men
81 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
82 Rational Libertie; yet know withall,
83 Since thy original lapse, true Libertie
84 Is lost, which alwayes with right Reason dwells
85 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:
86 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obeyd,.

87 Immediately inordinate desires
88 And upstart Passions catch the Government
89 From Reason, and to servitude reduce
90 Man till then free. Therefore since hee permits
91 Within himself unworthie Powers to reign
92 Over free Reason, God in Judgement just
93 Subjects him from without to violent Lords;
94 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall
95 His outward freedom: Tyrannie must be,
96 Though to the Tyrant thereby no excuse.
97 Yet sometimes Nations will decline so low
98 From vertue, which is reason, that no wrong,
99 But Justice, and some fatal curse annex
100 Deprives them of thir outward libertie,
101 Thir inward lost: Witness th' irreverent Son
102 Of him who built the Ark, who for the shame
103 Don to his Father, heard this heavie curse,
104 Servant of Servants, on his vitious Race.
105 Thus will this latter, as the former World,
106 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last
107 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
108 His presence from among them, and avert
109 His holy Eyes; resolving from thenceforth
110 To leave them to thir own polluted wayes;
111 And one peculiar Nation to select
112 From all the rest, of whom to be invok'd,
113 A Nation from one faithful man to spring:
114 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
115 Bred up in Idol-worship: O that men
116 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,
117 While yet the Patriark liv'd, who scap'd the Flood,
118 As to forsake the living God, and fall
119 To worship thir own work in Wood and Stone
120 For Gods! yet him God the most High voutsafes
121 To call by Vision from his Fathers house,
122 His kindred and false Gods, into a Land
123 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
124 A mightie Nation, and upon him showre
125 His benediction so, that in his Seed
126 All Nations shall be blest; he straight obeys,
127 Not knowing to what Land, yet firm believes:
128 I see him, but thou canst not, with what Faith
129 He leaves his Gods, his Friends, and native Soile
130 Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the Ford
131 To Haran, after him a cumbrous Train
132 Of Herds and Flocks, and numerous servitude;
133 Not wandring poor, but trusting all his wealth
134 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.
135 Canaan he now attains, I see his Tents

136 Pitcht about Sechem, and the neighbouring Plaine
137 Of Moreh; there by promise he receaves
138 Gift to his Progenie of all that Land;
139 From Hamath Northward to the Desert South
140 (Things by thir names I call, though yet unnam'd)
141 From Hermon East to the great Western Sea,
142 Mount Hermon, yonder Sea, each place behold
143 In prospect, as I point them; on the shoare
144 Mount Carmel; here the double-founted stream
145 Jordan, true limit Eastward; but his Sons
146 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of Hills.
147 This ponder, that all Nations of the Earth
148 Shall in his Seed be blessed; by that Seed
149 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise
150 The Serpents head; whereof to thee anon
151 Plainlier shall be reveald. This Patriarch blest,
152 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
153 A Son, and of his Son a Grand-childe leaves,
154 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown;
155 The Grandchilde with twelve Sons increast, departs
156 From Canaan, to a Land hereafter call'd
157 Egypt, divided by the River Nile;
158 See where it flows, disgorging at seaven mouthes
159 Into the Sea: to sojourn in that Land
160 He comes invited by a yonger Son
161 In time of dearth, a Son whose worthy deeds
162 Raise him to be the second in that Realme
163 Of Pharao: there he dies, and leaves his Race
164 Growing into a Nation, and now grown
165 Suspected to a sequent King, who seeks
166 To stop thir overgrowth, as inmate guests
167 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves
168 Inhospitably, and kills thir infant Males:
169 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call
170 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claime
171 His people from enthrallment, they return
172 With glory and spoile back to thir promis'd Land.
173 But first the lawless Tyrant, who denies
174 To know thir God, or message to regard,
175 Must be compell'd by Signes and Judgements dire;
176 To blood unshed the Rivers must be turnd,
177 Frogs, Lice and Flies must all his Palace fill
178 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land;
179 His Cattel must of Rot and Murren die,
180 Botches and blaines must all his flesh imboss,
181 And all his people; Thunder mixt with Haile,
182 Haile mixt with fire must rend th' Egyptian Skie
183 And wheel on th' Earth, devouring where it rould;
184 What it devours not, Herb, or Fruit; or Graine,

185 A darksom Cloud of Locusts swarming down
 186 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green:
 187 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 188 Palpable darkness, and blot out three dayes;
 189 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born
 190 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds
 191 The River-dragon tam'd at length submits
 192 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 193 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as Ice
 194 More hard'nd after thaw, till in his rage
 195 Pursuing whom he late dismissd, the Sea
 196 Swallows him with his Host, but them lets pass
 197 As on drie land between two christal walls,
 198 Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand
 199 Divided, till his rescu'd gain thir shoar:
 200 Such wondrous power God to his Saint will lend,
 201 Though present in his Angel, who shall goe
 202 Before them in a Cloud, and Pillar of Fire,
 203 By day a Cloud, by night a Pillar of Fire,
 204 To guide them in thir journey, and remove
 205 Behinde them, while th' obdurat King pursues:
 206 All night he will pursue, but his approach
 207 Darkness defends between till morning Watch;
 208 Then through the Firey Pillar and the Cloud
 209 God looking forth will trouble all his Host
 210 And craze thir Chariot wheels: when by command
 211 Moses once more his potent Rod extends
 212 Over the Sea; the Sea his Rod obeys;
 213 On thir imbattelld ranks the Waves return,
 214 And overwhelm thir Warr: the Race elect
 215 Safe towards Canaan from the shoar advance
 216 Through the wilde Desert, not the readiest way,
 217 Least entring on the Canaanite allarmd
 218 Warr terrifie them inexpert, and feare
 219 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather
 220 Inglorious life with servitude; for life
 221 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 222 Untraine in Armes, where rashness leads not on.
 223 This also shall they gain by thir delay
 224 In the wide Wilderness, there they shall found
 225 Thir government, and thir great Senate choose
 226 Through the twelve Tribes, to rule by Laws ordaind:
 227 God from the Mount of Sinai, whose gray top
 228 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 229 In Thunder Lightning and loud Trumpets sound
 230 Ordaine them Lawes; part such as appertaine
 231 To civil Justice, part religious Rites
 232 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 233 And shadows, of that destind Seed to bruise

234 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
235 Mankinds deliverance. But the voice of God
236 To mortal eare is dreadful; they beseech
237 That Moses might report to them his will,
238 And terror cease; he grants what they besaught
239 Instructed that to God is no access
240 Without Mediator, whose high Office now
241 Moses in figure beares, to introduce
242 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,
243 And all the Prophets in thir Age the times
244 Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus Laws and Rites
245 Establisht, such delight hath God in Men
246 Obedient to his will, **that he voutsafes**
247 **Among them to set up his Tabernacle,**
248 **The holy One with mortal Men to dwell:**
249 **By his prescript a Sanctuary is fram'd**
250 **Of Cedar, overlaid with Gold, therein**
251 **An Ark, and in the Ark his Testimony,**
252 **The Records of his Cov'nant, over these**
253 **A Mercie-seat of Gold between the wings**
254 **Of two bright Cherubim, before him burn**
255 **Seaven Lamps as in a Zodiac representing**
256 **The Heav'nly fires; over the Tent a Cloud**
257 **Shall rest by Day, a fiery gleame by Night,**
258 **Save when they journie, and at length they come,**
259 **Conducted by his Angel to the Land**
260 **Promisd to Abraham and his Seed: the rest**
261 **Were long to tell, how many Battels fought,**
262 **How many Kings destroyd, and Kingdoms won,**
263 **Or how the Sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still**
264 **A day entire, and Nights due course adjourne,**
265 **Mans voice commanding, Sun in Gibeon stand,**
266 **And thou Moon in the vale of Aialon,**
267 **Till Israel overcome; so call the third**
268 **From Abraham, Son of Isaac, and from him**
269 **His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.**

270 Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from Heav'n,
271 Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things
272 Thou hast reveald, those chiefly which concerne
273 Just Abraham and his Seed: now first I finde
274 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
275 Erwhile perplext with thoughts what would becom
276 Of mee and all Mankind; but now I see
277 His day, in whom all Nations shall be blest,
278 **Favour unmerited by me, who sought**
279 **Forbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.**
280 This yet I apprehend not, why to those
281 Among whom God will deigne to dwell on Earth

282 So many and so various Laws are giv'n;
283 So many Laws argue so many sins
284 Among them; how can God with such reside?

285 To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin
286 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;
287 And therefore was Law given them to evince
288 Thir natural pravitie, **by stirring up**
289 **Sin against Law to fight;** that when they see
290 Law can discover sin, but not remove,
291 Save by those shadowie expiations weak,
292 The blood of Bulls and Goats, they may conclude
293 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,
294 **Just for unjust, that in such righteousness**
295 **To them by Faith imputed, they may finde**
296 **Justification towards God, and peace**
297 **Of Conscience, which the Law by Ceremonies**
298 **Cannot appease, nor Man the moral part**
299 **Perform, and not performing cannot live.**

300 So law appears imperfet, and but giv'n
301 With purpose to resign them in full time
302 Up to a better Cov'nant, disciplin'd
303 From shadowie Types to Truth, from Flesh to Spirit,
304 From imposition of strict Laws, to free
305 Acceptance of large Grace, from servil fear
306 To filial, works of Law to works of Faith.
307 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God
308 Highly belov'd, being but the Minister
309 Of Law, his people into Canaan lead;
310 But Joshua whom the Gentiles Jesus call,
311 His Name and Office bearing, who shall quell
312 The adversarie Serpent, and bring back
313 Through the worlds wilderness long wanderd man
314 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.

315 Meanwhile they in thir earthly Canaan plac't
316 Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins
317 National interrupt thir public peace,
318 Provoking God to raise them enemies:
319 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
320 By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom
321 The second, both for pietie renownd
322 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive
323 Irrevocable, that his Regal Throne
324 For ever shall endure; the like shall sing
325 All Prophecie, That of the Royal Stock
326 Of David (so I name this King) shall rise
327 A Son, the Womans Seed to thee foretold,
328 Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust
329 All Nations, and to Kings foretold, of Kings

330 The last, for of his Reign shall be no end.
331 But first a long succession must ensue,
332 And his next Son for Wealth and Wisdom fam'd,
333 The clouded Ark of God till then in Tents
334 Wandring, shall in a glorious Temple enshrine.
335 Such follow him, as shall be registerd
336 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scrowle,
337 Whose foul Idolatries, and other faults
338 Heapt to the popular summe, will so incense
339 God, as to leave them, and expose thir Land,
340 Thir Citie, his Temple, and his holy Ark
341 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
342 To that proud Citie, whose high Walls thou saw'st
343 Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.
344 There in captivitie he lets them dwell
345 The space of seventie years, then brings them back,
346 Remembring mercie, and his Cov'nant sworn
347 To David, stablisht as the dayes of Heav'n.
348 Returnd from Babylon by leave of Kings
349 Thir Lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
350 They first re-edifie, and for a while
351 In mean estate live moderate, till grown
352 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
353 But first among the Priests dissension springs,
354 Men who attend the Altar, and should most
355 Endeavour Peace: thir strife pollution brings
356 Upon the Temple it self: at last they seise
357 The Scepter, and regard not Davids Sons,
358 Then loose it to a stranger, that the true
359 Anointed King Messiah might be born
360 Barr'd of his right; yet at his Birth a Starr
361 Unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him com,
362 And guides the Eastern Sages, who enquire
363 His place, to offer Incense, Myrrh, and Gold;
364 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells
365 To simple Shepherds, keeping watch by night;
366 They gladly thither haste, and by a Quire
367 Of squadrond Angels hear his Carol sung.
368 A Virgin is his Mother, but his Sire
369 The Power of the most High; he shall ascend
370 The Throne hereditarie, and bound his Reign
371 With earths wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns.

372 He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy
373 Surcharg'd, as had like grief bin dew'd in tears,
374 Without the vent of words, which these he breathd.

375 O Prophet of glad tidings, finisher
376 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand

377 What oft my steddier thoughts have searcht in vain,
 378 Why our great expectation should be call'd
 379 The seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, Haile,
 380 High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my Loynes
 381 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy Womb the Son
 382 Of God most High; So God with man unites.
 383 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
 384 Expect with mortal paine: say where and when
 385 Thir fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victors heel.

386 To whom thus Michael. Dream not of thir fight,
 387 As of a Duel, **or the local wounds**
 388 **Of head or heel:** not therefore joynes the Son
 389 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil
 390 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome
 391 Satan, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,
 392 Disabl'd not to give thee thy death's wound:
 393 Which hee, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 394 Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 395 In thee and in thy Seed: nor can this be,
 396 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 397 Obedience to the Law of God, impos'd
 398 On penaltie of death, and suffering death,
 399 The penaltie to thy transgression due,
 400 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:
 401 So onely can high Justice rest appaid.
 402 The Law of God exact he shall fulfill
 403 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 404 Alone fulfill the Law; thy punishment
 405 He shall endure by coming in the Flesh
 406 To a reproachful life and cursed death,
 407 Proclaiming Life to all who shall believe
 408 **In his redemption, and that his obedience**
 409 **Imputed becomes theirs by Faith, his merits**
 410 **To save them, not thir own, though legal works.**
 411 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,
 412 **Seis'd on by force,** judg'd, and to death condemnd
 413 **A shameful and accurst,** naild to the Cross
 414 By his own Nation, slaine for bringing Life;
 415 But to the Cross he nailes thy Enemies,
 416 The Law that is against thee, and the sins
 417 Of all mankinde, with him there crucifi'd,
 418 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 419 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,
 420 But soon revives, Death over him no power
 421 Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light
 422 Returne, the Starres of Morn shall see him rise
 423 **Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,**
 424 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,

425 His death for Man, as many as offerd Life
426 Neglect not, and the benefit imbrace
427 By Faith not void of workes: this God-like act
428 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,
429 In sin for ever lost from life; this act
430 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength
431 Defeating Sin and Death, his two maine armes,
432 And fix farr deeper in his head thir stings
433 Then temporal death shall bruise the Victors heel,
434 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
435 A gentle wafting to immortal Life.
436 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
437 Longer on Earth then certaine times to appeer
438 To his Disciples, Men who in his Life
439 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge
440 To teach all nations **what of him they learn'd**
441 **And his Salvation**, them who shall beleeve
442 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the signe
443 Of washing them from guilt of sin to Life
444 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
445 For death, like that which the redeemer dy'd.
446 All Nations they shall teach; for from that day
447 Not onely to the Sons of Abrahams Loines
448 Salvation shall be Preacht, but to the Sons
449 Of Abrahams Faith wherever through the world;
450 So in his seed all Nations shall be blest.
451 Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend
452 With victory, triumphing **through the aire**
453 **Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise**
454 **The Serpent, Prince of aire, and drag in Chaines**
455 **Through all his Realme, and there confounded leave;**
456 **Then enter into glory, and resume**
457 His Seat at Gods right hand, exalted high
458 Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,
459 When this worlds dissolution shall be ripe,
460 With glory and power to judge both quick and dead,
461 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward
462 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
463 **Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth**
464 **Shall all be Paradise, far happier place**
465 **Then this of Eden, and far happier daies.**

466 So spake th' Archangel Michael, then paus'd,
467 As at the Worlds great period; and our Sire
468 Replete with joy and wonder thus repli'd.

469 O goodness infinite, goodness immense!
470 That all this good of evil shall produce,
471 **And evil turn to good; more wonderful**

472 Then that which by creation first brought forth
473 Light out of darkness! full of doubt I stand.
474 Whether I should repent me now of sin
475 By mee done and occasiond, or rejoyce
476 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring,
477 To God more glory, more good will to Men
478 From God, and over wrauth grace shall abound.
479 But say, if our deliverer up to Heav'n
480 Must reascend, what will betide the few
481 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
482 The enemies of truth; who then shall guide
483 His people, who defend? will they not deale
484 Wors with his followers then with him they dealt?

485 Be sure they will, said th' Angel; but from Heav'n
486 Hee to his own a Comforter will send,
487 **The promise of the Father, who shall dwell**
488 His Spirit within them, and the Law of Faith
489 Working through love, upon thir hearts shall write,
490 To guide them in all truth, and also arme
491 With spiritual Armour, able to resist
492 Satans assaults, and quench his fierie darts,
493 What man can do against them, not affraid,
494 Though to the death, against such cruelties
495 With inward consolations recompenc't,
496 And oft supported so as shall amaze
497 Thir proudest persecuters: for the Spirit
498 Powrd first on his Apostles, whom he sends
499 To evangelize the Nations, then on all
500 Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts endue
501 To speak all Tongues, and do all Miracles,
502 As did thir Lord before them. Thus they win
503 Great numbers of each Nation to receive
504 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length
505 Thir Ministry perform'd, and race well run,
506 Thir doctrine and thir story written left,
507 They die; but in thir room, as they forewarne,
508 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous Wolves,
509 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n
510 To thir own vile advantages shall turne
511 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
512 With superstitions and traditions taint,
513 **Left onely in those written Records pure,**
514 **Though not but by the Spirit understood.**
515 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
516 Places and titles, and with these to joine
517 Secular power, though feigning still to act
518 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
519 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and giv'n

520 To all Beleevers; and from that pretense,
521 Spiritual Lawes by carnal power shall force
522 On every conscience; Laws which none shall finde
523 Left them inrould, or what the Spirit within
524 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
525 But force the Spirit of Grace it self, and binde
526 His consort Libertie; what, but unbuild
527 His living Temples, built by Faith to stand,
528 Thir own Faith not anothers: for on Earth
529 Who against Faith and Conscience can be heard
530 Infallible? yet many will presume:
531 Whence heavie persecution shall arise
532 On all who in the worship persevere
533 Of Spirit and Truth; the rest, farr greater part,
534 Well deem in outward Rites and specious formes
535 Religion satisfi'd; Truth shall retire
536 Bestuck with slandrous darts, and works of Faith
537 Rarely be found: so shall the World goe on,
538 **To good malignant, to bad men benigne,**
539 Under her own waight groaning till the day
540 Appeer of respiration to the just,
541 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
542 Of him so lately promiss'd to thy aid
543 The Womans seed, obscurely then foretold,
544 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord,
545 Last in the Clouds from Heav'n to be reveald
546 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
547 Satan with his perverted World, then raise
548 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,
549 New Heav'ns, new Earth, Ages of endless date
550 Founded in righteousness and peace and love
551 To bring forth fruits Joy and eternal Bliss.

552 He ended; and thus Adam last reply'd.
553 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,
554 Measur'd this transient World, the Race of time,
555 Till time stand fixt: beyond is all abyss,
556 Eternitie, whose end no eye can reach.
557 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
558 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
559 Of knowledge, what this Vessel can containe;
560 Beyond which was my folly to aspire.
561 Henceforth I learne, that to obey is best,
562 And love with fear the onely God, to walk
563 As in his presence, ever to observe
564 His providence, and on him sole depend,
565 Mercifull over all his works, with good
566 Still overcoming evil, and by small
567 Accomplishing great things, by things deemd weak

568 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
569 By simply meek; that suffering for Truths sake
570 Is fortitude to highest victorie,
571 **And to the faithful Death the Gate of Life;**
572 Taught this by his example whom I now
573 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

574 To whom thus also th' Angel last repli'd:
575 This having learnt, thou hast attaind the summe
576 Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the Starrs
577 Thou knewst by name, and all th' ethereal Powers,
578 All secrets of the deep, all Natures works,
579 Or works of God in Heav'n, Aire, Earth, or Sea,
580 And all the riches of this World enjoydst,
581 And all the rule, one Empire; onely add
582 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add Faith,
583 Add vertue, Patience, Temperance, add Love,
584 By name to come call'd Charitie, the soul
585 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath
586 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
587 A paradise within thee, happier farr.
588 Let us descend now therefore from this top
589 Of Speculation; for the hour precise
590 Exacts our parting hence; and see the Guards,
591 By mee encampt on yonder Hill, expect
592 Thir motion, at whose Front a flaming Sword,
593 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round;
594 We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve;
595 Her also I with gentle Dreams have calm'd
596 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd
597 To meek submission: thou at season fit
598 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,
599 Chiefly what may concern her Faith to know,
600 The great deliverance by her Seed to come
601 (For by the Womans Seed) on all Mankind.
602 That ye may live, which will be many dayes,
603 Both in one Faith unanimous though sad,
604 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd
605 With meditation on the happie end.

606 He ended, and they both descend the Hill;
607 Descended, Adam to the Bowre where Eve
608 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak't;
609 And thus with words not sad she him receav'd.

610 Whence thou returnst, and whither wentst, I know;
611 For God is also in sleep, and Dreams advise,
612 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
613 Presaging, since with sorrow and hearts distress

614 Wearing I fell asleep: but now lead on;
615 In mee is no delay; with thee to goe,
616 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,
617 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to mee
618 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,
619 Who for my wilful crime art banisht hence.
620 This further consolation yet secure
621 I carry hence; though all by mee is lost,
622 Such favour I unworthie am voutsaft,
623 By mee the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

624 So spake our Mother Eve, and Adam heard
625 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not; for now too nigh
626 Th' Archangel stood, and from the other Hill
627 To thir fixt Station, all in bright array
628 The Cherubim descended; on the ground
629 Gliding meteorous, as Ev'ning Mist
630 Ris'n from a River o're the marish glides,
631 And gathers ground fast at the Labourers heel
632 Homeward returning. High in Front advanc't,
633 The brandisht Sword of God before them blaz'd
634 Fierce as a Comet; which with torrid heat,
635 And vapour as the Libyan Air adust,
636 Began to parch that temperate Clime; whereat.
637 In either hand the hastning Angel caught
638 Our lingring Parents, and to th' Eastern Gate
639 Led them direct, and down the Cliff as fast
640 To the subjected Plaine; then disappeer'd.
641 They looking back, all th' Eastern side beheld
642 Of Paradise, so late thir happie seat,
643 Wav'd over by that flaming Brand, the Gate
644 With dreadful Faces throng'd and fierie Armes:
645 Som natural tears they drop'd, but wip'd them soon;
646 The World was all before them, where to choose
647 Thir place of rest, and Providence thir guide:
648 They hand in hand with wandring steps and slow,
649 Through Eden took thir solitarie way.